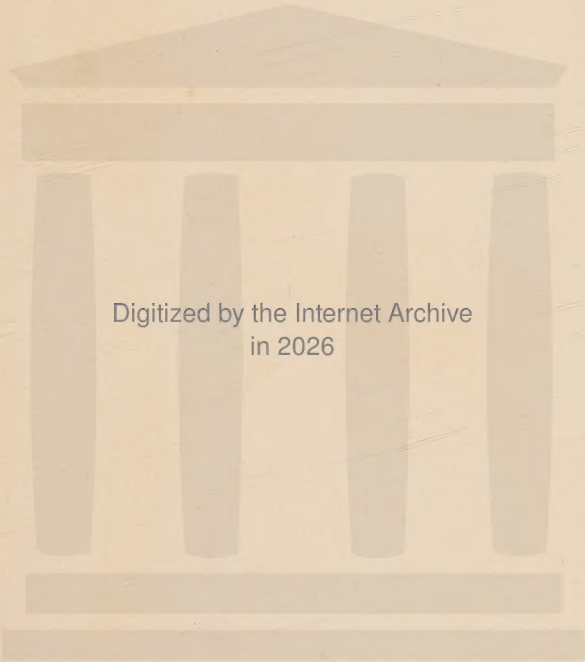
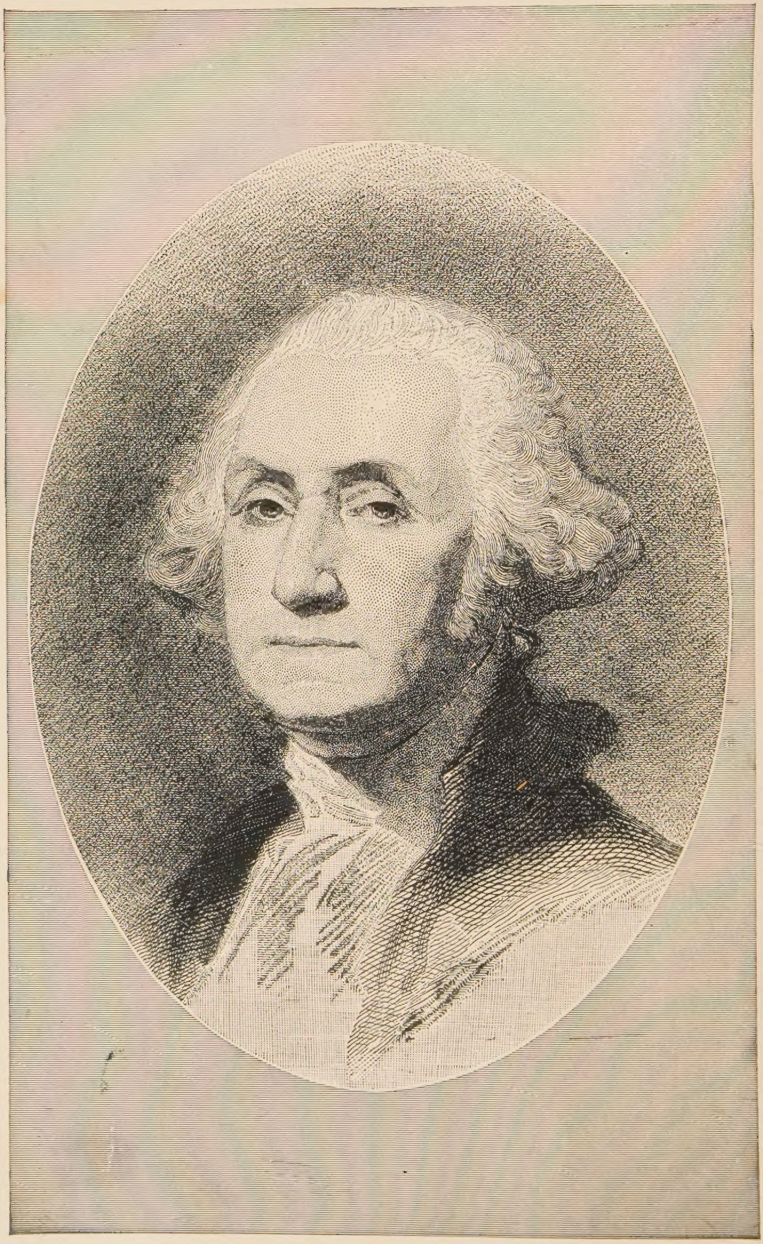


Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/lifeofgeorgewash0004wash_h5x4



GEORGE WASHINGTON.
(From Stuart's Painting.)

THE LIFE

OF

GEORGE WASHINGTON.

BY

WASHINGTON IRVING.

COMPLETE IN FOUR VOLUMES.

VOL. IV.

PHILADELPHIA:
DAVID McKAY, PUBLISHER.
1904.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

Cornwallis Aroused to his Danger—His Retreat to the Carolinas Cut Off—Strengthens his Works—Action Between the French and British Fleets—Washington and De Rochambeau Visit the French Fleet—Operations before Yorktown . . . . . Page 15

CHAPTER II.

Greene on the High Hills of Santee—The Enemy Harassed—Greene Marches against Stuart—Battle near Eutaw Springs . . . 23

CHAPTER III.

Siege and Surrender of Yorktown 29

CHAPTER IV.

Dissolution of the Combined Armies—Washington at Eltham—Death of John Parke Custis—Washington at Mount Vernon—Correspondence about the Next Campaign—Lafayette Sails for France—Washington Stimulates Congress to Military Preparations—Project to Surprise and Carry Off Prince William Henry from New York—The Case of Captain Asgill 39

CHAPTER V.

Washington Continues His Precautions—Sir Guy Carleton Brings Pacific News—Discontents of the Army—Extraordinary Letter from Colonel Nicola—Indignant Reply of Washington—Joint Letter of Sir Guy Carleton and Admiral Digby—Junction of the Allied Armies of the Hudson—Contemplated Reduction of the Army . 46

CHAPTER VI.

Discontents of the Army at Newburg—Memorial of the Officers to Congress—Anonymous Papers Circulated in the Camp—Meeting of Officers Called—Address of Washington—Resolutions in Consequence—Letters of Washington to the President—His Opinion of the Anonymous Addresses and their Author 50

Agnes Scott College Library

CHAPTER VII.

News of Peace—Letter of Washington in Behalf of the Army—Cessation of Hostilities Proclaimed—Order of the Cincinnati Formed—Letter of Washington to the State Governors—Mutiny in the Pennsylvania Line—Letter of Washington on the Subject—Tour to the Northern Posts . . . . . Page 59

CHAPTER VIII.

The Army to be discharged—Parting Address of Washington—Evacuation of New York—Parting Scene of Washington with his Officers at New York—Washington Resigns his Commission to Congress—Retires to Mount Vernon 68

CHAPTER IX.

Washington at Mount Vernon—A Soldier's Repose—Plans of Domestic Life—Kind Offer to the Council of Pennsylvania—Historical Applications—News of Jacob Van Braam—Opening of Spring—Agricultural Life Resumed—Recollections of the Fairfaxes—Meeting of the Order of Cincinnati—Tour of Washington and Dr. Craik to the West—Ideas of Internal Improvement—Parting with Lafayette. 75

CHAPTER X.

Scheme of Inland Navigation—Shares of Stock offered to Washington—Declined—Rural Improvements—The Tax of Letter-writing—The Tax of Sitting for Likenesses—Ornamental Gardening—Management of the Estate—Domestic Life—Visit of Mr. Watson—Reverential Awe Inspired by Washington—Irksome to Him—Instances of his Festive Gayety—Of his Laughing—Passion for Hunting Revived—Death of General Greene—His Character—Washington's Regrets and Encomiums—Letters to the French Noblemen. 84

CHAPTER XI.

Washington Doubts the Solidity of the Confederation—Correspondence with John Jay on the Subject—Plan of a Convention of all the States to Revise the Federal System—Washington Heads the Virginia Delegation—Insurrection in Massachusetts—The Convention—A Federal Constitution Organized—Ratified 98

CHAPTER XII.

Washington talked of for the Presidency—His Letters on the Subject Expressing his Reluctance—His Election—His Progress to the Seat of Government—His Reception at New York—The Inauguration 109

CHAPTER XIII.

The New Government—Domestic and Foreign Relations—Washington's Anxious Position—Its Difficulties—Without Cabinet or Constitu-

tional Adviser—John Jay—Hamilton—His Efficient Support of the Constitution and Theoretic Doubts—James Madison—Knox—His Characteristics . . . . . Page 121

CHAPTER XIV.

Washington's Privacy Beset with Visits of Compliment—Queries as to the Proper Line of Conduct in his Presidential Intercourse—Opinions of Adams and Hamilton—Jefferson as to the Authors of the Minor Forms and Ceremonies—His Whimsical Anecdote of the First Levee—Inaugural Ball. 125

CHAPTER XV.

Journey of Mrs. Washington to New York—Honors Paid her in her Progress—Receptions at the Seat of Government—The President's Equipage 129

CHAPTER XVI.

Alarming Illness of the President—The Senate Rejects one of his Nominations—His Sensitive Vindication of it—Death of his Mother—Her character—The Executive Departments Instituted—Selection of Officers for the Treasury and War Departments—Hamilton Instructed to Report a Financial Plan at the next Session of Congress—Arrangement of the Judiciary Department—Edmund Randolph—Adjournment of Congress—Its Character, by Fisher Ames . 133

CHAPTER XVII.

The Department of State still without a Head—Sketch of Jefferson's Character and Opinions—Deeply Immersed in French Politics at Paris—Gouverneur Morris Abroad—Contrast of his and Jefferson's Views on the French Crisis—News of the French Revolution in America—Popular Excitement—Washington's Cautious Opinion on the Subject—Hamilton's Apprehensive View—Jefferson Offered a Place in the Cabinet as Secretary of State 138

CHAPTER XVIII.

Washington's Journey through the Eastern States—John Hancock—Clashing between the Civil and Municipal Authorities on the President's Entry into Boston—A contest of Etiquette—Washington's Account of his Entry—His Reception—A New Punctilio—Address of Cincinnati Society—Return to New York 145

CHAPTER XIX.

Col. John Trumbull—Message to Washington from Lafayette—Jefferson's Embarkation for America—Washington Forwards his Commission as Secretary of State—His Acceptance 149

CHAPTER XX.

Reassembling of Congress—Financial Condition of the Country—its

Debt at Home and Abroad—Debts of the States—Hamilton's Report—Opposition to it—Dr. Stuart's Warning Letter to Washington—His Reply,—Jefferson's Arrival at the Seat of Government—New York at that Period—Jefferson Apprehends Monarchical Designs . . . . . Page 152

CHAPTER XXI.

The Assumption of the State Debts discussed—Washington in favor—A Majority of Two Against it—Hamilton's Appeal to Jefferson on the subject—The Latter Arranges for a Compromise—His account of it—Adjustment about the Seat of Government—Assumption carried—Treaty of Peace with the Creeks—Cavillings about Presidential Etiquette—Washington's Defence—Adjournment of Congress—Fancied Harmony of the Cabinet—Jefferson suspects Hamilton of Finesse in Procuring his Agency in the Assumption . . 169

CHAPTER XXII.

Lafayette at the Head of the Revolution in France—His Letter to Washington—Gouverneur Morris's Opinion of his Position—Washington's Dubious and Anxious Views—Presented by Lafayette with the Key of the Bastille—Visits Rhode Island and Mount Vernon . . 164

CHAPTER XXIII.

Frontier Difficulties with the Indians—General Harmer's Expedition against them—Ambuscade of Col. Hardin's Detachment—Escape of Capt. Armstrong—A Second Detachment of Col. Hardin Compelled to Retreat—Washington's Long Anxiety as to the Result of the Enterprise—Final Tidings 167

CHAPTER XXIV.

Congress Reassembles at Philadelphia—Residence of Washington at the New Seat of Government—The State Carriage—Hamilton's Financial Arrangements—Impost and Excise Bill—Passage of a Bill for a National Bank—Jefferson's Objections—Formation of Two Political Parties under Hamilton and Jefferson—Their Different Views—Dissatisfaction of Congress at the Report of Harmer's Expedition—Washington's Address to the Seneca Chiefs—His Desire to Civilize the Savages—Kentucky and Vermont Admitted into the Union—First Congress Expires—A New Expedition Projected Against the Hostile Tribes under General St. Clair—Washington's Solemn Warning on Taking Leave of Him 170

CHAPTER XXV.

Washington's Tour through the Southern States—Letter to Lafayette—Gloomy Picture of French Affairs by Gouverneur Morris—His Allusion to Lafayette—Lafayette Depicts the Troubles of a Patriot Leader—Washington's Reply—Jefferson's Ardent Views of the French Revolution—Distrust of John Adams—His Contributions to Fenno's Gazette—Reprint of Paine's Rights of Man—Flight and Recapture of Louis XVI.—Jefferson Communicates the News to Washington—His Satisfaction when the King Accepts the Constitution 174

CHAPTER XXVI.

Rural Hours at Mount Vernon—Assembling of Second Congress—Washington's Opening Speech—Two Expeditions Organized against the Indians, under Scott and Wilkinson—Their Feeble Result—Third Expedition under St. Clair—His Disastrous Contest and Dismal Retreat—How Washington Received the Intelligence. . Page 180

CHAPTER XXVII.

The Apportionment Bill—Washington's Veto—His Concern at the Growing Asperities of Congress—Intended Retirement—Jefferson's Determination to Retire at the Same Time—Remonstrance of Washington—His Request to Madison to Prepare Valedictory—Wayne Appointed to Succeed St. Clair—Congress Adjourns—Washington at Mount Vernon—Suggests Topics for his Farewell Address—Madison's Draft—Jefferson Urges his Continuance. . . . 187

CHAPTER XXVIII.

Jefferson's Suspicion—Contemned by Hamilton—Washington's Expostulation—Complaints of the Conduct of Freneau's Paper—Hamilton and Randolph Urge Him to a Re-election—A Warring Cabinet—Hamilton's Attack on Jefferson—Washington's Healing Admonitions—Replies of the Two Secretaries—Continued Hostility to the Excise Law—Washington's Proclamation—Renewed Effort to Allay the Discord in His Cabinet. 199

CHAPTER XXIX.

Washington Unanimously Re-elected—Opening of Session of Congress—Topics of the President's Speech—Abortive Attack upon the Secretary of the Treasury—Washington Installed for his Second Term. 206

CHAPTER XXX.

Gouverneur Morris Minister at the French Court—His Representations of the State of Affairs—Washington's Concern for Lafayette—Jefferson Annoyed at his Forebodings—Overthrow of the French Monarchy—Imprisonment of Lafayette—Jefferson Concerned, but not Discouraged at the Republican Massacres—Washington Shocked—His Letter to the Marchioness Lafayette. 209

CHAPTER XXXI.

Washington's Entrance upon his Second Term—Gloomy Auspices—Execution of Louis XVI.—France Declares War against England—Belligerent Excitement in America—Proclamation of Neutrality—French Mission to the United States—Genet Arrives in Charleston—His Reception in Philadelphia—Views of Jefferson and Hamilton—Washington's Dispassionate Opinion. 213

CHAPTER XXXII.

Genet Presents his Letter of Credence—His Diplomatic Speech—Wash-

ington's Conversation with Jefferson—Capture of the Ship Grange and other British Vessels—Question of Restitution—Dissatisfaction of Genet—Demands Release of two American Citizens—Washington's Sensitiveness to the Attacks of the Press—His Unshaken Determination. . . . . Page 219

CHAPTER XXXIII.

Washington called to Mount Vernon—The Case of the Little Sarah comes up in his absence—Governor Mifflin determined to prevent her departure—Rage of Genet—Jefferson urges detention of the Privateer until the President's return—Evasive assurance of Genet—Distrust of Hamilton and Knox—Washington returns to Philadelphia—A Cabinet Council—Its Determination communicated to Genet—The Vessel Sails in Defiance of it—Formation of the Democratic Society—The Recall of Genet determined on—The Ribald Lampoon—Washington's Outburst.. 223

CHAPTER XXXIV.

Threatened Dissolution of the Cabinet—Action Between the Ambuscade and Boston—Triumphant Return of the Former to New York—A French Fleet Arrives same Day—Excitement of the People—Genet Arrives in the Midst of It—His Enthusiastic Reception—Is Informed by Jefferson of the Measures for his Recall—His Rage and Reply—Decline of his Popularity. 229

CHAPTER XXXV.

Neutrality Endangered by Great Britain—Her Ill-advised Measures—Detention of Vessels Bound for France—Impressment of American Seamen—Persistence in Holding the Western Posts—Congress Assembles in December—The President's Opening Speech—His Censure of Genet—The Vice-President's Allusion to it—The Administration in a Minority in the House—Proclamation of Neutrality Sustained—Jefferson's Report—Retires from the Cabinet—His Parting Rebuke to Genet—His Character of Washington. . . 234

CHAPTER XXXVI.

Debate on Jefferson's Report on Commercial Intercourse—A Naval Force Proposed for the Protection of Commerce against Piratical Cruisers—Further Instances of the Audacity of Genet—His Recall—Arrival of his Successor—Irritation Excited by British Captures of American Vessels—Preparations for Defence—Embargo—Intense Excitement at "British Spoliations"—Partisans of France in the Ascendant—A Chance for Accommodating Difficulties—Jefferson's Hopes of Reconciliation—The War Cry Uppermost—Washington Determines to Send a Special Envoy to the British Government—Jefferson's Letter to Tench Coxe. 246

CHAPTER XXXVII.

James Monroe Appointed Minister to France in Place of Gouverneur Morris recalled—His Reception—Pennsylvania Insurrection—Proc-

lamation of Washington—Perseverance of the Insurgents—Second Proclamation—The Proceeds Against Them—General Morgan—Lawrence Lewis—Washington Arranges a Plan of Military Operations—Returns to Philadelphia leaving Lee in Command—Submission of the Insurgents—The President's Letter on the Subject to Jay, Minister at London. . . . . Page 247

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

Washington's Denunciation of Self-created Societies—Not Relished by Congress—Campaign of General Wayne—Hamilton Reports a Plan for the Redemption of the Public Debt—And Retires from his Post as Secretary of the Treasury—Is Succeeded by Oliver Wolcott—Resignation of Knox—Succeeded by Timothy Pickering—Close of the Session. 253

CHAPTER XXXIX.

Washington's Anxiety about the Progress of the Negotiation with England—Jay's Treaty Arrives for Ratification—Predisposition to Condemn—Return of Jay—Adet Succeeds Fauchet as Minister from France—The Treaty Laid Before the Senate—Ratified with a Qualification—A Novel Question—Popular Discontent—Abstract of the Treaty Published—Violent Opposition to it—Washington Resolved to Ratify—His Resolution Suspended—Goes to Mount Vernon—Reply to an Address from Boston—Increasing Clamor. . 258

CHAPTER XL.

Washington Recalled to the Seat of Government—Conduct of Randolph Brought in Question—Treaty signed—Resignation of Randolph—His correspondence with Washington—Unlimited disclosure permitted—Appearance of his Vindication—Pickering Transferred to the Department of State—M'Henry appointed Secretary of War—Arrival of George Washington Lafayette. 263

CHAPTER XLI.

Meeting of Congress—Washington's Official Summary of the Events of the Year—Cordial Response of the Senate—Partial Demur of the House—Washington's Position and Feelings with Regard to England, as Shown by Himself—Mr. Adet Presents the Colors of France—The Treaty Returned—Proceedings Thereupon—Thomas Pinckney Resigns as Minister at London—Rufus King Appointed in his Place—Washington's view of the Political Campaign—Jefferson's Fears of an Attempt to sow Dissension between him and Washington—Mr. Monroe Recalled and C. C. Pinckney Appointed in his Stead—Resentful Policy of France. 270

CHAPTER XLII.

Washington's Farewell Address—Meets the Two Houses of Congress for the Last Time—His Speech—Replies of the Senate and House—Mr. Giles—Andrew Jackson—Offensive Publication of the French Minister—John Adams Declared President—Washington's Letter to

Knox on the Eve of his Retirement—The Spurious Letters—His Farewell Dinner—John Adams takes the Oath of Office—Greetings of Washington at the Close of the Ceremony. . . Page 279

CHAPTER XLIII.

Washington at Mount Vernon—Influx of Strange Faces—Lawrence Lewis—Miss Nelly Custis—Washington's Counsel in Love Matters—A Romantic Episode—Return of George Washington Lafayette. 287

CHAPTER XLIV.

Parting Address of the French Directory to Mr. Monroe—The new American Minister Ordered to Leave the Republic—Congress Convened—Measures of Defence Recommended—Washington's Concern—Appointment of Three Envoys Extraordinary—Doubts their Success—Hears of an Old Companion in Arms—The Three Ministers and Talleyrand—Their Degrading Treatment—Threatened War with France—Washington Appointed Commander-in-chief—Arranges for Three Major Generals—Knox Aggrieved. . . 293

CHAPTER XLV.

Washington Taxed Anew with the Cares of Office—Correspondence with Lafayette—A Marriage at Mount Vernon—Appointment of a Minister to the French Republic—Washington's Surprise—His Activity on his Estate—Political Anxieties—Concern about the Army. 304

CHAPTER XLVI.

Washington Digests a Plan for the Management of his Estate—His Views in Regard to a Military Academy—Letter to Hamilton—His Last Hours—The Funeral—The Will—Its Provisions in Regard to His Slaves—Proceedings of Congress on his Death—Conclusion. 309

APPENDIX.

I.—Portraits of Washington 319
II.—Washington's Farewell Address 336
III.—Proceedings in Congress in consequence of the death of Washington 351
IV.—Washington's Will. 355

LIFE OF WASHINGTON.

CHAPTER I.

Cornwallis Aroused to his Danger—His Retreat to the Carolina Cut Off—Strengthens his Works—Action Between the French and British Fleets—Washington and De Rochambeau Visit the French Fleet—Operations before Yorktown.

Lord Cornwallis had been completely roused from his dream of security by the appearance, on the 28th of August, of the fleet of Count de Grasse within the capes of the Delaware. Three French ships of the line and a frigate soon anchored at the mouth of York River. The boats of the fleet were immediately busy conveying three thousand three hundred land forces, under the Marquis de St. Simon, up James River to form the preconcerted junction with those under Lafayette.

Awakened to his danger, Cornwallis, as Washington had foreseen, meditated a retreat to the Carolinas. It was too late. York River was blocked up by French ships; James River was filled with armed vessels covering the transportation of the troops. His lordship reconnoitred Williamsburg; it was too strong to be forced, and Wayne had crossed James River to join his troops to those under the marquis. Seeing his retreat cut off in every direction, Cornwallis proceeded to strengthen his works; sending off repeated expresses to apprise Sir Henry Clinton of his perilous situation.

The Count de Grasse, eager to return to the West Indies, urged Lafayette to make an immediate attack upon the British army, with the American and French troops under his command, without waiting for the combined force under Washington and Rochambeau, offering to aid him with marines and sailors from the ships. The admiral was seconded by the

Marquis de St Simon. They represented that the works at Yorktown were yet incomplete; and that that place and Gloucester immediately opposite, might be carried by storm by their superior force. It was a brilliant achievement which they held out to tempt the youthful commander, but he remained undazzled. He would not, for the sake of personal distinction, lavish the lives of the brave men confided to him; but would await the arrival of the combined forces, when success might be attained with little loss, and would leave to Washington the *coup de grace;* in all probability the closing triumph of the war.

The Count de Grasse had been but a few days anchored within the Chesapeake, and fifteen hundred of his seamen were absent, conveying the troops up James River, when Admiral Graves, who then commanded the British naval force on the American coast, appeared with twenty sail off the capes of Virginia. De Grasse, anxious to protect the squadron of the Count de Barras, which was expected from Rhode Island, and which it was the object of Graves to intercept, immediately slipped his cables and put to sea with twenty-four ships, leaving the rest to blockade York and James Rivers.

Washington received information of the sailing of the fleet from the capes, shortly after his departure from Mount Vernon, and instantly despatched missives, ordering the troops who were embarked at the Head of Elk to stop until the receipt of further intelligence, fearing that the navigation in Chesapeake Bay might not be secure. For two days he remained in anxious uncertainty, until, at Bowling Green, he was relieved by favorable rumors concerning the fleet, which were confirmed on his arriving at Williamsburg on the evening of the 14th.

Admiral Graves, it appeared, on the sallying forth of the French fleet, immediately prepared for action, although he had five ships less than De Grasse. The latter, however, was not disposed to accept the challenge, his force being weakened by the absence of so many of his seamen, employed in transporting troops. His plan was to occupy the enemy by partial actions and skilful manœuvres, so as to retain his possession of the Chesapeake, and cover the arrival of De Barras.

The vans of the two fleets, and some ships of the centre, engaged about four o'clock in the afternoon of the 7th of September. The conflict soon became animated. Several ships were damaged, and many men killed and wounded on both sides.

De Grasse, who had the advantage of the wind, drew off after sunset; satisfied with the damage done and sustained, and not disposed for a general action; nor was the British admiral inclined to push the engagement so near night, and on a hostile coast. Among his ships that had suffered, one had been so severely handled, that she was no longer seaworthy, and had to be burnt. For four days the fleets remained in sight of each other, repairing damages and manœuvring, but the French having still the advantage of the wind, maintained their prudent policy of avoiding a general engagement. At length De Grasse, learning that De Barras was arrived within the capes, formed a junction with him, and returned with him to his former anchoring ground, with two English frigates which he had captured. Admiral Graves, disappointed in his hope of intercepting De Barras, and finding the Chesapeake guarded by a superior force with which he could not prudently contend; having, moreover, to encounter the autumnal gales in the battered state of several of his ships, left the coast and bore away for New York. Under convoy of the squadron of De Barras came a fleet of transports, conveying land forces under M. de Choisy, with siege artillery and military stores. It should be mentioned to the credit of De Barras, that, in his orders from the French minister of marine to come to America, he was left at liberty to make a cruise on the banks of Newfoundland; so as not to be obliged to serve under De Grasse, who was his inferior in rank, but whom the minister wished to continue in the command. "But De Barras," writes Lafayette, "nobly took the part of conducting, himself, the artillery from Rhode Island, and of coming with all his vessels and placing himself under orders of an admiral his junior in service." *

From Williamsburg, Washington sent forward Count Fersen, one of the aides-de-camp of De Rochambeau, to hurry on the French troops with all possible despatch. He wrote to the same purport to General Lincoln: "Every day we now lose," said he, "is comparatively an age; as soon as it is in our power with safety, we ought to take our position near the enemy. Hurry on, then, my dear sir, with your troops, on the wings of speed. The want of our men and stores is now all that retards our immediate operations. Lord Cornwallis is improving every moment to the best advantage; and every day that is given him to make his preparations may cost us many lives to encounter them."

* Memoirs of Lafayette, t. i., p. 467.

It was with great satisfaction Washington learned that Admiral de Barras had anticipated his wishes, in sending transports and prize vessels up the bay to assist in bringing on the French troops. In the mean time he with Count de Rochambeau was desirous of having an interview with the admiral on board of his ship, provided he could send some fast-sailing cutter to receive them. A small ship, the Queen Charlotte, was furnished by the admiral for the purpose. It had been captured on its voyage from Charleston to New York, having Lord Rawdon on board, and had been commodiously fitted up for his lordship's reception.

On board of this vessel Washington and De Rochambeau, with the Chevalier de Chastellux and Generals Knox and Duportail, embarked on the 18th, and proceeding down James River, came the next morning in sight of the French fleet riding at anchor in Lynn Haven Bay, just under the point of Cape Henry. About noon they got along-side of the admiral's ship, the Ville de Paris, and were received on board with great ceremony, and naval and military parade. Admiral de Grasse was a tall, fine-looking man, plain in his address and prompt in the discharge of business. A plan of co-operation was soon arranged, to be carried into effect on the arrival of the American and French armies from the North, which were actually on their way down the Chesapeake from the Head of Elk. Business being despatched, dinner was served, after which they were conducted throughout the ships, and received the visits of the officers of the fleet, almost all of whom came on board.

About sunset Washington and his companions took their leave of the admiral, and returned on board their own little ship; when the yards of all the ships of the fleet were manned, and a parting salute was thundered from the Ville de Paris. Owing to storms and contrary winds, and other adverse circumstances, the party did not reach Williamsburg until the 22nd, when intelligence was received that threatened to disconcert all the plans formed in the recent council on board ship. Admiral Digby, it appeared, had arrived in New York with six ships of the line and a reinforcement of troops. This intelligence Washington instantly transmitted to the Count de Grasse by one of the Count de Rochambeau's aides-de-camp. De Grasse in reply expressed great concern, observing that the position of affairs was changed by the arrival of Digby. "The enemy," writes he, "is now nearly equal to us in strength, and it would be imprudent in me to place myself in a situation that would prevent my attacking them.

should they attempt to afford succor." He proposed, therefore, to leave two vessels at the mouth of York River, and the corvettes and frigates in James River, which, with the French troops on shore, would be sufficient assistance; and to put to sea with the rest, either to intercept the enemy and fight them where there was good sea-room, or to blockade them in New York should they not have sailed.

On reading this letter, Washington dreaded that the present plan of co-operation might likewise fall through, and the fruits of all his schemes and combinations be lost when within his reach. With the assistance of the fleet, the reduction of Yorktown was demonstrably certain, and the surrender of the garrison must go far to terminate the war; whereas the departure of the ships, by leaving an opening for succor to the enemy, might frustrate these brilliant prospects and involve the whole enterprise in ruin and disgrace. Even a momentary absence of the French fleet might enable Cornwallis to evacuate Yorktown and effect a retreat, with the loss merely of his baggage and artillery, and perhaps a few soldiers. These and other considerations were urged in a letter to the count, remonstrating against his putting to sea. Lafayette was the bearer of the letter, and seconded it with so many particulars respecting the situation of the armies, and argued the case so earnestly and eloquently, that the count consented to remain. It was, furthermore determined in a council of war of his officers, that a large part of the fleet should anchor in York River; four or five vessels be stationed so as to pass up and down James River, and a battery for cannon and mortars be erected with the aid of the allied troops on Point Comfort.

By the 25th the American and French troops were mostly arrived and encamped near Williamsburg, and preparations were made for the decisive blow.

Yorktown, as has already been noted, is situated on the south side of York River, immediately opposite Gloucester Point. Cornwallis had fortified the town by seven redoubts and six batteries on the land side, connected by intrenchments; and there was a line of batteries along the river. The town was flanked on each side by deep ravines and creeks emptying into York River; their heads, in front of the town, being not more than half a mile apart. The enemy had availed themselves of these natural defences, in the arrangement of extensive outworks, with redoubts strengthened by abatis; field-works mounted with cannon, and trees cut down and left with the branches pointed outward.

Gloucester Point had likewise been fortified. Its batteries, with those of Yorktown, commanding the intervening river. Ships of war were likewise stationed on it, protected by the guns of the forts, and the channel was obstructed by sunken vessels.

The defence of Gloucester Point was confided to Lieutenant-colonel Dundas, with six or seven hundred men. The enemy's main army was encamped about Yorktown, within the range of the outer redoubts and field-works.

Washington and his staff bivouacked that night on the ground in the open air. He slept under a mulberry tree, the root serving for his pillow. On the following morning the two armies drew out on each side of Beaver Dam Creek. The Americans, forming the right wing, took station on the east side of the creek; the French, forming the left wing, on the west.

That evening Cornwallis received despatches from Sir Henry Clinton, informing him of the arrival of Admiral Digby, and that a fleet of twenty-three ships of the line, with about five thousand troops, would sail to his assistance probably on the 5th of October. A heavy firing would be made by them on arriving at the entrance of the Chesapeake. On hearing it, if all went well at Yorktown, his lordship was to make three separate columns of smoke; and four, should he still possess the post at Gloucester Point.

Cornwallis immediately wrote in reply: "I have ventured these last two days to look General Washington's whole force in the face in the position on the outside of my works, and have the pleasure to assure your Excellency, that there is but one wish throughout the army, which is that the enemy would advance. * * * * I shall retire this night within the works, and have no doubt, if relief arrives in any reasonable time, York and Gloucester will be both in the possession of His Majesty's troops. I believe your Excellency must depend more on the sounds of our cannon than the signals of smoke for information; however, I will attempt it on the Gloucester side." *

That night his lordship accordingly abandoned his outworks, and drew his troops within the town; a measure strongly censured by Tarleton in his Commentaries as premature; as cooping up the troops in narrow quarters, and giving up a means of disputing inch by inch, the approaches of the besiegers, and thus gaining time to complete the fortifications of the town.

* Correspondence relative to defence of York, p. 199.

The outworks thus abandoned were seized upon the next morning by detachments of American light infantry and French troops, and served to cover the troops employed in throwing up breastworks. Colonel Alexander Scammel, officer of the day, while reconnoitring the ground abandoned by the enemy, was set upon by a party of Hessian troopers. He attempted to escape, but was wounded, captured, and carried off to Yorktown. Washington, to whom he had formerly acted as aide-de-camp, interested himself in his favor, and at his request Cornwallis permitted him to be removed to Williamsburg, where he died in the course of a few days. He was an officer of much merit, and his death was deeply regretted by Washington and the army.

The combined French and American forces were now twelve thousand strong, exclusive of the Virginia militia which Governor Nelson had brought into the field. An instance of patriotic self-devotion on the part of this functionary is worthy of special record. The treasury of Virginia was empty; the governor, fearful that the militia would disband for want of pay, had endeavored to procure a loan from a wealthy individual on the credit of the State. In the precarious situation of affairs, the guarantee was not deemed sufficient. The governor pledged his own property and obtained the loan at his individual risk.

On the morning of the 28th of September, the combined armies marched from Williamsburg towards Yorktown, about twelve miles distant, and encamped at night within two miles of it, driving in the pickets and some patrols of cavalry. General de Choisy was sent across York River, with Lauzun's legion and General Weedon's brigade of militia, to watch the enemy on the side of Gloucester Point.

By the first of October the line of the besiegers nearly two miles from the works, formed a semicircle, each end resting on the river, so that the investment by land was complete; while the Count de Grasse, with the main fleet, remained in Lynn Haven Bay, to keep off assistance by sea.

About this time the Americans threw up two redoubts in the night, which, on being discovered in the morning, were severely cannonaded. Three of the men were killed and several severely wounded. While Washington was superintending the works, a shot struck the ground close by him, throwing up a cloud of dust. The Rev. Mr. Evans, chaplain in the army, who was standing by him, was greatly agitated. Taking off his hat and showing it covered with sand, "See here, General," exclaimed he. "Mr. Evans," said Washing-

ton with grave pleasantry, "you had better carry that home, and show it to your wife and children." *

The besieged army began now to be greatly distressed for want of forage, and had to kill many of their horses, the carcasses of which were continually floating down the river. In the evening of the 2d of October, Tarleton with his legion and the mounted infantry were passed over the river to Gloucester Point, to assist in foraging. At daybreak Lieutenant-colonel Dundas led out part of his garrison to forage the neighboring country. About ten o'clock the wagons and bat horses laden with Indian corn were returning, covered by a party of infantry, with Tarleton and his dragoons as a rear-guard. The wagons and infantry had nearly reached York River, when word was brought that an enemy was advancing in force. The report was confirmed by a cloud of dust from which emerged Lauzun and the French hussars and lancers.

Tarleton, with part of his legion, advanced to meet them: the rest, with Simcoe's dragoons, remained as a rear-guard in a skirt of woods. A skirmish ensued, gallantly sustained on each side, but the superiority of Tarleton's horses gave him the advantage. General Choisy hastened up with a corps of cavalry and infantry to support the hussars. In the medley fight, a dragoon's horse wounded by a lance, plunged, and overthrew both Tarleton and his steed. The rear-guard rushed from their covert to rescue their commander. They came galloping up in such disorder, that they were roughly received by Lauzun's hussars, who were drawn up on the plain. In the mean time Tarleton scrambled out of the melée, mounted another horse, and ordered a retreat, to enable his men to recover from their confusion. Dismounting forty infantry, he placed them in a thicket. Their fire checked the hussars in their pursuit. The British dragoons rallied, and were about to charge; when the hussars retired behind their infantry; and a fire was opened upon the British by some militia from behind a fence. Tarleton again ordered a retreat to be sounded, and the conflict came to an end. The loss of the British in killed and wounded was one officer and eleven men; that of the French two officers and fourteen hussars. This was the last affair of Tarleton and his legion in the revolutionary war.

The next day General Choisy, being reinforced by a detachment of marines from the fleet of De Grasse, cut off all communication by land between Gloucester and the country.

* Thacher's Military Journal, p. 336.

At this momentous time, when the first parallel before the besieged city was about to be opened, Washington received despatches from his faithful coadjutor, General Greene, giving him important intelligence of his co-operations in the South; to consider which we will suspend for a moment our narrative of affairs before Yorktown.

CHAPTER II.

Greene on the High Hills of Santee—The Enemy Harassed—Greene Marches against Stuart—Battle near Eutaw Springs.

For some weeks in the months of July and August, General Greene had remained encamped with his main force on the high hills of Santee, refreshing and disciplining his men, and awaiting the arrival of promised reinforcements. He was constantly looking to Washington as his polar star by which to steer, and feared despatches from him had been intercepted. "I wait with impatience for intelligence," said he, "by which I mean to govern my own operations. If things are flattering in the North, I will hazard less in the South; but, if otherwise there, we must risk more here." In the mean time, Marion with his light troops, aided by Colonel Washington with his dragoons, held control over the lower Santee. Lee was detached to operate with Sumter's brigade on the Congaree, and Colonel Harden with his mounted militia was scouring the country about the Edisto. The enemy was thus harassed in every quarter; their convoys and foraging parties waylaid; and Stuart was obliged to obtain all his supplies from below.

Greene was disappointed as to reinforcements. All that he received were two hundred North Carolina levies and five hundred South Carolina militia: still he prepared for a bold effort to drive the enemy from their remaining posts. For that purpose, on the 22d of August he broke up his encampment on the "benign hills of Santee," to march against Colonel Stuart. The latter still lay encamped about sixteen miles distant in a straight line; but the Congaree and Wateree lay between, bordered by swamps overflowed by recent rains: to cross them and reach the hostile camp, it was necessary to make a circuit of seventy miles. While Greene was making it Stuart

abandoned his position, and moved down forty miles to the vicinity of Eutaw Springs, where he was reinforced by a detachment from Charleston with provisions.

Greene followed on by easy marches. He had been joined by General Pickens with a party of Ninety-Six militia, and by the State troops under Lieutenant-colonel Henderson; and now moved slowly to give time for Marion, who was scouring the country about the Edisto, to rejoin him. This was done on the 5th of September at Laurens' place, within seventeen miles of Stuart's camp. Here baggage, tents, everything that could impede motion, was left behind, and on the afternoon of the seventh the army was pushed on within seven miles of the Eutaws, where it bivouacked for the night, Greene lying on the ground wrapped in his cloak, with the root of a tree for a pillow.

At four o'clock in the morning his little army was in motion. His whole force at that time did not exceed two thousand men; that of the enemy he was seeking, about twenty-three hundred. The Americans, however, were superior in cavalry. Owing to the difficulty of receiving information, and the country being covered with forests, the enemy were not aware of Greene's approach until he was close upon them.

His army advanced in two columns, which were to form the two lines of battle. The first column, commanded by General Marion, was composed of two battalions of North and two of South Carolina militia. The second column of three brigades; one of North Carolina, one of Virginia, and one of Maryland Continental troops. Colonel Lee with his legion covered the right flank, Colonel Henderson the left. Colonel Washington, with his dragoons and the Delaware troops, formed the reserve. Each column had two field-pieces.

Within four miles of Eutaw they met with a British detachment of one hundred and fifty infantry and fifty cavalry under Major Coffin, sent forward to reconnoitre; it was put to flight after a severe skirmish, in which a number were killed and wounded, and several taken prisoners. Supposing this to be the van of the enemy, Greene halted his columns and formed. The South Carolinians in equal divisions formed the right and left of the first line, the North Carolinians the center. General Marion commanded the right; General Pickens, the left; Colonel Malmedy, the center. Colonel Henderson with the State troops covered the left of the line; Colonel Lee with his legion the right.

Of the second line, composed of regulars, the North Carolinians, under General Sumner, were on the right; the Mary-

landers, under Colonel Williams, on the left; the Virginians, under Colonel Campbell, in the center.

Colonel Washington with his cavalry followed in the rear as a corps de reserve.

Two three-pounders moved on the road in the center of the first line. Two six-pounders in a like position in the second line.

In this order the troops moved forward, keeping their lines as well as they could though open woods, which covered the country on each side of the road.

Within a mile of the camp they encountered a body of infantry thrown forward by Colonel Stuart, to check their advance while he had time to form his troops in order of battle. These were drawn up in line in a wood two hundred yards west of Eutaw Springs. The right rested on Eutaw Creek(or brook), and was covered by a battalion of grenadiers and infantry under Major Majoribanks, partly concealed among thickets on the margin of the stream. The left of the line extended across the Charleston road, with a reserve corps in a commanding situation covering the road. About fifty yards in the rear of the British line was a cleared field, in which was their encampment, with the tents all standing. Adjoining it was a brick house with a palisadoed garden, which Colonel Stuart intended as a protection, if too much pressed by cavalry.

The advanced party of infantry, which had retired firing before the Americans, formed on the flanks of Colonel Stuart's line. The Carolinian militia had pressed after them. About nine o'clock the action was commenced by the left of the American line, and soon became general. The militia fought for a time with the spirit and firmness of regulars. Their two field-pieces were dismounted; so was one of the enemy's; and there was great carnage on both sides. The militia fought until they had expended seventeen rounds, when they gave way, covered by Lee and Henderson, who fought bravely on the flanks of the line.

Sumner, with the regulars who formed the second line, advanced in fine style to take the place of the first. The enemy likewise brought their reserve into action; the conflict continued to be bloody and severe. Colonel Henderson, who commanded the State troops in the second line, was severely wounded; this caused some confusion. Sumner's brigade, formed partly of recruits, gave way under the superior fire of the enemy. The British rushed forward to secure their fancied victory. Greene, seeing their line disordered, instantly

ordered Williams with his Marylanders to "sweep the field with the bayonet." Williams was seconded by Colonel Campbell with the Virginians. The order was gallantly obeyed. They delivered a deadly volley at forty yards' distance, and then advanced at a brisk rate, with loud shouts and trailed arms, prepared to make the deadly thrust. The British recoiled. While the Marylanders and Virginians attacked them in front, Lee with his legion turned their left flank and charged them in rear. Colonel Hampton with the State cavalry made a great number of prisoners, and Colonel Washington, coming up with his reserve of horse and foot, completed their defeat. They were driven back through their camp; many were captured; many fled along the Charleston road, and others threw themselves into the brick house.

Major Majoribanks and his troops could still enfilade the left flank of the Americans from their covert among the thickets on the border of the stream. Greene ordered Colonel Washington with his dragoons and Kirkwood's Delaware infantry to dislodge them, and Colonel Wade Hampton to assist with the State troops. Colonel Washington, without waiting for the infantry, dashed forward with his dragoons. It was a rash move. The thickets were impervious to cavalry. The dragoons separated into small squads, and endeavored to force their way in. Horses and riders were shot down or bayoneted; most of the officers were either killed or wounded. Colonel Washington had his horse shot under him; he himself was bayoneted, and would have been slain, had not a British officer interposed, who took him prisoner.

By the time Hampton and Kirkwood came up, the cavalry were routed; the ground was strewed with the dead and the wounded; horses were plunging and struggling in the agonies of death; others galloping about without their riders. While Hampton rallied the scattered cavalry, Kirkwood with his Delawares charged with bayonet upon the enemy in the thickets. Majoribanks fell back with his troops, and made a stand in the palisadoed garden of the brick house.

Victory now seemed certain on the side of the Americans. They had driven the British from the field, and had taken possession of their camp; unfortunately, the soldiers, thinking the day their own, fell to plundering the tents, devouring the food and carousing on the liquors found there. Many of them became intoxicated and unmanageable—the officers interfered in vain; all was riot and disorder.

The enemy in the mean time recovered from their confusion, and opened a fire from every window of the house and from

the palisadoed garden. There was a scattering fire also from the woods and thickets on the right and left. Four cannon, one of which had been captured from the enemy, were now advanced by the Americans to batter the house. The fire from the windows was so severe, that most of the officers and men who served the cannon were either killed or wounded. Greene ordered the survivors to retire: they did so, leaving the cannon behind.

Colonel Stuart was by this time rallying his left wing, and advancing to support the right; when Greene, finding his ammunition nearly exhausted, determined to give up the attempt to dislodge the enemy from their places of refuge, since he could not do it without severe loss; whereas the enemy could maintain their posts but a few hours, and he should have a better opportunity of attacking them on their retreat.

He remained on the ground long enough to collect his wounded, excepting those who were too much under the fire of the house, and then, leaving Colonel Hampton with a strong picket on the field, he returned to the position seven miles off, which he had left in the morning; not finding water any where nearer.

The enemy decamped in the night after destroying a large quantity of provisions, staving many barrels of rum, and breaking upwards of a thousand stand of arms which they threw into the springs of the Eutaw; they left behind also seventy of their wounded, who might have impeded the celerity of their retreat. Their loss in killed, wounded, and captured, in this action, was six hundred and thirty-three, of whom five hundred were prisoners in the hands of the Americans; the loss sustained by the latter in killed, wounded and missing, was five hundred and thirty-five. One of the slain most deplored was Colonel Campbell, who had so bravely led on the Virginians. He fell in the shock of the charge with the bayonet. It was a glorious close of a gallant career. In his dying moments he was told of the defeat of the enemy, and is said to have uttered the celebrated ejaculation of General Wolfe, "I die contented."

In the morning, General Greene, who knew not that the enemy had decamped, detached Lee and Marion to scour the country between Eutaw Springs and Charleston, to intercept any reinforcements which might be coming to Colonel Stuart, and to retard the march of the latter should he be retreating. Stuart, however, had met with reinforcements about fourteen miles from Eutaw, but continued his retreat to Monk's Corner, within twenty-five miles of Charleston.

Greene, when informed of the retreat, had followed with his main force almost to Monk's Corner; finding the number and position of the enemy too strong to be attacked with prudence, he fell back to Eutaw, where he remained a day or two to rest his troops, and then returned by easy marches to his old position near the heights of Santee.

Thence, as usual, he despatched an account of affairs to Washington. "Since I wrote to you before, we have had a most bloody battle. It was by far the most obstinate fight I ever saw. Victory was ours; and had it not been for one of those little incidents which frequently happen in the progress of war, we should have taken the whole British army. * * * I am trying to collect a body of militia to oppose Lord Cornwallis should he attempt to escape through North Carolina to Charleston. Charleston itself may be reduced, if you will bend your forces this way, and it will give me great pleasure to join your Excellency in the attempt; for I shall be equally happy, whether as a principal or subordinate, so that the public good is promoted."

Such was the purport of the intelligence received from Greene. Washington considered the affair at Eutaw Springs a victory, and sent Greene his congratulations. "Fortune," writes he, "must have been coy indeed, had she not yielded at last to so persevering a pursuer as you have been.

"I can say with sincerity, that I feel with the highest degree of pleasure the good effects which you mention as resulting from the perfect good understanding between you, the marquis and myself. I hope it will never be interrupted, and I am sure it never can be while we are all influenced by the same pure motive, that of love to our country and interest in the cause in which we are embarked."

We will now resume our narrative of the siege of Yorktown.

CHAPTER III.

Siege and Surrender of Yorktown.

General Lincoln had the honor, on the night of the 6th of October, of opening the first parallel before Yorktown. It was within six hundred yards of the enemy; nearly two miles in extent, and the foundations were laid for two redoubts,

He had under him a large detachment of French and American troops, and the work was conducted with such silence and secrecy in a night of extreme darkness, that the enemy were not aware of it until daylight. A severe cannonade was then opened from the fortifications; but the men were under cover and continued working; the greatest emulation and good will prevailing between the officers and soldiers of the allied armies thus engaged.

By the afternoon of the 9th the parallel was completed, and two or three batteries were ready to fire upon the town. "General Washington put the match to the first gun," says an observer who was present; "a furious discharge of cannon and mortars immediately followed, and Earl Cornwallis received his first salutation." *

Governor Nelson, who had so nobly pledged his own property to raise funds for the public service, gave another proof of his self-sacrificing patriotism on this occasion. He was asked which part of the town could be most effectively cannonaded. He pointed to a large handsome house on a rising ground as the probable head-quarters of the enemy. It proved to be his own.†

The governor had an uncle in the town, very old, and afflicted with the gout. He had been for thirty years secretary under the royal colonial government, and was still called Mr. Secretary Nelson. He had taken no part in the Revolution, unfitted, perhaps, for the struggle, by his advanced age and his infirmities; and had remained in Yorktown when taken possession of by the English, not having any personal enmity to apprehend from them. He had two sons in Washington's army, who now were in the utmost alarm for his safety. At their request Washington sent in a flag, desiring that their father might be permitted to leave the place. "I was a witness," writes the Count de Chastellux in his Memoirs, "of the cruel anxiety of one of those young men, as he kept his eyes fixed upon the gate of the town by which the flag would come out. It seemed as if he were awaiting his own sentence in the reply that was to be received. Lord Cornwallis had not the inhumanity to refuse so just a request."

The appearance of the venerable secretary, his stately person, noble countenance and gray hairs, commanded respect and veneration. "I can never recall without emotion," writes the susceptible count, "his arrival at the head-quarters of

* Thacher's Military Journal.

† Given on the authority of Lafayette. Sparks, viii. 201.

General Washington. He was seated, his attack of the gout still continuing, and while we stood around him, he related with a serene visage what had been the effect of our batteries." *

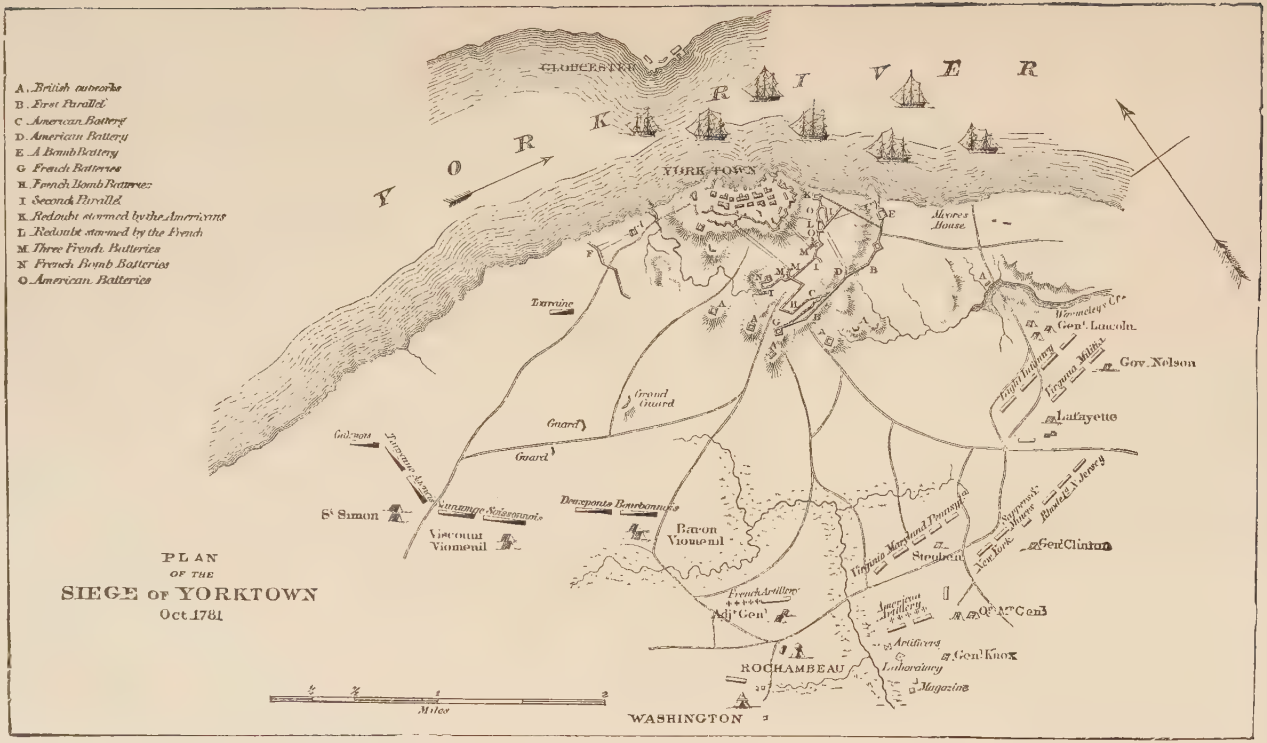
His house had received some of the first shots; one of his negroes had been killed, and the head-quarters of Lord Cornwallis had been so battered, that he had been driven out of them.

The cannonade was kept up almost incessantly for three or four days from the batteries above mentioned, and from three others managed by the French. "Being in the trenches every other night and day," writes an observer already quoted,† "I have a fine opportunity of witnessing the sublime and stupendous scene which is continually exhibiting. The bomb-shells from the besiegers and the besieged are incessantly crossing each other's path in the air. They are clearly visible in the form of a black ball in the day, but in the night they appear like a fiery meteor with a blazing tail, most beautifully brilliant, ascending majestically from the mortar to a certain altitude, and gradually descending to the spot where they are destined to execute their work of destruction. When a shell falls, it whirls round, burrows and excavates the earth to a considerable extent, and, bursting, makes dreadful havoc around." "Some of our shells, over reaching the town, are seen to fall into the river, and bursting, throw up columns of water like the spouting monsters of the deep."

The half-finished works of the enemy suffered severely, the guns were dismounted or silenced, and many men killed. The red-hot shot from the French batteries northwest of the town reached the English shipping. The Charon, a forty-four gun ship, and three large transports, were set on fire by them. The flames ran up the rigging to the tops of the masts. The conflagration, seen in the darkness of the night, with the accompanying flash and thundering of cannon, and soaring and bursting of shells; and the tremendous explosions of the ships, all presented a scene of mingled magnificence and horror.

On the night of the 11th the second parallel was opened by the Baron Steuben's division, within three hundred yards of the works. The British now made new embrasures, and for two or three days kept up a galling fire upon those at work.

* Chastellux, vol. ii. p. 19—23. † Thacher.



PLAN
OF THE
SIEGE OF YORKTOWN
Oct. 1781

The latter were still more annoyed by the flanking fire of two redoubts three hundred yards in front of the British works. As they enfiladed the intrenchments, and were supposed also to command the communication between Yorktown and Gloucester, it was resolved to storm them both, on the night of the 14th; the one nearest the river by a detachment of Americans commanded by Lafayette; the other by a French detachment led by the Baron de Viomenil. The grenadiers of the regiment of Gatinais were to be at the head of the French detachment. This regiment had been formed out of that of Auvergne, of which De Rochambeau had been colonel, and which, by its brave and honorable conduct, had won the appellation of the regiment *D'Auvergne sans tache* (Auvergne without a stain). When De Rochambeau assigned the Gatinais grenadiers their post in the attack, he addressed to them a few soldier-like words. "My lads, I have need of you this night, and hope you will not forget that we have served together in that brave regiment of Auvergne sans tache." They instantly replied, that if he would promise to get their old name restored to them, they would sacrifice themselves to the last man. The promise was given.

In the arrangements for the American assault, Lafayette had given the honor of leading the advance to his own aide-de-camp, Lieutenant-colonel Gimat. This instantly touched the military pride of Hamilton, who exclaimed against it as an unjust preference, it being his tour of duty. The marquis excused himself by alleging that the arrangement had been sanctioned by the commander-in-chief, and could not be changed by him. Hamilton forthwith made a spirited appeal by letter to Washington. The latter, who was ignorant of the circumstances of the case, sent for the marquis, and, finding that it really was Hamilton's tour of duty, directed that he should be reinstated in it, which was done.* It was therefore arranged that Colonel Gimat's battalion should lead the van, and be followed by that of Hamilton, and that the latter should command the whole advanced corps.†

About eight o'clock in the evening rockets were sent up as signals for the simultaneous attack. Hamilton, to his great joy, led the advance of the Americans. The men, without waiting for the sappers to demolish the *abatis* in regular style, pushed them aside or pulled them down with their hands, and scrambled over, like rough bush-fighters. Hamilton was the first to mount the parapet, placing one foot on the shoulder of

* Lee's Memoirs of the War, ii. 342.

† Lafayette to Washington. Correspondence of the Rev. iii. 426.

a soldier, who knelt on one knee for the purpose.* The men mounted after him. Not a musket was fired. The redoubt was carried at the point of the bayonet. The loss of the Americans was one sergeant and eight privates killed, seven officers and twenty-five non-commissioned officers and privates wounded. The loss of the enemy was eight killed and seventeen taken prisoners. Among the latter was Major Campbell, who had commanded the redoubt. A New Hampshire captain of artillery would have taken his life in revenge of the death of his favorite Colonel Scammel, but Colonel Hamilton prevented him. Not a man was killed after he ceased to resist.†

The French stormed the other redoubt, which was more strongly garrisoned, with equal gallantry, but less precipitation. They proceeded according to rule. The soldiers paused while the sappers removed the *abatis*, during which time they were exposed to a destructive fire, and lost more men than did the Americans in their headlong attack. As the Baron de Viomenil, who led the party, was thus waiting, Major Barbour, Lafayette's aide-de-camp, came through the tremendous fire of the enemy, with a message from the marquis, letting him know that he was in his redoubt, and wished to know where the Baron was. "Tell the marquis," replied the latter, "that I am not in mine, but will be in it in five minutes."

The abatis being removed, the troops rushed to the assault. The Chevalier de Lameth, Lafayette's adjutant-general, was the first to mount the parapet of the redoubt, and received a volley at arms' length from the Hessians who manned it. Shot through both knees, he fell back into the ditch, and was conveyed away under care of his friend, the Count de Dumas. The Count de Deuxponts, leading on the royal grenadiers of the same name, was likewise wounded.

The grenadiers of the Gatinais regiment remembered the promise of De Rochambeau, and fought with true Gallic fire. One third of them were slain, and among them Captain de Sireuil, a valiant officer of chasseurs; but the regiment by its

* Leake's Life of John Lamb, p. 259.
† Thacher, p. 341.

N. B.—Gordon, in his history of the war, asserts that Lafayette, with the consent of Washington, ordered that, in capturing the redoubt, no quarter should be shown; in retaliation of a massacre perpetrated at Fort Griswold. It is needless to contradict a statement so opposed to the characters of both. It has been denied by both Lafayette and Hamilton. Not one of the enemy was killed unless in action.

bravery on this occasion regained from the king its proud name of the *Royal Auvergne.*

Washington was an intensely excited spectator of these assaults, on the result of which so much depended. He had dismounted, given his horse to a servant, and taken his stand in the grand battery with Generals Knox and Lincoln and their staffs. The risk he ran of a chance shot while watching the attack through an embrasure, made those about him uneasy. One of his aides-de-camp ventured to observe that the situation was very much exposed. "If you think so," replied he gravely, "you are at liberty to step back."

Shortly afterwards a musket ball struck the cannon in the embrasure, rolled along it, and fell at his feet. General Knox grasped his arm. "My dear general," exclaimed he, "we can't spare you yet." "It is a spent ball," replied Washington quietly; "no harm is done."

When all was over and the redoubts were taken, he drew a long breath, and turning to Knox, observed, "The work is done, *and well done!*" Then called to his servant, "William, bring me my horse."

In his despatches he declared that in these assaults nothing could exceed the firmness and bravery of the troops. Lafayette also testified to the conduct of Colonel Hamilton, "whose well-known talents and gallantry," writes he, "were on this occasion most conspicuous and serviceable." *

The redoubts thus taken were included the same night in the second parallel, and howitzers were mounted upon them the following day. The capture of them reduced Lord Cornwallis almost to despair. Writing that same day to Sir Henry Clinton, he observes, "My situation now becomes very critical; we dare not show a gun to their old batteries, and I expect that their new ones will open to-morrow morning. * * The safety of the place is, therefore, so precarious, that I cannot recommend that the fleet and army should run great risk in endeavoring to save us,"—a generous abnegation of self on the part of the beleaguered commander. Had the fleet and army sailed, as he had been given to expect, about the 5th of October, they might have arrived in time to save his lordship; but at the date of the above letter they were still lingering in port. Delay of naval succor was fatal to British operations in this war.

The second parallel was now nearly ready to open. Cornwallis dreaded the effect of its batteries on his almost dismantled works. To retard the danger as much as possible, he or-

* Lafayette to Washington. Cor. of the Rev. iii. 426.

dered an attack on two of the batteries that were in the greatest state of forwardness, their guns to be spiked. It was made a little before daybreak of the 16th, by about three hundred and fifty men, under the direction of Lieutenant-colonel Abercrombie. He divided his forces; a detachment of guards and a company of grenadiers attacked one battery, and a corps of light infantry the other.

The redoubts which covered the batteries were forced in gallant style, and several pieces of artillery hastily spiked. By this time the supporting troops from the trenches came up, and the enemy were obliged to retreat, leaving behind them seven or eight dead and six prisoners. The French who had guard of this part of the trenches, had four officers and twelve privates killed or wounded, and the Americans lost one sergeant. The mischief had been done too hastily. The spikes were easily extracted, and before evening all the batteries and the parallel were nearly complete.

At this time the garrison could not show a gun on the side of the works exposed to attack, and the shells were nearly expended; the place was no longer tenable. Rather than surrender, Cornwallis determined to attempt an escape. His plan was to leave his sick and wounded and his baggage behind, cross over in the night to Gloucester Point, attack Choisy's camp before daybreak, mount his infantry on the captured cavalry horses, and on such other as could be collected on the road, push for the upper country by rapid marches until opposite the fords of the great rivers, then turn suddenly northward, force his way through Maryland, Pennsylvania and the Jerseys, and join Sir Henry Clinton in New York.

It was a wild and daring scheme, but his situation was desperate, and the idea of surrender intolerable.

In pursuance of this design, sixteen large boats were secretly prepared; a detachment was appointed to remain and capitulate for the town's people, the sick and the wounded; a large part of the troops were transported to the Gloucester side of the river before midnight, and the second division had actually embarked when a violent storm of wind and rain scattered the boats, and drove them a considerable distance down the river. They were collected with difficulty. It was now too late to effect the passage of the second division before daybreak, and an effort was made to get back the division which had already crossed. It was not done until the morning was far advanced, and the troops in recrossing were exposed to the fire of the American batteries.

The hopes of Lord Cornwallis were now at an end. His works were tumbling in ruins about him, under an incessant cannonade; his garrison was reduced in number by sickness and death, and exhausted by constant watching and severe duty. Unwilling to expose the residue of the brave troops which had stood by him so faithfully, to the dangers and horrors of an assault, which could not fail to be successful, he ordered a parley to be beaten about ten o'clock on the morning of the 17th, and despatched a flag with a letter to Washington proposing a cessation of hostilities for twenty-four hours, and that two officers might be appointed by each side to meet and settle terms for the surrender of the posts of York and Gloucester.

Washington felt unwilling to grant such delay, when reinforcements might be on the way for Cornwallis from New York. In reply, therefore, he requested that, previous to the meeting of commissioners, his lordship's proposals might be sent in writing to the American lines, for which purpose a suspension of hostilities during two hours from the delivery of the letter, would be granted. This was complied with; but as the proposals offered by Cornwallis were not all admissible, Washington drew up a schedule of such terms as he would grant, and transmitted it to his lordship.

The armistice was prolonged. Commissioners met, the Viscount de Noailles and Lieutenant-colonel Laurens on the part of the allies; Colonel Dundas and Major Ross on the part of the British. After much discussion, a rough draft was made of the terms of capitulation to be submitted to the British general. These Washington caused to be promptly transcribed, and sent to Lord Cornwallis early in the morning of the 19th, with a note expressing his expectation that they would be signed by eleven o'clock, and that the garrison would be ready to march out by two o'clock in the afternoon. Lord Cornwallis was fain to comply, and, accordingly, on the same day, the posts of Yorktown and Gloucester were surrendered to General Washington as commander-in-chief of the combined army; and the ships of war, transports and other vessels, to the Count de Grasse, as commander of the French fleet. The garrison of Yorktown and Gloucester, including the officers of the navy and seamen of every denomination, were to surrender as prisoners of war to the combined army; the land force to remain prisoners to the United States, the seamen to the King of France.

The garrison was to be allowed the same honors granted to the garrison of Charleston when it surrendered to Sir Henry

Clinton. The officers were to retain their side arms; both officers and soldiers their private property, and no part of their baggage or papers was to be subject to search or inspection. The soldiers were to be kept in Virginia, Maryland, or Pennsylvania, as much by regiments as possible, and supplied with the same rations of provisions as the American soldiers. The officers were to be permitted to proceed, upon parole, to Europe or to any maritime port on the continent of America in possession of British troops. The Bonetta sloop-of-war was to be at the disposal of Lord Cornwallis; to convey an aide-de-camp, with despatches to Sir Henry Clinton, with such soldiers as he might think proper to send to New York, and was to sail without examination. (We will here observe that in this vessel, thus protected from scrutiny, a number of royalists, whose conduct had rendered them peculiarly odious to their countrymen, privately took their departure.)

It was arranged in the allied camp that General Lincoln should receive the submission of the royal army, precisely in the manner in which the submission of his own army had been received on the surrender of Charleston. An eye-witness has given us a graphic description of the ceremony.

"At about 12 o'clock the combined army was drawn up in two lines more than a mile in length, the Americans on the right side of the road, the French on the left. Washington, mounted on a noble steed, and attended by his staff, was in front of the former; the Count de Rochambeau and his suit, of the latter. The French troops, in complete uniform, and well equipped, made a brilliant appearance, and had marched to the ground with a band of music playing, which was a novelty in the American service. The American troops, but part in uniform, and all in garments much the worse for wear, yet had a spirited, soldier-like air, and were not the worse in the eyes of their countrymen for bearing the marks of hard service and great privations. The concourse of spectators from the country seemed equal in number to the military, yet silence and order prevailed.

NOTE.

The number of prisoners made by the above capitulation amounted to 7,073, of whom 5,950 were rank and file, six commissioned, and twenty-eight non-commissioned officers, and privates, had previously been captured in the two redoubts, or in the sortie of the garrison. The loss sustained by the garrison during the siege, in killed, wounded, and missing, amounted to 552. That of the combined army in killed was about 300. The combined army to which Cornwallis surrendered, was estimated at 16,000, of whom 7,000 were French, 5,500 continentals, and 3,500 militia.—*Holmes's Annals*, vol. ii. p. 333.

"About two o'clock the garrison sallied forth, and passed through with shouldered arms, slow and solemn steps, colors cased, and drums beating a British march. They were all well clad, having been furnished with new suits prior to the capitulation. They were led by General O'Hara on horseback, who, riding up to General Washington, took off his hat and apologized for the non-appearance of Lord Cornwallis, on account of indisposition. Washington received him with dignified courtesy, but pointed to Major-general Lincoln as the officer who was to receive the submission of the garrison. By him they were conducted into a field where they were to ground their arms. In passing through the line formed by the allied army, their march was careless and irregular, and their aspect sullen, the order to "ground arms" was given by their platoon officers with a tone of deep chagrin, and many of the soldiers threw down their muskets with a violence sufficient to break them. This irregularity was checked by General Lincoln; yet it was excusable in brave men in their unfortunate predicament. This ceremony over, they were conducted back to Yorktown, to remain under guard until removed to their places of destination." *

On the following morning, Washington in general orders congrtaulated the allied armies on the recent victory, awarding high praise to the officers and troops both French and American, for their conduct during the siege, and specifying by name several of the generals and other officers who had especially distinguished themselves. All those of his army who were under arrest, were pardoned and set at liberty "Divine service," it was added, "is to be performed to-morrow in the several brigades and divisions. The commander-in-chief earnestly recommends that the troops, not on duty, should universally attend, with that seriousness of deportment and gratitude of heart which the recognition of such reiterated and astonishing interpositions of Providence demand of us."

Cornwallis felt deeply the humiliation of this close to all his wide and wild campaigning, and was made the more sensitive on the subject by circumstances of which he soon became apprised. On the very day that he had been compelled to lay down his arms before Yorktown, the lingering armament intended for his relief sailed from New York. It consisted of twenty five ships of the line, two fifty-gun ships, and eight frigates; with Sir Henry Clinton and seven thousand of his best troops. Sir Henry arrived off the Capes of Virginia on

* Thacher, p. 346.

the 24th, and gathered information which led him to apprehend that Lord Cornwallis had capitulated. He hovered off the mouth of the Chesapeake until the 29th, when, having fully ascertained that he had come too late, he turned his tardy prows toward New York.

Cornwallis, in a letter written subsequently, renders the following testimony to the conduct of his captors: "The treatment, in general, that we have received from the enemy since our surrender, has been perfectly good and proper; but the kindness and attention that has been shown to us by the French officers in particular, their delicate sensibility of our situation, their generous and pressing offer of money, both public and private, to any amount, has really gone beyond what I can possibly describe, and will, I hope, make an impression in the breast of every officer, whenever the fortune of war shall put any of them into our power."

In the mean time, the rejoicings which Washington had commenced with appropriate solemnities in the victorious camp, had spread throughout the Union. "Cornwallis is taken!" was the universal acclaim. It was considered a death-blow to the war.

Congress gave way to transports of joy. Thanks were voted to the commander-in-chief, to the Counts De Rochambeau and De Grasse, to the officers of the allied armies generally, and to the corps of artillery and engineers especially. Two stands of colors, trophies of the capitulation, were voted to Washington, two pieces of field ordnance to De Rochambeau and De Grasse; and it was decreed that a marble column, commemorative of the alliance between France and the United States, and of the victory achieved by their associated arms, should be erected in Yorktown. Finally, Congress issued a proclamation, appointing a day for general thanksgiving and prayer, in acknowledgment of this signal interposition of Divine Providence.

Far different was the feeling of the British ministry when news of the event reached the other side of the Atlantic. Lord George Germain was the first to announce it to Lord North at his office in Downing street. "And how did he take it?" was the inquiry. "As he would have taken a ball in the breast," replied Lord George, "for he opened his arms, exclaiming wildly as he paced up and down the apartment, 'Oh God! it is all over!'" *

* Wraxall's Historical Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 99.

CHAPTER IV.

Dissolution of the Combined Armies—Washington at Eltham—Death of John Parke Custis—Washington at Mount Vernon—Correspondence about the Next Campaign—Lafayette Sails for France—Washington Stimulates Congress to Military Preparations—Project to Surprise and Carry Off Prince William Henry from New York—The Case of Captain Asgill.

Washington would have followed up the reduction of Yorktown by a combined operation against Charleston, and addressed a letter to the Count de Grasse on the subject, but the count alleged in reply that the orders of his court, ulterior projects, and his engagements with the Spaniards, rendered it impossible to remain the necessary time for the operation.

The prosecution of the Southern war, therefore, upon the broad scale which Washington had contemplated, had to be relinquished; for, without shipping and a convoy, the troops and everything necessary for a siege would have to be transported by land with immense trouble, expense and delay; while the enemy, by means of their fleet, could reinforce or withdraw the garrison at pleasure.

Under these circumstances, Washington had to content himself, for the present, with detaching two thousand Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia Continental troops, under General St. Clair, for the support of General Greene, trusting that, with this aid, he would be able to command the interior of South Carolina, and confine the enemy to the town of Charleston.

A dissolution of the combined forces now took place. The Marquis St. Simon embarked his troops on the last of October, and the Count de Grasse made sail on the 4th of November, taking with him two beautiful horses which Washington had presented to him in token of cordial regard.

Lafayette, seeing there was no probability of further active service in the present year, resolved to return to France on a visit to his family, and, with Washington's approbation, set out for Philadelphia to obtain leave of absence from Congress.

The British prisoners were marched to Winchester in Virginia, and Frederickstown in Maryland, and Lord Cornwallis and his principal officers sailed for New York on parole.

The main part of the American army embarked for the

Head of Elk, and returned northward under the command of General Lincoln, to be cantoned for the winter in the Jerseys and on the Hudson, so as to be ready for operations against New York, or elsewhere, in the next year's campaign.

The French army were to remain for the winter, in Virginia, and the Count de Rochambeau established his headquarters at Williamsburg.

Having attended in person to the distribution of ordnance and stores, the departure of prisoners, and the embarkation of the troops under Lincoln, Washington left Yorktown on the 5th of November, and arrived the same day at Eltham, the seat of his friend Colonel Bassett. He arrived just in time to receive the last breath of John Parke Custis, the son of Mrs. Washington, as he had, several years previously, rendered tender and pious offices at the death-bed of his sister Miss Custis. The deceased had been an object of Washington's care from childhood, and been cherished by him with paternal affection. Formed under his guidance and instructions, he had been fitted to take a part in the public concerns of his country, and had acquitted himself with credit as a member of the Virginia Legislature. He was but twenty-eight years old at the time of his death, and left a widow and four young children. It was an unexpected event, and the dying scene was rendered peculiarly affecting from the presence of the mother and wife of the deceased. Washington remained several days at Eltham to comfort them in their afflictions. As a consolation to Mrs. Washington in her bereavement, he adopted the two youngest children of the deceased, a boy and girl, who thenceforth formed a part of his immediate family.

From Eltham, Washington proceeded to Mount Vernon; but public cares gave him little leisure to attend to his private concerns. We have seen how repeatedly his steady mind had been exercised in the darkest times of the revolutionary struggle, in buoying up the public heart when sinking into despondency. He had now an opposite task to perform, to guard against an overweening confidence inspired by the recent triumph. In a letter to General Greene, he writes: "I shall remain but a few days here, and shall proceed to Philadelphia, when I shall attempt to stimulate Congress to the best improvement of our late success, by taking the most vigorous and effectual measures to be ready for an early and decisive campaign the next year. My greatest fear is, that Congress, viewing this stroke in too important a point of light, may think our work too nearly closed, and will fall into

a state of languor and relaxation. To prevent this error, I shall employ every means in my power, and if, unhappily, we sink into that fatal mistake, no part of the blame shall be mine."

In a letter written at the same time to Lafayette, who, having obtained from Congress an indefinite leave of absence, was about to sail, he says: "I owe it to your friendship and to my affectionate regard for you, my dear marquis, not to let you leave this country, without carrying with you fresh marks of my attachment to you, and new expressions of the high sense I entertain of your military conduct, and other important services in the course of the last campaign." In reply to inquiries which the marquis had made respecting the operations of the coming year, he declares that everything must depend absolutely for success upon the naval force to be employed in these seas and the time of its appearance. "No land force," writes he, "can act decisively unless it is accompanied by a maritime superiority; nor can more than negative advantages be expected without it. For proof of this we have only to recur to the instances of the ease and facility with which the British shifted their ground, as advantages were to be obtained at either extremity of the continent, and to their late heavy loss the moment they failed in their naval superiority. * * * * A doubt did not exist, nor does it at this moment, in any man's mind, of the total extirpation of the British force in the Carolinas and Georgia, if the Count de Grasse could have extended his co-operation two months longer."

We may add here that Congress, after resolutions highly complimentary to the marquis, had, through the secretary of foreign affairs, recommended to the ministers plenipotentiary of the United States, resident in Europe, to confer with the marquis, and avail themselves of his information relative to the situation of national affairs, which information the various heads of departments were instructed to furnish him; and he was furthermore made the bearer of a letter to his sovereign, recommending him in the strongest terms to the royal consideration. Much was anticipated from the generous zeal of Lafayette, and the influence he would be able to exercise in France in favor of the American cause.

Towards the end of November, Washington was in Philadelphia, where Congress received him with distinguished honors. He lost no time in enforcing the policy respecting the ensuing campaign, which he had set forth in his letters to General Greene and the marquis. His views were met by the military committee of Congress, with which he was in frequent con-

sultation, and by the secretaries of war, finance, and public affairs, who attended their conferences. Under his impulse and personal supervision, the military arrangements for 1782 were made with unusual despatch. On the 10th of December resolutions were passed in Congress for requisitions of men and money from the several States; and Washington backed those requisitions by letters to the respective governors, urging prompt compliance. Strenuous exertions, too, were made by Dr. Franklin, then minister in France, to secure a continuance of efficient aid from that power; and a loan of six millions had been promised by the king after hearing of the capitulation of Yorktown.

The persuasion that peace was at hand was, however, too prevalent for the public to be roused to new sacrifices and toils to maintain what was considered the mere shadow of a war. The States were slow in furnishing a small part of their respective quotas of troops, and still slower in answering to the requisitions for money.

After remaining four months in Philadelphia, Washington set out in March to join the army at Newburg on the Hudson. He was at Morristown in the Jerseys on the 28th, when a bold project was submitted to him by Colonel Matthias Ogden, of the Jersey line. Prince William Henry,* son of the king of England, who was serving as a midshipman in the fleet of Admiral Digby, was at that time in New York with the admiral, an object of great attention to the army, and the tory part of the inhabitants. The object of Colonel Ogden was to surprise the prince and the admiral at their quarters in the city, and bring them off prisoners. He was to be aided in the enterprise by a captain, a subaltern, three sergeants, and thirty-six men. They were to embark from the Jersey shore on a rainy night in four whaleboats, well manned, and rowed with muffled oars, and were to land in New York at half-past nine, at a wharf not far from the quarters of the prince and admiral, which were in Hanover Square. Part of the men were to guard the boats, while Colonel Ogden with a strong party was to proceed to the house, force the doors if necessary, and capture the prince and admiral. In returning to the boats, part of the men, armed with guns and bayonets, were to precede the prisoners, and part to follow at half a gunshot distance, to give front to the enemy until all were embarked.

The plan was approved by Washington, but Colonel Ogden was charged to be careful that no insult or indignity be offered

* Afterwards William IV.

to the prince or admiral, should they be captured. They were, on the contrary, to be treated with all possible respect, and conveyed without delay to Congress.

How far an attempt was made to carry this plan into operation, is not known. An exaggerated alarm seems to have been awakened by extravagant reports circulated in New York, as appears by the following citation from a paper or letter dated April 23d, and transmitted by Washington to Ogden:

"Great seem to be their apprehensions here. About a fortnight ago a number of flat-boats were discovered by a sentinel from the bank of the river (Hudson), which are said to have been intended to fire the suburbs, and in the height of the conflagration to make a descent on the lower part of the city, and wrest from our embraces his Excellency Sir Henry Clinton, Prince William Henry, and several other illustrious personages—since which, great precautions have been taken for the security of those gentlemen, by augmenting the guards, and to render their persons as little exposed as possible."

These precautions very probably disconcerted the project of Colonel Ogden, of which, we find no other traces.

In a recent letter to General Greene, Washington had expressed himself strongly on the subject of retaliation. "Of all laws it is the most difficult to execute, where you have not the transgressor himself in your possession. Humanity will ever interfere, and plead strongly against the sacrifice of an innocent person for the guilt of another."

It was but three or four months after this writing, that his judgment and feelings were put to the proof in this respect. We have had occasion to notice the marauds of the New York refugees in the Jerseys. One of their number by the name of Philip White had been captured by the Jersey people, and killed in attempting to escape from those who were conducting him to Monmouth jail. His partisans in New York determined on a signal revenge. Captain Joseph Huddy, an ardent whig, who had been captured when bravely defending a block-house in Monmouth County, and carried captive to New York, was now drawn forth from prison, conducted into the Jerseys by a party of refugees, headed by a Captain Lippencott, and hanged on the heights of Middletown with a label affixed to his breast, bearing the inscription, "Up goes Huddy for Philip White."

The neighboring country cried out for retaliation. Washington submitted the matter, with all the evidence furnished, to a board of general and field-officers. It was unanimously determined that the offender should be demanded for execu-

tion, and, if not given up, that retaliation should be exercised on a British prisoner of equal rank. Washington accordingly sent proofs to Sir Henry Clinton of what he stigmatized as a murder, and demanded that Captain Lippencott, or the officer who commanded the execution of Captain Huddy, should be given up; or if that officer should be inferior in rank, so many of the perpetrators as would, according to the tariff of exchange, be an equivalent. "To do this," said he, "will mark the justice of your Excellency's character. In failure of it, I shall hold myself justifiable in the eyes of God and man, for the measure to which I will resort."

Sir Henry declined a compliance, but stated that he had ordered a strict inquiry into the circumstances of Captain Huddy's death, and would bring the perpetrators of it to immediate trial.

Washington about the same time received the copy of a resolution of Congress approving of his firm and judicious conduct, in his application to the British general at New York, and promising to support him "in his fixed purpose of exemplary retaliation."

He accordingly ordered a selection to be made by lot, for the above purpose, from among the British officers, prisoners at Lancaster in Pennsylvania. To enhance the painful nature of the case, the lot fell upon Captain Charles Asgill, of the guards, a youth only nineteen years of age, of an amiable character and high hopes and expectations, being only son and heir of Sir Charles Asgill, a wealthy baronet.

The youth bore his lot with firmness, but his fellow-prisoners were incensed at Sir Henry Clinton for exposing him to such a fate by refusing to deliver up the culprit. One of their number, a son of the Earl of Ludlow, solicited permission from Washington to proceed to New York and lay the case before Sir Guy Carleton, who had succeeded in command to Sir Henry Clinton. In granting it, Washington intimated that, though deeply affected by the unhappy fate to which Captain Asgill was subjected, and devoutly wishing that his life might be spared, there was but one alternative that could save him, of which the British commander must be aware.

The matter remained for some time in suspense. Washington had ordered that Captain Asgill should be treated "with every tender attention and politeness (consistent with his present situation), which his rank, fortune and connections, together with his unfortunate state, demanded," and the captain himself acknowledged in writing the feeling and attentive manner in which those commands were executed.

But on the question of retaliation Washington remained firm.

Lippencott was at length tried by a court-martial, but, after a long sitting, acquitted, it appearing that he had acted under the verbal orders of Governor Franklin, president of the board of associated loyalists. The British commander reprobated the death of Captain Huddy, and broke up the board.

These circumstances changed in some degree the ground upon which Washington was proceeding. He laid the whole matter before Congress, admitted Captain Asgill on parole at Morristown, and subsequently intimated to the secretary of war his private opinion in favor of his release, with permission to go to his friends in Europe.

In the meantime Lady Asgill, the mother of the youth, had written a pathetic letter to the Count de Vergennes, the French minister of state, imploring his intercession in behalf of her son. The letter was shown to the king and queen, and by their direction the count wrote to Washington soliciting the liberation of Asgill. Washington, as has been shown, had already suggested his release, and was annoyed at the delay of Congress in the matter. He now referred to that body the communication from the count, and urged a favorable decision. To his great relief, he received their directions to set Captain Asgill at liberty.

This, like the case of the unfortunate André, was one of the painful and trying predicaments in which a strict sense of public duty obliged Washington to do violence to his natural impulses, and he declares in one of his letters, that the situation of Captain Asgill often filled him with the keenest anguish. "I felt for him on many accounts; and not the least when, viewing him as a man of honor and sentiment, I considered how unfortunate it was for him that a wretch who possessed neither, should be the means of causing him a single pang or a disagreeable sensation."

NOTE.

While these pages are going through the press, we have before us an instance of that conscientious regard for justice which governed Washington's conduct.

A favorite aide-de-camp, Colonel Samuel B. Webb, who had been wounded in the battles of Bunker's Hill and White Plains, was captured in December 1777, when commanding a Connecticut regiment, and accompanying General Parsons in a descent upon Long Island. He was then but 24 years of age, and the youngest colonel in the army. Presuming upon the favor of General Washington, who had pronounced him one of the most accomplished gentlemen in the service, he wrote to him, reporting his capture, and begging most strenuously for an im-

mediate exchange. He received a prompt, but disappointing reply. Washington lamented his unfortunate condition. "It would give me pleasure," said he, "to render you any services in my power, but it is impossible for me to comply with your request, without violating the principles of justice, and incurring a charge of partiality."

In fact, several officers of Colonel Webb's rank had been a long time in durance, and it was a rule with Washington that those first captured should be first released. To this rule he inflexibly adhered, however his feelings might plead for its infringement. Colonel Webb, in consequence, was not exchanged until the present year; when Washington, still on principles of justice, gave him the brevet rank of Brigadier-general and the command of the light infantry.

CHAPTER V.

Washington Continues His Precautions—Sir Guy Carleton Brings Pacific News—Discontents of the Army—Extraordinary Letter from Colonel Nicola—Indignant Reply of Washington—Joint Letters of Sir Guy Carleton and Admiral Digby—Junction of the Allied Armies on the Hudson—Contemplated Reduction of the Army.

In disposing of the case of Captain Asgill, we have anticipated dates, and must revert to the time when Washington again established his head-quarters at Newburg on the Hudson. The solicitude felt by him on account of the universal relaxation of the sinews of war, was not allayed by reports of pacific speeches, and motions made in the British parliament, which might be delusive. "Even if the nation and parliament," said he, "are really in earnest to obtain peace with America, it will, undoubtedly, be wisdom in us to meet them with great caution and circumspection, and by all means to keep our arms firm in our hands; and instead of relaxing one iota in our exertions, rather to spring forward with redoubled vigor, that we may take the advantage of every favorable apportunity, until our wishes are fully obtained. No nation ever yet suffered in treaty by preparing, even in the moment of negotiation, most vigorously for the field."

Sir Guy Carleton arrived in New York early in May to take the place of Sir Henry Clinton, who had solicited his recall. In a letter dated May 7th, Sir Guy informed Washington of his being joined with Admiral Digby in the commission of peace; he transmitted at the same time printed copies of the proceedings in the House of Commons on the 4th of March respecting an address to the king in favor of peace; and of a

bill reported in consequence thereof, authorizing the king to conclude a peace or truce with the revolted provinces of North America. As this bill, however, had not passed into a law when Sir Guy left England, it presented no basis for a negotiation; and was only cited by him to show the pacific disposition of the British nation, with which he professed the most zealous concurrence. Still, though multiplied circumstances gradually persuaded Washington of a real disposition on the part of Great Britain to terminate the war, he did not think fit to relax his preparations for hostilities.

Great discontents prevailed at this time in the army, both among officers and men. The neglect of the States to furnish their proportions of the sum voted by Congress for the prosecution of the war, had left the army almost destitute. There was scarce money sufficient to feed the troops from day to day; indeed, there were days when they were absolutely in want of provisions. The pay of the officers, too, was greatly in arrear; many of them doubted whether they would ever receive the half-pay decreed to them by Congress for a term of years after the conclusion of the war, and fears began to be expressed that, in the event of peace, they would all be disbanded with their claims unliquidated, and themselves cast upon the community penniless, and unfitted, by long military habitudes, for the gainful pursuits of peace.

At this juncture, Washington received an extraordinary letter from Colonel Lewis Nicola, a veteran officer, once commandant of Fort Mifflin, who had been in habits of intimacy with him, and had warmly interceded in behalf of the suffering army. In this letter he attributed all the ills experienced and anticipated by the army and the public at large, to the existing form of government. He condemned a republican form as incompatible with national prosperity, and advised a mixed government like that of England; which, he had no doubt, on its benefits being properly pointed out, would be readily adopted. "In that case," he adds, "it will, I believe, be uncontroverted, that the same abilities which have led us through difficulties apparently insurmountable by human power, to victory and glory; those qualities that have merited and obtained the universal esteem and veneration of an army, would be most likely to conduct and direct us in the smoother paths of peace. Some people have so connected the idea of tyranny and monarchy, as to find it very difficult to separate them. It may, therefore, be requisite to give the head of such a constitution as I propose, some title apparently more moderate; but, if all other things were once adjusted, I believe strong

arguments might be produced for admitting the title of KING, which, I conceive, would be attended with some material advantages."

Washington saw at once that Nicola was but the organ of a military faction, disposed to make the army the basis of an energetic government, and to place him at the head The suggestion, backed by the opportunity, might have tempted a man of meaner ambition: from him it drew the following indignant letter:

"With a mixture of great surprise and astonishment, I have read with attention the sentiments you have submitted to my perusal. Be assured, sir, no occurrence in the course of the war has given me more painful sensations, than your information of there being such ideas existing in the army, as you have expressed, and I must view with abhorrence, and reprehend with severity. For the present, the communication of them will rest in my own bosom, unless some further agitation of the matter shall make a disclosure necessary.

"I am much at a loss to conceive what part of my conduct could have given encouragement to an address, which to me seems big with the greatest mischiefs that can befall my country. If I am not deceived in the knowledge of myself, you could not have found a person to whom your schemes are more disagreeable. At the same time, in justice to my own feelings, I must add, that no man possesses a more sincere wish to see ample justice done to the army than I do; and as far as my powers and influence, in a constitutional way, extend, they shall be employed to the utmost of my abilities to effect it, should there be any occasion. Let me conjure you, then, if you have any regard for your country, concern for yourself, or posterity, or respect for me, to banish these thoughts from your mind, and never communicate, as from yourself or any one else, a sentiment of the like nature."

On the 2d of August, Sir Guy Carleton and Admiral Digby wrote a joint letter to Washington, informing him that they were acquainted, by authority, that negotiations for a general peace had already been commenced at Paris, and that the independence of the United States would be proposed in the first instance by the British commissioner, instead of being made a condition of a general treaty.

Even yet, Washington was wary. "From the former infatuation, duplicity, and perverse system of British policy," said he, "I confess I am induced to doubt everything; to suspect everything." * * * "Whatever the real intention of the enemy may be, I think the strictest attention and ex-

ertion, which have ever been exercised on our part, instead of being diminished, ought to be increased. Jealousy and precaution at least can do no harm. Too much confidence and supineness may be pernicious in the extreme."

What gave force to this policy was, that as yet no offers had been made on the part of Great Britain, for a general cessation of hostilities, and, although the British commanders were in a manner tied down by the resolves of the House of Commons, to a defensive war, only in the United States, they might be at liberty to transport part of their force to the West Indies, to act against the French possessions in that quarter. With these considerations he wrote to the Count de Rochambeau, then at Baltimore, advising him, for the good of the common cause, to march his troops to the banks of the Hudson, and form a junction with the American army.

The junction took place about the middle of September. The French army crossed the Hudson at King's Ferry to Verplanck's point, where the American forces were paraded under arms to welcome them. The clothing and arms recently received from France or captured at Yorktown, enabled them to make an unusually respectable appearance. Two lines were formed from the landing-place to head-quarters, between which Count Rochambeau passed, escorted by a troop of cavalry; after which he took his station beside General Washington: the music struck up a French march, and the whole army passed in review before them.

The French army encamped on the left of the American, near Crompond, about ten miles from Verplanck's Point. The greatest good will continued to prevail between the allied forces, though the Americans had but little means of showing hospitality to their gay Gallic friends. "Only conceive the mortification they must suffer, even the general officers," says Washington in a letter to the secretary of war, "when they cannot invite a French officer, a visiting friend, or a traveling acquaintance, to a better repast than whiskey hot from the still, and not always that, and a bit of beef without vegetables will afford them."

Speaking of a contemplated reduction of the army to take place on the 1st of January: "While I premise," said he, "that no one I have seen or heard of appears opposed to the principle of reducing the army as circumstances may require; yet I cannot help fearing the result of the measure in contemplation, under present circumstances, when I see such a number of men, goaded by a thousand stings of reflection on the past, and of anticipation on the future, about to be turned

into the world, soured by penury, and what they call the ingratitude of the public, involved in debts, without one farthing of money to carry them home, and after having spent the flower of their days, and many of them their patrimonies, in establishing the freedom and independence of their country, and suffered everything that human nature is capable of enduring on this side of death:—I repeat it, that when I consider the irritating circumstances, without one thing to soothe their feelings or dispel the gloomy prospects, I cannot avoid apprehending that a train of evils will follow, of a very serious and distressing nature. * * * *

"I wish not to heighten the shades of the picture so far as the reality would justify me in doing it. I could give anecdotes of patriotism and distress, which have scarcely ever been paralleled, never surpassed in the history of mankind. But you may rely upon it, the patience and long suffering of this army are almost exhausted, and that there never was so great a spirit of discontent as at this instant. While in the field, I think it may be kept from breaking out into acts of outrage; but when we retire into winter-quarters, unless the storm is previously dissipated, I cannot be at ease respecting the consequences. It is high time for a peace.

CHAPTER VI.

Discontents of the Army at Newburg—Memorial of the Officers to Congress—Anonymous Papers Circulated in the Camp—Meeting of Officers Called—Address of Washington—Resolutions in Consequence—Letters of Washington to the President—His Opinion of the Anonymous Addresses and their Author.

The anxious fears of Washington in regard to what might take place on the approaching reduction of the army, were in some degree realized. After the meeting with the French army at Verplanck's Point, he had drawn up his forces to his former encampment at Newburg, where he established his head-quarters for the winter. In the leisure and idleness of a winter camp, the discontents of the army had time to ferment. The arrearages of pay became a topic of constant and angry comment, as well as the question, whether the resolution of Congress, granting half pay to officers who should serve to the end of the war, would be carried into effect. Whence

were the funds to arise for such half pay? The national treasury was empty; the States were slow to tax themselves; the resource of foreign loans was nearly exhausted. The articles of confederation required the concurrence of nine States to any act appropriating public money. There had never been nine States in favor of the half pay establishment; was it probable that as many would occur in applying any scanty funds that might accrue, and which would be imperiously demanded for many other purposes, to the payment of claims known to be unpopular, and to the support of men, who, the necessity for their services being at an end, might be regarded as drones in the community?

The result of those boding conferences was a memorial to Congress in December, from the officers in camp, on behalf of the army, representing the hardships of the case, and proposing that a specific sum should be granted them for the money actually due, and as a commutation for half pay. Three officers were deputed to present the memorial to Congress, and watch over and promote its success.

The memorial gave rise to animated and long discussions in Congress. Some members were for admitting the claims as founded on engagements entered into by the nations; others were for referring them to the respective States of the claimants. The winter passed away without any definite measures on the subject.

On the 10th of March, 1783, an anonymous paper was circulated through the camp, calling a meeting at eleven o'clock the next day, of the general and field-officers, of an officer from each company, and a delegate from the medical staff, to consider a letter just received from their representatives in Philadelphia, and what measures, if any, should be adopted to obtain that redress of grievances which they seemed to have solicited in vain.

On the following morning an anonymous address to the officers of the army was privately put into circulation. It professed to be from a fellow-soldier, who had shared in their toils and mingled in their dangers, and who till very lately had believed in the justice of his country.

"After a pursuit of seven long years," observed he, "the object for which we set out is at length brought within our reach. Yes, my friends, that suffering courage of yours was active once; it has conducted the United States of America through a doubtful and bloody war; it has placed her in the chair of independency, and peace returns to bless—whom? a country willing to redress your wrongs, cherish your worth,

4418 ...ess-McKee College Library

and reward your services? a country courting your return to private life, with tears of gratitude and smiles of admiration, longing to divide with you that independency which your gallantry has given, and those riches which your wounds have preserved? Is this the case? or is it rather a country that tramples upon your rights, disdains your cries, and insults your distress? Have you not more than once suggested your wishes, and made known your wants to Congress—wants and wishes, which gratitude and policy should have anticipated, rather than evaded? And have you not lately, in the meek language of entreated memorials, begged from their justice what you could no longer expect from their favor? How have you been answered? Let the letter, which you are called to consider to-morrow, make reply.

"If this, then, be your treatment, while the swords you wear are necessary for the defence of America, what have you to expect from peace, when your voice shall sink, and your strength dissipate by division; when those very swords, the instruments and companions of your glory, shall be taken from your sides, and no remaining mark of military distinction left but your wants, infirmities, and scars? Can you then consent to be the only sufferers by this Revolution, and, retiring from the field, grow old in poverty, wretchedness and contempt? Can you consent to wade through the vile mire of dependency, and owe the miserable remnant of that life to charity, which has hitherto been spent in honor? If you can, go and carry with you the jest of Tories, and the scorn of Whigs; the ridicule, and what is worse, the pity of the world! Go, starve and be forgotten! But if your spirits should revolt at this; if you have sense enough to discover, and spirits sufficient to oppose tyranny, under whatever garb it may assume, whether it be the plain coat of republicanism, or the splendid robe of royalty; if you have yet learned to discriminate between a people and cause, between men and principles; awake, attend to your situation, and redress yourselves! If the present moment be lost, every future effort is in vain; and your threats then will be as empty as your entreaties now.

"I would advise you, therefore, to come to some final opinion upon what you can bear, and what you will suffer. If your determination be in any proportion to your wrongs, carry your appeals from the justice to the fears of government. Change the milk-and-water style of your last memorial. Assume a bolder tone, decent, but lively, spirited and determined; and suspect the man, who would advise to more moderation and longer forbearance. Let two or three men, who can feel

as well as write, be appointed to draw up your *last remonstrance*, for I would no longer give it the suing, soft, unsuccessful epithet of *memorial*. Let it represent in language, that will neither dishonor you by its rudeness, nor betray you by its fears, what has been promised by Congress, and what has been performed; how long and how patiently you have suffered; how little you have asked, and how much of that little has been denied. Tell them, that, though you were the first, and would wish to be the last, to encounter danger, though despair itself can never drive you into dishonor, it may drive you from the field; that the wound, often irritated and never healed, may at length become incurable; and that the slightest mark of indignity from Congress now, must operate like the grave, and part you forever; that, in any political event, the army has its alternative. If peace, that nothing shall separate you from your arms but death; if war, that courting the auspices, and inviting the direction of your illustrious leader, you will retire to some unsettled country, smile in your turn, and 'mock when their fear cometh on.' But let it represent, also that should they comply with the request of your late memorial, it would make you more happy and them more respectable; that while war should continue, you would follow their standard into the field; and when it came to an end, you would withdraw into the shade of private life, and give the world another subject of wonder and applause; an army victorious over its enemy, victorious over itself.

This bold and eloquent, but dangerous appeal, founded as it was upon the wrongs and sufferings of a gallant army and the shameful want of sympathy in tardy legislators, called for the full exercise of Washington's characteristic firmness, caution and discrimination. In general orders he noticed the anonymous paper, but expressed his confidence that the good sense of officers would prevent them from paying attention to such an irregular invitation; which he reprobated as disorderly. With a view to counteract its effects, he requested a like meeting of officers on the 15th instant, to hear the report of the committee deputed to Congress. "After mature deliberation," added he, "they will devise what further measures ought to be adopted as most rational and best calculated to obtain the just and important object in view."

On the following day another anonymous address was circulated, written in a more moderate tone, but to the same purport with the first, and affecting to construe the general orders into an approbation of the object sought; only changing the day appointed for the meeting. "Till now," it observed, "the

commander-in-chief has regarded the steps you have taken for redress with good wishes alone; his ostensible silence has authorized your meetings, and his private opinion sanctified your claims. Had he disliked the object in view, would not the same sense of duty which forbade you from meeting on the third day of the week, have forbidden you from meeting on the seventh? Is not the same subject held up to your view? and has it not passed the seal of office, and taken all the solemnity of an order? This will give system to your proceedings, and stability to your resolves." Etc. etc.

On Saturday, the 15th of March, the meeting took place. Washington had previously sent for the officers, one by one, in private, and enlarged on the loss of character to the whole army, that would result from intemperate resolutions. At the meeting, General Gates was called to the chair. Washington rose and apologized for appearing there, which he had not intended to do when he issued the order directing the assemblage. The diligence, however, which had been used in circulating anonymous writings, rendered it necessary he should give his sentiments to the army, on the nature and tendency of them. He had taken this opportunity to do so, and had committed his thoughts to writing, which, with the indulgence of his brother officers, he would take the liberty of reading to them.

He then proceeded to read a forcible and feeling address, pointing out the irregularity and impropriety of the recent anonymous summons, and the dangerous nature of the anonymous address; a production, as he observed, addressed more to the feelings and passions than to the judgment; drawn with great art, calculated to impress the mind with an idea of premeditated injustice in the sovereign power of the United States, and to rouse all those resentments which must unavoidably flow from such a belief.

On these principles he had opposed the irregular and hasty meeting appointed in the anonymous summons, not from a disinclination to afford officers every opportunity, consistent with their own honor and dignity of the army, to make known their grievances. "If any conduct heretofore," said he, "has not evinced to you, that I have been a faithful friend to the army, my declaration of it at this time would be equally unavailing and improper. But as I was among the first who embarked in the cause of our common country; as I have never left your side one moment, but when called from you on public duty; as I have been the constant companion and witness of your distresses, and not among the last to feel and

acknowledge your merits; as I have ever considered my own military reputation as inseparably connected with that of the army; as my heart has ever expanded with joy when I have heard its praises, and my indignation has arisen when the mouth of detraction has been opened against it; it can scarcely be supposed at this last stage of the war that I am indifferent to its interests." * * * * * *

"For myself," observes he, in another part of his address, "a recollection of the cheerful assistance and prompt obedience I have experienced from you under every vicissitude of fortune, and the sincere affection I feel for an army I have so long had the honor to command, will oblige me to declare in this public and solemn manner, that for the attainment of complete justice for all your toils and dangers, and the gratification of every wish, so far as may be done consistently with the great duty I owe my country and those powers we are bound to respect, you may fully command my services to the utmost extent of my abilities.

"While I give you these assurances, and pledge myself in the most unequivocal manner to exert whatever abilities I am possessed of in your favor, let me entreat you, gentlemen, on your part, not to take any measures which, viewed in the calm light of reason, will lessen the dignity and sully the glory you have hitherto maintained;—let me request you to rely on the plighted faith of your country, and place a full confidence in the purity of the intentions of Congress; that, previous to your dissolution as an army, they will cause all your accounts to be fairly liquidated, as directed in the resolutions which were published to you two days ago; and that they will adopt the most effectual measures in their power to render ample justice to you for your faithful and meritorious services. And let me conjure you, in the name of our common country, as you value your own sacred honor, as you respect the rights of humanity, and as you regard the military and national character of America, to express your utmost horror and detestation of the man who wishes, under specious pretences, to overturn the liberties of our country; and who wickedly attempts to open the flood-gates of civil discord, and deluge our rising empire in blood. By thus determining and thus acting, you will pursue the plain and direct road to the attainment of your wishes; you will defeat the insidious designs of our enemies, who are compelled to resort from open force to secret artifice; you will give one more distinguished proof of unexampled patriotism and patient virtue, rising superior to the pressure of the most complicated sufferings; and you will, by the

dignity of your conduct, afford occasion for posterity to say, when speaking of the glorious example you have exhibited to mankind;—'Had this day been wanting, the world had never seen the last stage of perfection to which human nature is capable of attaining.'"

After he had concluded the address, he observed, that as a corroborating testimony of the good disposition in Congress towards the army, he would communicate to them a letter received from a worthy member of that body, who on all occasions had approved himself their fast friend. He produced an able letter from the Hon. Joseph Jones, which, while it pointed out the difficulties and embarrassments of Congress, held up very forcibly the idea that the army would, at all events, be generously dealt with.

Major Shaw, who was present, and from whose memoir we note this scene, relates that Washington, after reading the first paragraph of the letter, made a short pause, took out his spectacles, and begged the indulgence of his audience while he put them on, observing at the same time that *he had grown gray in their service, and now found himself growing blind.* "There was something," adds Shaw, "so natural, so unaffected, in this appeal, as rendered it superior to the most studied oratory; it forced its way to the heart. and you might see sensibility moisten every eye."

"Happy for America," continues Major Shaw, "that she has a patriot army, and equally so that Washington is its leader. I rejoice in the opportunity I have had of seeing this great man in a variety of situations;—calm and intrepid when the battle raged; patient and persevering under the pressure of misfortune, moderate and possessing himself in the full career of victory. Great as these qualifications deservedly render him, he never appeared to me more truly so than at the assembly we have been speaking of. On other occasions he has been supported by the exertions of an army and the countenance of his friends; but on this he stood single and alone. There was no saying where the passions of an army which were not a little inflamed, might lead; but it was generally allowed that further forbearance was dangerous, and moderation had ceased to be a virtue. Under these circumstances he appeared, not at the head of his troops, but, as it were, in opposition to them; and for a dreadful moment the interests of the army and its general seemed to be in competition! He spoke,—every doubt was dispelled, and the tide of patriotism rolled again in its wonted course. Illustrious man! What he says of the army may with equal justice

he applied to his own character:—'Had this day been wanting, the world had never seen the last stage of perfection to which human nature is capable of attaining.'" *

The moment Washington retired from the assemblage, a resolution was moved by the warm-hearted Knox, seconded by General Putnam, and passed unanimously, assuring him that the officers reciprocated his affectionate expressions with the greatest sincerity of which the human heart is capable. Then followed resolutions, declaring that no circumstances of distress or danger should induce a conduct calculated to sully the reputation and glory acquired at the price of their blood and eight years' faithful services; that they continued to have an unshaken confidence in the justice of Congress and their country; and that the commander-in-chief should be requested to write to the President of Congress, earnestly entreating a speedy decision on the late address forwarded by a committee of the army.

A letter was accordingly written by Washington, breathing that generous, yet well-tempered spirit, with which he ever pleaded the cause of the army.

"The result of the proceedings of the grand convention of officers," said he, "which I have the honor of enclosing to your Excellency for the inspection of Congress, will, I flatter myself, be considered as the last glorious proof of patriotism which could have been given by men who aspired to the distinction of a patriot army, and will not only confirm their claim to the justice, but will increase their title to the gratitude, of their country.

"Having seen the proceedings on the part of the army terminate with perfect unanimity, and in a manner entirely consonant to my wishes; being impressed with the liveliest sentiments of affection for those who have so long, so patiently, and so cheerfully suffered and fought under my immediate direction; having, from motives of justice, duty and gratitude, spontaneously offered myself as an advocate for their rights; and having been requested to write to your Excellency, earnestly entreating the most speedy decision of Congress upon the subjects of the late address from the army to that honorable body; it only remains for me to perform the task I have assumed, and to intercede on their behalf, as I now do, that the sovereign power will be pleased to verify the predictions I have pronounced, and the confidence the army have reposed in the justice of their country."

* Quincy's Memoir of Major Shaw, p. 104.

After referring to former representations made by him to Congress, on the subject of a half pay to be granted to officers for life, he adds: "If, besides the simple payment of their wages, a further compensation is not due to the sufferings and sacrifices of the officers, then have I been mistaken indeed. If the whole army have not merited whatever a grateful people can bestow, then have I been beguiled by prejudice and built opinion on the basis of error. If this country should not, in the event, perform everything which has been requested in the late memorial to Congress, then will my belief become vain, and the hope that has been excited, void of foundation. And if, as has been suggested for the purpose of inflaming their passions, 'the officers of the army are to be the only sufferers by the Revolution; if, retiring from the field, they are to grow old in poverty, wretchedness, and contempt; if they are to wade through the vile mire of dependency, and owe the miserable remnant of that life to charity, which has hitherto been spent in honor;' then shall I have learned what ingratitude is, than shall I have realized a tale which will embitter every moment of my future life. But I am under no such apprehensions. A country, rescued by their arms from impending ruin, will never leave unpaid the debt of gratitude."

This letter to the President was accompanied by other letters to members of Congress; all making similar direct and eloquent appeals. The subject was again taken up in Congress, nine States concurred in a resolution commuting the half pay into a sum equal to five years' whole pay; and the whole matter, at one moment so fraught with danger to the republic, through the temperate wisdom of Washington, was happily adjusted.

The anonymous addresses to the army, which were considered at the time so insidious and inflammatory, and which certainly were ill-judged and dangerous, have since been avowed by General John Armstrong, a man who has sustained with great credit to himself various eminent posts under our government. At the time of writing them he was a young man, aide-de-camp to General Gates, and he did it at the request of a number of his fellow-officers, indignant at the neglect of their just claims by Congress, and in the belief that the tardy movements of that body required the spur and the lash. Washington, in a letter dated 23d January, 1797, says, "I have since had sufficient reason for believing that the object of the author was just, honorable, and friendly to the country, though the means suggested by him were certainly liable to much misunderstanding and abuse."

CHAPTER VII.

News of Peace—Letter of Washington in Behalf of the Army—Cessation of Hostilities Proclaimed—Order of the Cincinnati Formed—Letter of Washington to the State Governors—Mutiny in the Pennsylvania Line—Letter of Washington on the Subject—Tour to the Northern Posts.

At length arrived the wished-for news of peace. A general treaty had been signed at Paris on the 20th of January. An armed vessel, the Triumph, belonging to the Count d'Estaing's squadron, arrived at Philadelphia from Cadiz, on the 23d of March, bringing a letter from the Marquis de Lafayette, to the President of Congress, communicating the intelligence. In a few days Sir Guy Carleton informed Washington by letter, that he was ordered to proclaim a cessation of hostilities by sea and land.

A similar proclamation issued by Congress, was received by Washington on the 17th of April. Being unaccompanied by any instructions respecting the discharge of the part of the army with him, should the measure be deemed necessary, he found himself in a perplexing situation.

The accounts of peace received at different times, had raised an expectation in the minds of those of his troops that had engaged "for the war," that a speedy discharge must be the consequence of the proclamation. Most of them could not distinguish between a proclamation of a cessation of hostilities and a definitive declaration of peace, and might consider any further claim on their military services an act of injustice. It was becoming difficult to enforce the discipline necessary to the coherence of an army. Washington represented these circumstances in a letter to the president, and earnestly entreated a prompt determination on the part of Congress, as to what was to be the period of the services of these men, and how he was to act respecting their discharge.

One suggestion of his letter is expressive of his strong sympathy with the patriot soldier, and his knowledge of what formed a matter of pride with the poor fellows who had served and suffered under him. He urged that, in discharging those who had been engaged "for the war," the non-commissioned officers and soldiers should be allowed to take with them, as their own property, and as a gratuity, their arms and accoutre-

ments. "This act," observes he, "would raise pleasing sensations in the minds of these worthy and faithful men, who, from their early engaging in the war at moderate bounties, and from their patient continuance under innumerable distresses, have not only deserved nobly of their country, but have obtained an honorable distinction over those, who, with shorter terms, have gained large pecuniary rewards. This, at a comparatively small expense, would be deemed an honorable testimonial from Congress of the regard they bear to these distinguished worthies, and the sense they have of their suffering virtues and services. * * * * * *

"These constant companions of their toils, preserved with sacred attention, would be handed down from the present possessors to their children, as honorary badges of bravery and military merit; and would probably be brought forth on some future occasion, with pride and exultation, to be improved with the same military ardor and emulation in the hands of posterity, as they have been used by their forefathers in the present establishment and foundation of our national independence and glory."

This letter despatched, he notified in general orders that the cessation of hostilities should be proclaimed at noon on the following day, and read in the evening at the head of every regiment and corps of the army, "after which," adds he, "the chaplains with the several brigades will render thanks to Almighty God for all his mercies, particularly for his overruling the wrath of man to his own glory, and causing the rage of war to cease among the nations."

Having noticed that this auspicious day, the 19th of April, completed the eighth year of the war, and was the anniversary of the eventful conflict at Lexington, he went on in general orders, to impress upon the army a proper idea of the dignified part they were called upon to act.

"The generous task for which we first flew to arms being accomplished; the liberties of our country being fully acknowledged, and firmly secured, and the characters of those who have persevered through every extremity of hardship, suffering, and danger, being immortalized by the illustrious appellation of *the patriot army*, nothing now remains, but for the actors of this mighty scene to preserve a perfect, unvarying consistency of character, through the very last act, to close the drama with applause, and to retire from the military theatre with the same approbation of angels and men which has crowned all their former virtuous actions."

The letter which he had written to the president produced

a resolution in Congress, that the service of the men engaged in the war did not expire until the ratification of the definitive articles of peace; but that the commander-in-chief might grant furloughs to such as he thought proper, and that they should be allowed to take their arms with them.

Washington availed himself freely of this permission: furloughs were granted without stint; the men set out singly or in small parties for their rustic homes, and the danger and inconvenience were avoided of disbanding large masses, at a time, of unpaid soldiery. Now and then were to be seen three or four in a group, bound probably to the same neighborhood, beguiling the way with camp jokes and camp stories. The war-worn soldier was always kindly received at the farmhouse along the road, where he might shoulder his gun and fight over his battles. The men thus dismissed on furlough were never called upon to rejoin the army. Once at home, they sank into domestic life; their weapons were hung up over their fire-places; military trophies of the Revolution to be prized by future generations.

In the mean time Sir Guy Carleton was making preparations for the evacuation of the City of New York. The moment he had received the royal order for the cessation of hostilities, he had written for all the shipping that could be procured from Europe and the West Indies. As early as the 27th of April a fleet had sailed for different parts of Nova Scotia, carrying off about seven thousand persons, with all their effects. A great part of these were troops, but many were royalists and refugees, exiled by the laws of the United States. They looked forward with a dreary eye to their voyage, "bound," as one of them said, "to a country where there were nine months of winter and three months of cold weather every year."

On the 6th of May a personal conference took place between Washington and Sir Guy at Orangetown, about the transfer of posts in the United States, held by the British troops, and the delivery of all property stipulated by the treaty to be given up to the Americans. On the 8th of May, Egbert Benson, William S. Smith, and Daniel Parker, were commissioned by Congress to inspect and superintend at New York the embarkation of persons and property, in fulfilment of the seventh article of the provisional treaty.

While sadness and despair prevailed among the tories and refugees in New York, the officers in the patriot camp on the Hudson were not without gloomy feelings at the thought of their approaching separation from each other. Eight years

of dangers and hardships, shared in common and nobly sustained, had welded their hearts together, and made it hard to rend them asunder. Prompted by such feelings, General Knox, ever noted for generous impulses, suggested, as a mode of perpetuating the friendships thus formed, and keeping alive the brotherhood of the camp, the formation of a society composed of the officers of the army. The suggestion met with universal concurrence, and the hearty approbation of Washington.

Meetings were held, at which the Baron Steuben, as senior officer, presided. A plan was drafted by a committee composed of Generals Knox, Hand, and Huntingdon, and Captain Shaw; and the society was organized at a meeting held on the 13th of May, at the baron's quarters in the old Verplanck House, near Fishkill.

By its formula, the officers of the American army in the most solemn manner combined themselves into one society of friends: to endure as long as they should endure, or any of their eldest male posterity, and in failure thereof, their collateral branches who might be judged worthy of being its supporters and members. In memory of the illustrious Roman, Lucius Quintius Cincinnatus, who retired from war to the peaceful duties of the citizen, it was to be called "The Society of the Cincinnati." The objects proposed by it were to preserve inviolate the rights and liberties for which they had contended; to promote and cherish national honor and union between the States; to maintain brotherly kindness towards each other, and extend relief to such officers and their families as might stand in need of it.

In order to obtain funds for the purpose, each officer was to contribute one month's pay, the interest only to be appropriated to the relief of the unfortunate. The general society, for the sake of frequent communications, was to be divided into State societies, and these again into districts. The general society was to meet annually on the first Monday in May, the State societies on each 4th of July, the districts as often as should be agreed on by the State society.

The society was to have an insignia called "The Order of the Cincinnati." It was to be a golden American eagle, bearing on its breast emblematical devices; this was to be suspended by a deep-blue ribbon two inches wide, edged with white; significative of the union of America with France.

Individuals of the respective States, distinguished for patriotism and talents, might be admitted as honorary members for life; their numbers never to exceed a ratio of one to four.

The French ministers who had officiated at Philadelphia, and the French admirals, generals, and colonels, who had served in the United States, were to be presented with the insignia of the order, and invited to become members.

Washington was chosen unanimously to officiate as president of it, until the first general meeting, to be held in May, 1784.

On the 8th of June, Washington addressed a letter to the governors of the several States on the subject of the dissolution of the army. The opinion of it breathes that aspiration after the serene quiet of private life, which had been his dream of happiness throughout the storms and trials of his anxious career, but the full fruition of which he was never to realize.

"The great object," said he, "for which I had the honor to hold an appointment in the service of my country being accomplished, I am now preparing to return to that domestic retirement which, it is well known, I left with the greatest reluctance; a retirement for which I have never ceased to sigh, through a long and painful absence, and in which (remote from the noise and trouble of the world) I meditate to pass the remainder of life in a state of undisturbed repose."

His letter then described the enviable condition of the citizens of America. "Sole lords and proprietors of a vast tract of continent, comprehending all the various soils and climates of the world, and abounding with all the necessaries and conveniences of life; and acknowledged possessors of 'absolute freedom and independence.'" "This is the time," said he, "of their political probation; this is the moment when the eyes of the whole world are turned upon them; this is the moment to establish or ruin their national character forever. This is the favorable moment to give such a tone to the federal government, as will enable it to answer the ends of its institution; or this may be the moment for relaxing the powers of the Union, annihilating the cement of the confederation, and exposing us to become the sport of European politics, which may play one State against another to prevent their growing importance, and to serve their own interested purposes.

"With this conviction of the importance of the present crisis, silence in me would be a crime. I will therefore speak the language of freedom and sincerity without disguise.

"I am aware, however," continues he, modestly, "that those who differ from me in political sentiment may perhaps remark, that I am stepping out of the proper line of my duty, and may possibly ascribe to arrogance or ostentation, what I

know is the result of the purest intention. But the rectitude of my own heart, which disdains such unworthy motives; the part I have hitherto acted in life; the determination I have formed of not taking any share in public business hereafter; the ardent desire I feel, and shall continue to manifest, of quietly enjoying, in private life, after all the toils of war, the benefits of a wise and liberal government; will, I flatter myself, sooner or later convince my countrymen that I could have no sinister views in delivering, with so little reserve, the opinions contained in this address."

He then proceeded ably and eloquently to discuss what he considered the four things essential to the well-being, and even the existence of the United States as an independent power.

First. An indissoluble union of the States under one federal head, and a perfect acquiescence of the several States, in the full exercise of the prerogative vested in such a head by the constitution.

Second. A sacred regard to public justice in discharging debts and fulfilling contracts made by Congress, for the purpose of carrying on the war.

Third. The adoption of a proper peace establishment in which care should be taken to place the militia throughout the Union on a regular, uniform and efficient footing. "The militia of this country," said he, "must be considered as the palladium of our security, and the first effectual resort in case of hostility. It is essential, therefore, that the same system should pervade the whole; that the formation and discipline of the militia of the continent should be absolutely uniform, and that the same species of arms, accoutrements and military apparatus should be introduced in every part of the United States."

And Fourth. A disposition among the people of the United States to forget local prejudices and policies; to make mutual concessions, and to sacrifice individual advantages to the interests of the community.

These four things Washington pronounced the pillars on which the glorious character must be supported. "Liberty is the basis; and whoever would dare to sap the foundation, or overturn the structure, under whatever specious pretext he may attempt it, will merit the bitterest execration and the severest punishment which can be inflicted by his injured country."

We forbear to go into the ample and admirable reasoning with which he expatiates on these heads, and above all, enforces the sacred inviolability of the Union; they have be-

come familiar with every American mind, and ought to govern every American heart. Nor will we dwell upon his touching appeal on the subject of the half pay and commutation promised to the army, and which began to be considered in the odious light of a pension. "That provision," said he, "should be viewed as it really was—a reasonable compensation offered by Congress, at a time when they had nothing else to give to the officers of the army for services then to be performed. It was the only means to prevent a total dereliction of the service. It was a part of their hire. I may be allowed to say it was the price of their blood and of your independency; it is therefore more than a common debt, it is a debt of honor."

Although we have touched upon but a part of this admirable letter, we cannot omit its affecting close, addressed as it was to each individual governor.

"I have thus freely declared what I wished to make known, before I surrendered up my public trust to those who committed it to me. The task is now accomplished. I now bid adieu to your Excellency, as the chief magistrate of your State, at the same time I bid a last farewell to the cares of office and all the employments of public life.

"It remains, then, to be my final and only request, that your Excellency will communicate these sentiments to your legislature at their next meeting, and that they may be considered the legacy of one, who has ardently wished, on all occasions, to be useful to his country, and who, even in the shade of retirement, will not fail to implore the divine benediction on it.

"I now make it my earnest prayer, that God would have you, and the State over which you preside, in his holy protection; that he would incline the hearts of the citizens to cultivate a spirit of subordination and obedience to government, to entertain a brotherly affection and love for one another, for their fellow-citizens of the United States at large, and particularly for brethren who have served in the field; and finally, that he would most graciously be pleased to dispose us all to do justice, to love mercy, and to demean ourselves with that charity, humility, and pacific temper of mind, which are the characteristics of the Divine Author of our blessed religion, and without whose example in those things we can never hope to be a happy nation."

While the patriot army, encamped under the eye of Washington, bore their hardships and privations without flinching, or returned quietly to their homes with, as yet, no actual reward but the weapons with which they had vindicated their country's cause; about eighty newly recruited soldiers of the

Pennsylvania line, stationed at Lancaster, suddenly mutinied and set off in a body for Philadelphia, to demand redress of fancied grievances from the legislature of the State. Arriving at the city, they were joined by about two hundred comrades from the barracks, and proceeded on the 2d of June with beat of drum and fixed bayonets to the State House, where Congress and the supreme executive council of Pennsylvania were in session.

Placing sentinels at every door to prevent egress, they sent in a written message to the president and council, threatening military violence if their demands were not complied with in the course of twenty minutes.

Though these menaces were directed against the State government, Congress felt itself outraged by being thus surrounded and blockaded for several hours by an armed soldiery. Fearing lest the State of Pennsylvania might not be able to furnish adequate protection, it adjourned to meet within a few days at Princeton; sending information, in the mean time, to Washington of this mutinous outbreak.

The latter immediately detached General Howe with fifteen hundred men to quell the mutiny and punish the offenders; at the same time, in a letter to the President of Congress, he expressed his indignation and distress at seeing a handful of men, "contemptible in numbers and equally so in point of service, and not worthy to be called soldiers," insulting the sovereign authority of the Union, and that of their own State. He vindicated the army at large, however, from the stain the behavior of these men might cast upon it. These were mere recruits, soldiers of a day, who had not borne the heat and burden of the war, and had in reality few hardships to complain of. He contrasted their conduct with that of the soldiers recently furloughed;—veterans, who had patiently endured hunger, nakedness, and cold; who had suffered and bled without a murmur, and who had retired, in perfect good order, to their homes, without a settlement of their accounts or a farthing of money in their pockets. While he gave vent to this indignation and scorn, roused by the "arrogance and folly and wickedness of the mutineers," he declared that he could not sufficiently admire the fidelity, bravery, and patriotism of the rest of the army.

Fortunately, before the troops under General Howe reached Philadelphia, the mutiny had been suppressed without bloodshed. Several of the mutineers were tried by a court-martial, two were condemned to death, but ultimately pardoned, and four received corporal punishment.

Washington now found his situation at head-quarters irksome; there was little to do, and he was liable to be incessantly teased with applications and demands, which he had neither the means nor power to satisfy. He resolved, therefore, to while away part of the time that must intervene before the arrival of the definite treaty, by making a tour to the northern and western parts of the State, and visiting the places which had been the theatre of important military transactions. He had another object in view; he desired to facilitate as far as in his power the operations which would be necessary for occupying, as soon as evacuated by British troops, the posts ceded by the treaty of peace.

Governor Clinton accompanied him on the expedition. They set out by water from Newburg, ascended the Hudson to Albany, visited Saratoga and the scene of Burgoyne's surrender, embarked on Lake George, where light boats had been provided for them, traversed that beautiful lake so full of historic interest, proceeded to Ticonderoga and Crown Point; and after reconnoitring those eventful posts, returned to Schenectady, whence they proceeded up the valley of the Mohawk River "to have a view," writes Washington, "of that tract of country which is so much celebrated for the fertility of its soil and the beauty of its situation." Having reached Fort Schuyler, formerly Fort Stanwix, they crossed over to Wood Creek, which empties into Oneida Lake, and affords the water communication with Ontario. They then traversed the country to the head of the eastern branch of the Susquehanna, and viewed Lake Otsego and the portage between that lake and the Mohawk River.

Washington returned to head-quarters at Newburg on the 5th of August, after a tour of at least seven hundred and fifty miles, performed in nineteen days, and for the most part on horseback. In a letter to the Chevalier de Chastellux, written two or three months afterwards, and giving a sketch of his tour through what was, as yet, an unstudied wilderness, he writes: "Prompted by these actual observations, I could not help taking a more extensive view of the vast inland navigation of these United States from maps and the information of others; and could not but be struck with the immense extent and importance of it, and with the goodness of that Providence which has dealt its favors to us with so profuse a hand; would to God, we may have wisdom enough to improve them. I shall not rest contented till I have explored the western country, and traversed those lines, or a great part of them, which have given bounds to a new empire."

The vast advantages of internal communication between the Hudson and the great lakes, which dawned upon Washington's mind in the course of his tour, have since been realized in that grand artery of national wealth, the Erie Canal.

CHAPTER VIII.

The Army to be Discharged—Parting Address of Washington—Evacuation of New York—Parting Scene of Washington with his Officers at New York—Washington Resigns his Commission to Congress—Retires to Mount Vernon.

By a proclamation of Congress, dated 18th of October, all officers and soldiers absent on furlough were discharged from further service; and all others who had engaged to serve during the war, were to be discharged from and after the 3d of November. A small force only, composed of those who had enlisted for a definite time, were to be retained in service until the peace establishment should be organized.

In general orders of November 2d, Washington, after adverting to this proclamation, adds: "It only remains for the commander-in-chief to address himself once more, and that for the last time, to the armies of the United States, however widely dispersed the individuals who compose them may be, and to bid them an affectionate and a long farewell."

He then goes on to make them one of those paternal addresses which so eminently characterize his relationship with his army, so different from that of any other commander. He takes a brief view of the glorious struggle from which they had just emerged; the unpromising circumstances under which they had undertaken it, and the signal interposition of Providence in behalf of their feeble condition; the unparalleled perseverance of the American armies for eight long years, through almost every possible suffering and discouragement; a perseverance which he justly pronounces to be little short of *a standing miracle.*

Adverting then to the enlarged prospects of happiness opened by the confirmation of national independence and sovereignty, and the ample and profitable employments held out in a Republic so happily circumstanced, he exhorts them to maintain the strongest attachment to THE UNION, and to carry with them into civil society the most conciliatory dispo-

sitions; proving themselves not less virtuous and useful as citizens, than they had been victorious as soldiers; feeling assured that the private virtues of economy, prudence, and industry would not be less amiable in civil life, than the more splendid qualities of valor, perseverance, and enterprise were in the field.

After a warm expression of thanks to the officers and men for the assistance he had received from every class, and in every instance, he adds:

"To the various branches of the army the General takes this last and solemn opportunity of professing his invariable attachment and friendship. He wishes more than bare professions were in his power; that he was really able to be useful to them all in future life. He flatters himself, however, they will do him the justice to believe, that whatever could with propriety be attempted by him has been done.

"And being now to conclude these his last public orders, to take his ultimate leave in a short time of the military character, and to bid a final adieu to the armies he has so long had the honor to command, he can only offer in their behalf his recommendations to their grateful country, and his prayers to the God of armies. May ample justice be done them here, and may the choicest of Heaven's favors, both here and hereafter, attend those who, under the Divine auspices, have secured innumerable blessings for others. With these wishes, and this benediction, the commander-in-chief is about to retire from service. The curtain of separation will soon be drawn, and the military scene to him will be closed forever."

There was a straightforward simplicity in Washington's addresses to his army; they were so void of tumid phrases or rhetorical embellishments; the counsels given in them were so sound and practicable; the feelings expressed in them so kind and benevolent; and so perfectly in accordance with his character and conduct, that they always had an irresistible effect on the rudest and roughest hearts.

A person who was present at the breaking up of the army, and whom we have had frequent occasion to cite, observes, on the conduct of the troops, "The advice of their beloved commander-in-chief, and the resolves of Congress to pay and compensate them in such manner as the ability of the United States would permit, operated to keep them quiet and prevent tumult, but no description would be adequate to the painful circumstances of the parting scene." "Both officers and soldiers, long unaccustomed to the affairs of private life, turned loose on the world to starve, and to become the prey

to vulture speculators. Never can that melancholy day be forgotten when friends, companions for seven long years in joy and in sorrow, were torn asunder without the hope of ever meeting again, and with prospects of a miserable subsistence in future." *

Notwithstanding every exertion had been made for the evacuation of New York, such was the number of persons and the quantity of effects of all kinds to be conveyed away, that the month of November was far advanced before it could be completed. Sir Guy Carleton had given notice to Washington of the time he supposed the different posts would be vacated, that the Americans might be prepared to take possession of them. In consequence of this notice, General George Clinton, at that time Governor of New York, had summoned the members of the State council to convene at East Chester on the 21st of November, for the purpose of establishing civil government in the districts hitherto occupied by the British; and a detachment of troops was marched from West Point to be ready to take possession of the posts as they were vacated.

On the 21st the British troops were drawn in from the oft-disputed post of King's Bridge and from M'Gowan's Pass, also from the various posts on the eastern part of Long Island. Paulus Hook was relinquished on the following day, and the afternoon of the 25th of November was appointed by Sir Guy for the evacuation of the city and the opposite village of Brooklyn.

Washington, in the mean time, had taken his station at Harlem, accompanied by Governor Clinton, who, in virtue of his office, was to take charge of the city. They found there General Knox with the detachment from West Point. Sir Guy Carleton had intimated a wish that Washington would be at hand to take immediate possession of the city, and prevent all outrage, as he had been informed of a plot to plunder the place whenever the king's troops should be withdrawn. He had engaged, also, that the guards of the redoubts on the East River, covering the upper part of the town, should be the first to be withdrawn, and that an officer should be sent to give Washington's advanced guard information of their retiring.

Although Washington doubted the existence of any such plot as that which had been reported to the British commander, yet he took precautions accordingly. On the morning of the 25th the American troops, composed of dragoons, light

* Thacher, p. 421.

infantry and artillery, moved from Harlem to the Bowery at the upper part of the city. There they remained until the troops in that quarter were withdrawn, when they marched into the city and took possession, the British embarking from the lower parts.

A formal entry then took place of the military and civil authorities. General Washington and Governor Clinton, with their suites, on horseback, led the procession, escorted by a troop of Westchester cavalry. Then came the lieutenant-governor and members of the council, General Knox and the officers of the army, the speaker of the Assembly, and a large number of citizens on horseback and on foot.

An American lady, who was at that time very young and had resided during the latter part of the war in the city, has given us an account of the striking contrast between the American and British troops. "We had been accustomed for a long time" said she, "to military display in all the finish and finery of garrison life; the troops just leaving us were as if equipped for show, and with their scarlet uniforms and burnished arms, made a brilliant display; the troops that marched in, on the contrary, were ill-clad and weather-beaten, and made a forlorn appearance; but then they were *our* troops, and as I looked at them, and thought upon all they had done and suffered for us, my heart and my eyes were full, and I admired and gloried in them the more, because they were weather-beaten and forlorn."

The city was now a scene of public festivity and rejoicing. The governor gave banquets to the French ambassador, the commander-in-chief, the military and civil officers, and a large number of the most eminent citizens, and at night the public were entertained by splendid fireworks.

In the course of a few days Washington prepared to depart for Annapolis, where Congress was assembling, with the intention of asking leave to resign his command. A barge was in waiting about noon on the 4th of December at Whitehall ferry to convey him across the Hudson to Paulus Hook. The principal officers of the army assembled at Fraunces' Tavern in the neighborhood of the ferry, to take a final leave of him. On entering the room, and finding himself surrounded by his old companions in arms, who had shared with him so many scenes of hardship, difficulty, and danger, his agitated feelings overcame his usual self-command. Filling a glass of wine, and turning upon them his benignant but saddened countenance, "With a heart full of love and gratitude," said he, "I now take leave of you, most devoutly wishing that your lat-

ter days may be as prosperous and happy as your former ones have been glorious and honorable."

Having drunk this farewell benediction, he added with emotion, "I cannot come to each of you to take my leave, but shall be obliged if each of you will come and take me by the hand."

General Knox, who was the nearest, was the first to advance. Washington, affected even to tears, grasped his hand and gave him a brother's embrace. In the same affectionate manner he took leave severally of the rest. Not a word was spoken. The deep feeling and manly tenderness of these veterans in the parting moment could find no utterance in words. Silent and solemn they followed their loved commander as he left the room, passed through a corps of light infantry, and proceeded on foot to Whitehall ferry. Having entered the barge, he turned to them, took off his hat and waived a silent adieu. They replied in the same manner, and having watched the barge until the intervening point of the Battery shut it from sight, returned, still solemn and silent, to the place where they had assembled.*

On his way to Annapolis, Washington stopped for a few days at Philadelphia, where with his usual exactness in matters of business, he adjusted with the Comptroller of the Treasury his accounts from the commencement of the war down to the 13th of the actual month of December. These were all in his own handwriting, and kept in the cleanest and most accurate manner, each entry being accompanied by a statement of the occasion and object of the charge.

The gross amount was about fourteen thousand five hundred pounds sterling; in which were included moneys expended for secret intelligence and service, and in various incidental charges. All this, it must be noted, was an account of money actually expended in the progress of the war; not for arrearage of pay; for it will be recollected Washington accepted no pay. Indeed, on the final adjustment of his accounts, he found himself a considerable loser, having frequently, in a hurry of business, neglected to credit himself with sums drawn from his private purse in moments of exigency.

The schedule of his public account furnishes not the least among the many noble and impressive lessons taught by his character and example. It stands a touchstone of honesty in office, and a lasting rebuke on the lavish expenditure of the

* Marshall's Life of Washington.

public money, too often heedlessly, if not wilfully, indulged by military commanders.

In passing through New Jersey, Pennsylvania, and Maryland, the scenes of his anxious and precarious campaigns, Washington was everywhere hailed with enthusiasm by the people, and greeted with addresses by legislative assemblies, and learned and religious institutions. He accepted them all with the modesty inherent in his nature; little thinking that this present popularity was but the early outbreaking of a fame, that was to go on widening and deepening from generation to generation, and extending over the whole civilized world.

Being arrived at Annapolis, he addressed a letter to the President of Congress, on the 20th of December, requesting to know in what manner it would be most proper to offer his resignation; whether in writing or at an audience. The latter mode was adopted, and the Hall of Congress appointed for the ceremonial.

A letter from Washington to the Baron Steuben, written on the 23d, concludes as follows: "This is the last letter I shall write while I continue in the service of my country. The hour of my resignation is fixed at twelve to-day, after which I shall become a private citizen on the banks of the Potomac."

At twelve o'clock the gallery, and a great part of the floor of the Hall of Congress, were filled with ladies, with public functionaries of the State, and with general officers. The members of Congress were seated and covered, as representatives of the sovereignty of the Union. The gentlemen present as spectators were standing and uncovered.

Washington entered, conducted by the secretary of Congress, and took his seat in a chair appointed for him. After a brief pause the president (General Mifflin) informed him, that "the United States in Congress assembled, were prepared to receive his communication."

Washington then rose, and in a dignified and impressive manner, delivered a short address.

"The great events," said he, "on which my resignation depended, having at length taken place, I now have the honor of offering my sincere congratulations to Congress, and of presenting myself before them, to surrender into their hands the trust committed to me, and to claim the indulgence of retiring from the service of my country."

After expressing his obligations to the army in general, and acknowledging the peculiar services, and distinguished

merits of the confidential officers who had been attached to his person, and composed his family during the war, and whom he especially recommended to the favor of Congress, he continued—

"I consider it an indispensable duty to close this last solemn act of my official life, by commending the interests of our dearest country to the protection of Almighty God; and those who have the superintendence of them, to his holy keeping.

"Having now finished the work assigned me, I retire from the great theatre of action; and bidding an affectionate farewell to this august body, under whose orders I have long acted, I here offer my commission, and take my leave of all the employments of public life."

"Few tragedies ever drew so many tears from so many beautiful eyes," says a writer who was present, "at the moving manner in which his Excellency took his final leave of Congress." *

Having delivered his commission into the hands of the president, the latter, in reply to his address, bore testimony to the patriotism with which he had answered to the call of his country, and defended its invaded rights before it had formed alliances, and while it was without funds or a government to support him; to the wisdom and fortitude with which he had conducted the great military contest, invariably regarding the rights of the civil power, through all disasters and changes. "You retire," added he, "from the theatre of action with the blessings of your fellow-citizens; but the glory of your virtues will not terminate with your military command: it will continue to animate remotest ages."

The very next morning Washington left Annapolis, and hastened to his beloved Mount Vernon, where he arrived the same day, on Christmas-eve, in a frame of mind suited to enjoy the sacred and genial festival.

"The scene is at last closed," said he in a letter to Governor Clinton; "I feel myself eased of a load of public care. I hope to spend the remainder of my days in cultivating the affections of good men, and in the practice of the domestic virtues."

* Editor of the Maryland Gazette.

CHAPTER IX.

Washington at Mount Vernon—A Soldier's Repose—Plans of Domestic Life—Kind Offer to the Council of Pennsylvania—Historical Applications—News of Jacob Van Braam—Opening of Spring—Agricultural Life Resumed—Recollections of the Fairfaxes—Meeting of the Order of Cincinnati—Tour of Washington and Dr. Craik to the West—Ideas of Internal Improvement—Parting with Lafayette.

For some time after his return to Mount Vernon, Washington was in a manner locked up by the ice and snow of an uncommonly rigorous winter, so that social intercourse was interrupted, and he could not even pay a visit of duty and affection to his aged mother at Fredericksburg. But it was enough for him at present that he was at length at home at Mount Vernon. Yet the habitudes of the camp still haunted him; he could hardly realize that he was free from military duties; on waking in the morning he almost expected to hear the drum going its stirring rounds and beating the reveille.

"Strange as it may seem," writes he, to General Knox, "it is nevertheless true, that it was not until very lately I could get the better of my usual custom of ruminating as soon as I waked in the morning, on the business of the ensuing day; and of my surprise at finding, after revolving many things in my mind, that I was no longer a public man, nor had anything to do with public transactions. I feel now, however, as I conceive a weary traveller must do, who, after treading many a weary step, with a heavy burthen on his shoulders, is eased of the latter, having reached the haven to which all the former were directed, and from his house-top is looking back, and tracing, with an eager eye, the meanders by which he escaped the quicksands and mires which lay in his way; and into which none but the all-powerful Guide and Dispenser of human events could have prevented his falling."

And in a letter to Lafayette he writes: "Free from the bustle of a camp and the busy scenes of public life, I am solacing myself with those tranquil enjoyments which the soldier, who is ever in pursuit of fame; the statesman, whose watchful days and sleepless nights are spent in devising schemes to promote the welfare of his own, perhaps the ruin of other countries—as if this globe was insufficient for us all; and the courtier, who is always watching the countenance of his prince

in hopes of catching a gracious smile, can have very little conception. I have not only retired from all public employments, but I am retiring within myself, and shall be able to view the solitary walk, and tread the paths of private life with heartfelt satisfaction. Envious of none, I am determined to be pleased with all; and this, my dear friend, being the order of my march, I will move gently down the stream of life until I sleep with my fathers."

And subsequently, in a letter to the Marchioness de Lafayette, inviting her to America to see the country, "young, rude, and uncultivated as it is," for the liberties of which her husband had fought, bled, and acquired much glory, and where everybody admired and loved him, he adds: "I am now enjoying domestic ease under the shadow of my own vine and my own fig-tree, in a small villa, with the implements of husbandry and lambkins about me. * * * Come, then, let me entreat you, and call my cottage your own; for your doors do not open to you with more readiness than mine would. You will see the plain manner in which we live, and meet with rustic civility; and you shall taste the simplicity of rural life. It will diversify the scene, and may give you a higher relish for the gayeties of the court when you return to Versailles."

During the winter storms, he anticipates the time when the return of the sun will enable him to welcome his friends and companions in arms to partake of his hospitality; and lays down his unpretending plan of receiving the curious visitors who are likely to throng in upon him. "My manner of living," writes he to a friend, "is plain, and I do not mean to be put out of it. A glass of wine and a bit of mutton are always ready; and such as will be content to partake of them, are always welcome. Those who expect more will be disappointed."

Some degree of economy was necessary, for his financial concerns had suffered during the war, and the products of his estate had fallen off during his long absence.

In the mean time the supreme council of Pennsylvania, properly appreciating the disinterestedness of his conduct, and aware that popular love and popular curiosity would attract crowds of visitors to Mount Vernon, and subject him to extraordinary expenses, had instructed their delegates in Congress to call the attention of that body to these circumstances, with a view to produce some national reward for his eminent services. Before acting upon these instructions, the delegates were directed to send a copy of them to Washington for his approbation.

He received the document while buried in accounts and calculations, and when, had he been of a mercenary disposition, the offered intervention in his favor would have seemed most seasonable; but he at once most gratefully and respectfully declined it, jealously maintaining the satisfaction of having served his country at the sacrifice of his private interests.

Applications began to be made to him by persons desirous of writing the history of the Revolution, for access to the public papers in his possession. He excused himself from submitting to their inspection those relative to the occurrences and transactions of his late command, until Congress should see fit to open their archives to the historian.

His old friend, Dr. Craik, made a similar application to Washington in behalf of a person who purposed to write his memoirs. He replied, that any memoir of his life distinct and unconnected with the general history of the war, would rather hurt his feelings than flatter his pride, while he could not furnish the papers and information connected with it without subjecting himself to the imputation of vanity, adding: "I had rather leave it to posterity to think and say what they please of me, than, by any act of mine, to have vanity or ostentation imputed to me."

It was a curious circumstance, that scarce had Washington retired from the bustle of arms and hung up his sword at Mount Vernon, when he received a letter from the worthy who had first taught him the use of that sword in these very halls. In a word, Jacob Van Braam, his early teacher of the sword exercise, his fellow campaigner and unlucky interpreter in the affair of the Great Meadows, turned up once more. His letter gave a glance over the current of his life. It would appear that after the close of the French war, he had been allowed half pay in consideration of his services and misadventures; and, in process of time, had married, and settled on a farm in Wales with his wife and his wife's mother. He had carried with him to England a strong feeling in favor of America, and on the breaking out of the Revolution had been very free, and, as he seemed to think, eloquent and effective in speaking in all companies and at country meetings against the American war. Suddenly, as if to stop his mouth, he received orders from Lord Amherst, then commander-in-chief, to join his regiment (the 60th), in which he was appointed eldest captain in the 3d battalion. In vain he pleaded his rural occupations; his farm cultivated at so much cost, for which he was in debt, and which must go to ruin should he abandon it so abruptly. No excuse was admitted—he must

embark and sail for East Florida, or lose his half pay. He accordingly sailed for St. Augustine in the beginning of 1776, with a couple of hundred recruits picked up in London, resolving to sell out of the army on the first opportunity. By a series of cross-purposes he was prevented from doing so until in 1779, having in the interim made a campaign in Georgia. "He quitted the service," he adds, "with as much pleasure as ever a young man entered it."

He then returned to England and took up his residence in Devonshire; but his invincible propensity to talk against the ministry made his residence there uncomfortable. His next move, therefore, was to the old fertile province of Orleannois in France, where he was still living near Malesherbes, apparently at his ease, enjoying the friendship of the distinguished personage of that name, and better versed, it is to be hoped, in the French language than when he officiated as interpreter in the capitulation at the Great Meadows. The worthy major appeared to contemplate with joy and pride the eminence to which his early pupil in the sword exercise had attained.

"Give me leave, sir, before I conclude," writes he, "to pour out the sentiments of my soul in congratulations for your successes in the American contest; and in wishing you a long life, to enjoy the blessing of a great people whom you have been the chief instrument in freeing from bondage."

So disappears from the scene one of the earliest personages of our history.

As spring advanced, Mount Vernon, as had been anticipated, began to attract numerous visitors. They were received in the frank, unpretending style Washington had determined upon. It was truly edifying to behold how easily and contentedly he subsided from the authoritative commander-in-chief of armies, into the quiet country gentleman. There was nothing awkward or violent in the transition. He seemed to be in his natural element. Mrs. Washington, too, who had presided with quiet dignity at head-quarters, and cheered the wintry gloom of Valley Forge with her presence, presided with equal amenity and grace at the simple board of Mount Vernon. She had a cheerful good sense that always made her an agreeable companion, and was an excellent manager.

She has been remarked for an inveterate habit of knitting. It had been acquired, or at least fostered, in the winter encampments of the Revolution, where she used to set an example to her lady visitors, by diligently plying her needles knitting stockings for the poor destitute soldiery.

In entering upon the out-door management of his estate, Washington was but doing in person what he had long been doing through others. He had never virtually ceased to be the agriculturist. Throughout all his campaigns he had kept himself informed of the course of rural affairs at Mount Vernon. By means of maps on which every field was laid down and numbered, he was enabled to give directions for their several cultivation, and receive accounts of their several crops. No hurry of affairs prevented a correspondence with his overseer or agent, and he exacted weekly reports. Thus his rural were interwoven with his military cares; the agriculturist was mingled with the soldier; and those strong sympathies with the honest cultivators of the soil, and that paternal care of their interest to be noted throughout his military career, may be ascribed, in a great measure, to the sweetening influences of Mount Vernon. Yet as spring returned, and he resumed his rides about the beautiful neighborhood of this haven of his hopes, he must have been mournfully sensible, now and then, of the changes which time and events had effected there.

The Fairfaxes, the kind friends of his boyhood, and social companions of his riper years, were no longer at hand to share his pleasures and lighten his cares. There were no more hunting dinners at Belvoir. He paid a sad visit to that happy resort of his youth, and contemplated with a mournful eye its charred ruins, and the desolation of its once ornamented grounds. George William Fairfax, its former possessor, was in England; his political principles had detained him there during the war and part of his property had been sequestered; still, though an exile, he continued in heart a friend to America, his hand had been open to relieve the distresses of Americans in England, and he had kept up a cordial correspondence with Washington.

Old Lord Fairfax, the Nimrod of Greenway Court, Washington's early friend and patron, with whom he had first learned to follow the hounds, had lived on in a green old age at his sylvan retreat in the beautiful valley of the Shenandoah; popular with his neighbors and unmolested by the Whigs, although frank and open in his adherence to Great Britain. He had attained his ninety-second year, when tidings of the surrender of Yorktown wounded the national pride of the old cavalier to the quick, and snapped the attenuated thread of his existence.*

* So, at least, records in homely prose and verse a reverend historio-

The time was now approaching when the first general meeting of the order of Cincinnati was to be held, and Washington saw with deep concern a popular jealousy awakened concerning it. Judge Burke, of South Carolina, had denounced it in a pamphlet as an attempt to elevate the military above the civil classes, and to institute an order of nobility. The Legislature of Massachusetts sounded an alarm that was echoed in Connecticut, and prolonged from State to State. The whole Union was put on its guard against this effort to form a hereditary aristocracy out of the military chiefs and powerful families of the several States.

Washington endeavored to allay this jealousy. In his letters to the presidents of the State societies, notifying the meeting which was to be held in Philadelphia on the 1st of May, he expressed his earnest solicitude that it should be respectable for numbers and abilities, and wise and deliberate in its proceedings, so as to convince the public that the objects of the institution were patriotic and trustworthy.

The society met at the appointed time and place. Washington presided, and by his sagacious counsels effected modifications of its constitution. The hereditary principle, and the power of electing honorary members, were abolished, and it was reduced to the harmless, but highly respectable footing on which it still exists.

In notifying the French military and naval officers included in the society of the changes which had taken place in its constitution, he expressed his ardent hopes that it would render permanent those friendships and connections which had happily taken root between the officers of the two nations. All clamors against the order now ceased. It became a rallying place for old comrades in arms, and Washington continued to preside over it until his death.

In a letter to the Chevalier de Chastellux, for whom he felt

grapher of Mount Vernon. "When old Lord Fairfax heard that Washington had captured Lord Cornwallis and all his army, he called to his black waiter, 'Come, Joe! carry me to bed, for it is high time for me to die!'"

Then up rose Joe, all at the word,
And took his master's arm,
And thus to bed he softly led
The lord of Greenway farm.

There oft he called on Britain's name,
And oft he wept full sore,
Then sighed—thy will, oh Lord, be done—
And word spake never more.

See WEEMS' *Life of Washington.*

an especial regard, after inviting him to the meeting, he adds: "I will only repeat to you the assurance of my friendship, and of the pleasure I should feel in seeing you in the shade of those trees which my hands have planted; and which, by their rapid growth, at once indicate a knowledge of my declining years, and their disposition to spread their mantles over me, before I go hence to return no more."

On the 17th of August he was gladdened by having the Marquis de Lafayette under his roof, who had recently arrived from France. The marquis passed a fortnight with him, a loved and cherished guest, at the end of which he departed for a time to be present at the ceremony of a treaty with the Indians.

Washington now prepared for a tour to the west of the Appalachian Mountains, to visit his lands on the Ohio and Kanawha Rivers. Dr. Craik, the companion of his various campaigns, and who had accompanied him in 1770 on a similar tour, was to be his fellow-traveller. The way they were to travel may be gathered from Washington's directions to the doctor:—"You will have occasion to take nothing from home but a servant to look after your horses, and such bedding as you may think proper to make use of. I will carry a marquee, some camp utensils, and a few stores. A boat, or some other kind of vessel, will be provided for the voyage down the river, either at my place on the Youghiogheny or Fort Pitt, measures for this purpose having already been taken. A few medicines, and hooks and lines, you may probably want."

This soldier-like tour, made in hardy military style, with tent, pack-horses, and frugal supplies, took him once more among the scenes of his youthful expeditions when a land surveyor in the employ of Lord Fairfax; a leader of Virginia militia, or an aide-de-camp of the unfortunate Braddock. A veteran now in years, and a general renowned in arms, he soberly permitted his steed to pick his way across the mountains by the old military route, still called Braddock's Road, over which he had spurred in the days of youthful ardor. His original intention had been to survey and inspect his lands on the Monongahela River; then to descend the Ohio to the great Kanawha, where also he had large tracts of wild land. On arriving on the Monongahela, however, he heard such accounts of discontent and irritation among the Indian tribes, that he did not consider it prudent to venture among them. Some of his land on the Monongahela was settled; the rest was in the wilderness, and of little value in the present un-

quiet state of the country. He abridged his tour, therefore; proceeded no further west than the Monongahela; ascended that river, and then struck southward through the wild, unsettled regions of the Alleganies, until he came out into the Shenandoah Valley near Staunton. He returned to Mount Vernon on the 4th of October; having, since the 1st of September, travelled on horseback six hundred and eighty miles, for a great part of the time in wild, mountainous country, where he was obliged to encamp at night. This, like his tour to the northern forts with Governor Clinton, gave proof of his unfailing vigor and activity.

During all this tour he had carefully observed the course and character of the streams flowing from the west into the Ohio, and the distance of their navigable parts from the head navigation of the rivers east of the mountains, with the nearest and best portage between them. For many years he had been convinced of the practicability of an easy and short communication between the Potomac and James rivers, and the waters of the Ohio, and thence on to the great chain of lakes; and of the vast advantages that would result therefrom to the States of Virginia and Maryland. He had even attempted to set a company on foot to undertake at their own expense the opening of such a communication, but the breaking out of the Revolution had put a stop to the enterprise. One object of his recent tour was to make observations and collect information on the subject; and all that he had seen and heard quickened his solicitude to carry the scheme into effect.

Political as well as commercial interests, he conceived, were involved in the enterprise. He had noticed that the flanks and rear of the United States were possessed by foreign and formidable powers, who might lure the western people into a trade and alliance with them. The Western States, he observed, stood as it were upon a pivot, so that the touch of a feather might turn them any way. They had looked down the Mississippi, and been tempted in that direction by the facilities of sending everything down the stream; whereas they had no means of coming to us but by long land transportations and rugged roads. The jealous and untoward disposition of the Spaniards, it was true, almost barred the use of the Mississippi; but they might change their policy, and invite trade in that direction. The retention by the British government, also, of the posts of Detroit, Niagara and Oswego, though contrary to the spirit of the treaty, shut up the channel of trade in that quarter. These posts, however, would eventually be given up; and then, he was persuaded, the

people of New York would lose no time in removing every obstacle in the way of a water communication; and "I shall be mistaken," said he, "if they do not build vessels for the navigation of the lakes, which will supersede the necessity of coasting on either side."

It behooved Virginia, therefore, to lose no time in availing herself of the present favorable conjuncture to secure a share of western trade by connecting the Potomac and James Rivers, with the waters beyond the mountains. The industry of the western settlers had hitherto been checked by the want of outlets to their products, owing to the before-mentioned obstacles: "But smooth the road," said he, "and make easy the way for them, and then see what an influx of articles will pour upon us; how amazingly our exports will be increased by them, and how amply all shall be compensated for any trouble and expense we may encounter to effect it."

Such were some of the ideas ably and amply set forth by him in a letter to Benjamin Harrison, Governor of Virginia, who, struck with his plan for opening the navigation of the western waters, laid the letter before the State legislature. The favor with which it was received induced Washington to repair to Richmond and give his personal support to the measure. He arrived there on the 15th of November. On the following morning a committee of five members of the House of Assembly, headed by Patrick Henry, waited on him in behalf of that body, to testify their reverence for his character and affection for his person, and their sense of the proofs given by him since his return to private life, that no change of situation could turn his thoughts from the welfare of his country. The suggestions of Washington in his letter to the governor, and his representations, during this visit to Richmond, gave the first impulse to the great system of internal improvement since pursued throughout the United States.

At Richmond he was joined by the Marquis de Lafayette; who since their separation had accompanied the commissioners to Fort Schuyler, and been present at the formation of a treaty with the Indians; after which he had made a tour of the Eastern States, "crowned everywhere," writes Washington, "with wreaths of love and respect." *

They returned together to Mount Vernon, where Lafayette again passed several days, a cherished inmate of the domestic circle.

When his visit was ended, Washington, to defer the part-

* Letter of Washington to the Marchioness de Lafayette.

ing scene, accompanied him to Annapolis. On returning to Mount Vernon, he wrote a farewell letter to the marquis, bordering more upon the sentimental than almost any other in his multifarious correspondence.

"In the moment of our separation, upon the road as I have travelled, and every hour since, I have felt all that love, respect and attachment for you, with which length of years, close connection, and your merits have inspired me. I often asked myself, as our carriages separated, whether that was the last sight I ever should have of you? And though I wished to answer no, my fears answered yes. I called to mind the days of my youth, and found they had long since fled to return no more; that I was now descending the hill I had been fifty-two years climbing, and that, though I was blessed with a good constitution, I was of a short-lived family, and might soon expect to be entombed in the mansion of my fathers. These thoughts darkened the shades, and gave a gloom to the picture, and consequently, to my prospect of ever seeing you again."

CHAPTER X.

Scheme of Inland Navigation—Shares of Stock offered to Washington—Declined—Rural Improvements—The Tax of Letter-writing—The Tax of Sitting for Likenesses—Ornamental Gardening—Management of the Estate—Domestic Life—Visit of Mr. Watson—Reverential Awe Inspired by Washington—Irksome to Him—Instances of his Festive Gayety—Of his Laughing—Passion for Hunting Revived—Death of General Greene—His Character—Washington's Regrets and Encomiums—Letters to the French Noblemen.

WASHINGTON'S zeal for the public good had now found a new channel; or, rather, his late tours into the interior of the Union had quickened ideas long existing in his mind on the subject of internal navigation. In a letter to Richard Henry Lee, recently chosen President of Congress, he urged it upon his attention; suggesting that the western waters should be explored, their navigable capabilities ascertained, and that a complete map should be made of the country; that in all grants of land by the United States, there should be a reserve made for special sale of all mines, mineral and salt springs; that a medium price should be adopted for the western lands sufficient to prevent monopoly, but not to discourage useful

settlers. He had a salutary horror of "land jobbers" and "roaming speculators," prowling about the country like wolves; marking and surveying valuable spots to the great disquiet of the Indian tribes. "The spirit of emigration is great," said he; "people have got impatient, and though you cannot stop the road, it is yet in your power to mark the way; a little while, and you will not be able to do either."

In the latter part of December he was at Annapolis, at the request of the Assembly of Virginia, to arrange matters with the Assembly of Maryland respecting the communication between the Potomac and the western waters. Through his indefatigable exertions two companies were formed under the patronage of the governments of these States, for opening the navigation of the Potomac and James Rivers, and he was appointed president of both. By a unanimous vote of the Assembly of Virginia, fifty shares in the Potomac, and one hundred in the James River company, were appropriated for his benefit, to the end that, while the great works he had promoted would remain monuments of his glory, they might also be monuments of the gratitude of his country. The aggregate amount of shares was about forty thousand dollars.

Washington was exceedingly embarrassed by the appropriation. To decline so noble and unequivocal a testimonial of the good opinion and good will of his countrymen, might be construed into disrespect, yet he wished to be perfectly free to exercise his judgment and express his opinions in the matter, without being liable to the least suspicion of interested motives. It had been his fixed determination, also, when he surrendered his military command, never to hold any other office under government to which emolument might become a necessary appendage. From this resolution his mind had never swerved.

While, however, he declined to receive the proffered shares for his own benefit, he intimated a disposition to receive them in trust, to be applied to the use of some object or institution of a public nature. His wishes were complied with, and the shares were ultimately appropriated by him to institutions devoted to public education. Yet, though the love for his country would thus interfere with his love for his home, the dream of rural retirement at Mount Vernon still went on.

"The more I am acquainted with agricultural affairs," he says, in a letter to a friend in England, "the better I am pleased with them; insomuch that I can nowhere find so much satisfaction as in those innocent and useful pursuits. While indulging these feelings, I am led to reflect, how much more

delightful to an undebauched mind is the task of making improvements on the earth, than all the vainglory that can be acquired from ravaging it by the most uninterrupted career of conquest."

"How pitiful, in the age of reason and religion, is that false ambition which desolates the world with fire and sword for the purpose of conquest and fame, compared to the milder virtues of making our neighbors and our fellow-men as happy as their frail convictions and perishable natures will permit them to be."

He had a congenial correspondent in his quondam brother-soldier, Governor Clinton of New York, whose spear, like his own, had been turned into a pruning-hook.

"Whenever the season is proper and an opportunity offers," writes he to the governor, "I shall be glad to receive the balsam trees or others which you may think curious and exotic with us, as I am endeavoring to improve the grounds about my house in this way." He recommends to the governor's care certain grapevines of the choicest kinds for the table, which an uncle of the Chevalier de Luzerne had engaged to send from France, and which must be about to arrive at New York. He is literally going to sit under his own vine and his own fig-tree, and devote himself to the quiet pleasures of rural life.

At the opening of the year (1785) the entries in his diary show him diligently employed in preparations to improve his groves and shrubbery. On the 10th of January he notes that the white thorn is full in berry. On the 20th he begins to clear the pine groves of undergrowth.

In February he transplants ivy under the walls of the garden to which it still clings. In March he is planting hemlock trees, that most beautiful species of American evergreen, numbers of which had been brought hither from Occoquan. In April he is sowing holly berries in drills, some adjoining a green-briar hedge on the north side of the garden gate; others in a semicircle on the lawn. Many of the holly bushes thus produced, are still flourishing about the place in full vigor. He had learnt the policy, not sufficiently adopted in our country, of clothing his ornamented grounds as much as possible with evergreens, which resist the rigors of our winter, and keep up a cheering verdure throughout the year. Of the trees fitted for shade in pasture land he notes the locust, maple, black mulberry, black walnut, black gum, dogwood and sassafras, none of which, he observes, materially injure the grass beneath them.

Is then for once a soldier's dream realized? Is he in perfect enjoyment of that seclusion from the world and its distractions, which he had so often pictured to himself amid the hardships and turmoils of the camp? Alas, no! The "post," that "herald of a noisy world," invades his quiet and loads his table with letters, until correspondence becomes an intolerable burthen.

He looks in despair at the daily accumulating mass of unanswered letters. "Many mistakenly think," writes he, "that I am retired to ease, and to that kind of tranquillity which would grow tiresome for want of employment; but at no period of my life, not in the eight years I served the public, have I been obliged to write so much myself, as I have done since my retirement."* Again—"It is not the letters from my friends which give me trouble, or add aught to my perplexity. It is references to old matters, with which I have nothing to do; applications which often cannot be complied with; inquiries which would require the pen of a historian to satisfy; letters of compliment as unmeaning perhaps as they are troublesome, but which must be attended to; and the commonplace business which employs my pen and my time often disagreeably. These, with company, deprive me of exercise, and unless I can obtain relief, must be productive of disagreeable consequences."

From much of this drudgery of the pen he was subsequently relieved by Mr. Tobias Lear, a young gentleman of New Hampshire, a graduate of Harvard College, who acted as his private secretary, and at the same time took charge of the instruction of the two children of the late Mr. Parke Custis, whom Washington had adopted.

There was another tax imposed by his celebrity upon his time and patience. Applications were continually made to him to sit for his likeness. The following is his sportive reply to Mr. Francis Hopkinson, who applied in behalf of Mr. Pine:

"'*In for a penny in for a pound*,' is an old adage. I am so hackneyed to the touches of the painters' pencil, that I am altogether at their beck, and sit 'like Patience on a monument,' while they are delineating the lines of my face. It is a proof among many others, of what habit and custom can accomplish. At first I was impatient at the request, and as restive under the operation, as a colt is under the saddle. The next time I submitted very reluctantly, but with less flouncing. Now no drayhorse moves more readily to his

* Letter to Richard Henry Lee.

thill, than I to the painter's chair. It may easily be conceived, therefore, that I yield a ready obedience to your request, and to the views of Mr. Pine."

It was not long after this that M. Houdon, an artist of great merit, chosen by Mr. Jefferson and Dr. Franklin, arrived from Paris to make a study of Washington for a statue, for the Legislature of Virginia. He remained a fortnight at Mount Vernon, and having formed his model, took it with him to Paris, where he produced that excellent statue and likeness to be seen in the State House in Richmond, Virginia.

Being now in some measure relieved from the labors of the pen, Washington had more time to devote to his plan for ornamental cultivation of the grounds about his dwelling.

We find in his diary noted down with curious exactness, each day's labor and the share he took in it; his frequent rides to the Mill Swamp; the Dogue Creek; the "Plantation of the Neck," and other places along the Potomac in quest of young elms, ash trees, white thorn, crab-apples, maples, mulberries, willows and lilacs; the winding walks which he lays out, and the trees and shrubs which he plants along them. Now he sows acorns and buck-eye nuts brought by himself from the Monongahela; now he opens vistas through the Pine Grove, commanding distant views through the woodlands; and now he twines round his columns scarlet honeysuckles, which his gardener tells him will blow all the summer.

His care-worn spirit freshens up in these employments. With him Mount Vernon is a kind of idyl. The transient glow of poetical feeling which once visited his bosom, when in boyhood he rhymed beneath its groves, seems about to return once more; and we please ourselves with noting among the trees set out by him, a group of young horse-chestnuts from Westmoreland, his native county, the haunt of his schoolboy days; which had been sent to him by Colonel Lee (Light Horse Harry), the son of his "Lowland Beauty."

A diagram of the plan in which he had laid out his grounds, still remains among his papers at Mount Vernon; the places are marked on it for particular trees and shrubs. Some of those trees and shrubs are still to be found in the places thus assigned to them. In the present neglected state of Mount Vernon, its walks are overgrown, and vegetation runs wild; but it is deeply interesting still to find traces of these toils in which Washington delighted, and to know that many of the trees which gave it its present umbrageous beauty were planted by his hand.

The ornamental cultivation of which we have spoken, was confined to the grounds appertaining to what was called the mansion-house farm; but his estate included four other farms, all lying contiguous, and containing three thousand two hundred and sixty acres; each farm having its bailiff or overseer, with a house for his accommodation, barns and outhouses for the produce, and cabins for the negroes. On a general map of the estate, drawn out by Washington himself, these farms were all laid down accurately and their several fields numbered; he knew the soil and local qualities of each, and regulated the culture of them accordingly.

In addition to these five farms there were several hundred acres of fine woodland, so that the estate presented a beautiful diversity of land and water. In the stables near the mansion-house were the carriage and saddle horses, of which he was very choice; on the four farms there were 54 draught horses, 12 mules, 317 head of black cattle, 360 sheep, and a great number of swine, which last ran at large in the woods.

He now read much on husbandry and gardening, and copied out treatises on those subjects. He corresponded also with the celebrated Arthur Young; from whom he obtained seeds of all kinds, improved ploughs, plans for laying out farm yards, and advice on various parts of rural economy.

"Agriculture," writes he to him, "has ever been among the most favored of my amusements, though I have never possessed much skill in the art, and nine years' total inattention to it has added nothing to a knowledge, which is best understood from practice; but with the means you have been so obliging as to furnish me, I shall return to it, though rather late in the day, with more alacrity than ever."

In the management of his estate he was remarkably exact. No negligence on the part of the overseers or those under them was passed over unnoticed. He seldom used many words on the subject of his plans; rarely asked advice; but, when once determined, carried them directly and silently into execution; and was not easily dissuaded from a project when once commenced.

We have shown, in a former chapter, his mode of apportioning time at Mount Vernon, prior to the Revolution. The same system was, in a great measure, resumed. His active day began some time before the dawn. Much of his correspondence was despatched before breakfast, which took place at half-past seven. After breakfast he mounted his horse which stood ready at the door, and rode out to different parts of his estate, as he used to do to various parts of the camp, to

see that all was right at the outposts, and every one at his duty. At half-past two he dined.

If there was no company he would write until dark, or, if pressed by business until nine o'clock in the evening; otherwise he read in the evening, or amused himself with a game of whist.

His secretary, Mr. Lear, after two years' residence in the family on the most confidential footing, says,—"General Washington is, I believe, almost the only man of an exalted character, who does not lose some part of his respectability by an intimate acquaintance. I have never found a single thing that could lessen my respect for him. A complete knowledge of his honesty, uprightness and candor in all his private transactions, has sometimes led me to think him more than a man."

The children of Parke Custis formed a lively part of his household. He was fond of children and apt to unbend with them. Miss Custis, recalling in after life the scenes of her childhood, writes, "I have sometimes made him laugh most heartily from sympathy with my joyous and extravagant spirits;" she observes, however, that "he was a silent, thoughtful man. He spoke little generally; never of himself. I never heard him relate a single act of his life during the war. I have often seen him perfectly abstracted, his lips moving; but no sound was perceptible."

An observant traveler, Mr. Elkanah Watson, who visited Mount Vernon in the winter of 1785, bearer of a letter of introduction from General Greene and Colonel Fitzgerald, gives a home picture of Washington in his retirement. Though sure that his credentials would secure him a respectful reception, he says, "I trembled with awe, as I came into the presence of this great man. I found him at table with Mrs. Washington and his private family, and was received in the native dignity, and with that urbanity so peculiarly combined in the character of a soldier and an eminent gentleman. He soon put me at my ease, by unbending, in a free and affable conversation.

"The cautious reserve which wisdom and policy dictated, whilst engaged in rearing the glorious fabric of our independence, was evidently the result of consummate prudence and not characteristic of his nature. I observed a peculiarity in his smile, which seemed to illuminate his eye; his whole countenance beamed with intelligence, while it commanded confidence and respect.

"I found him kind and benignant in the domestic circle;

revered and beloved by all around him; agreeably social, without ostentation; delighting in anecdote and adventures; without assumption; his domestic arrangements harmonious and systematic. His servants seemed to watch his eye, and to anticipate his every wish; hence a look was equivalent to a command. His servant Billy, the faithful companion of his military career, was always at his side. Smiling content animated and beamed on every countenance in his presence."

In the evening Mr. Watson sat conversing for a full hour with Washington after all the family had retired, expecting perhaps, to hear him fight over some of his battles; but, if so, he was disappointed, for he observes: "He modestly waived all allusion to the events in which he had acted so glorious and conspicuous a part. Much of his conversation had reference to the interior country, and to the opening of the navigation of the Potomac by canals and locks, at the Seneca, the Great and Little Falls. His mind appeared to be deeply absorbed by that object, then in earnest contemplation."

Mr. Watson had taken a severe cold in the course of a harsh winter journey, and coughed excessively. Washington pressed him to take some remedies but he declined. After retiring for the night his coughing increased. "When some time had elapsed," writes he, "the door of my room was gently opened, and, on drawing my bed curtains, I beheld Washington himself, standing at my bedside with a bowl of hot tea in his hand. I was mortified and distressed beyond expression. This little incident, occurring in common life with an ordinary man, would not have been noticed; but as a trait of the benevolence and private virtue of Washington, deserves to be recorded."

The late Bishop White, in subsequent years, speaking of Washington's unassuming manners, observes: "I know no man who so carefully guarded against the discoursing of himself or of his acts, or of anything that pertained to him; and it has occasionally occurred to me when in his company, that, if a stranger to his person were present, he would never have known from anything said by him that he was conscious of having distinguished himself in the eye of the world."

An anecdote is told of Washington's conduct while commander-in-chief; illustrative of his benignant attention to others, and his freedom from all assumption. While the army was encamped at Morristown, he one day attended a religious meeting where divine service was to be celebrated in the open air. A chair had been set out for his use. Just before the service commenced, a woman with a child in her arms ap-

proached. All the seats were occupied. Washington immediately rose, placed her in the chair which had been assigned to him, and remained standing during the whole service.*

The reverential awe with which his deeds and elevated position threw around him was often a source of annoyance to him in private life; especially when he perceived its effect upon the young and gay. We have been told of a case in point, when he made his appearance at a private ball where all were enjoying themselves with the utmost glee. The moment he entered the room the buoyant mirth was checked; the dance lost its animation; every face was grave; every tongue was silent. He remained for a time, endeavoring to engage in conversation with some of the young people, and to break the spell; finding it in vain, he retired sadly to the company of the elders in an adjoining room, expressing his regret that his presence should operate as such a damper. After a little while light laughter and happy voices again resounded from the ball-room; upon which he rose cautiously, approached on tip-toe the door, which was ajar, and there stood for some time a delighted spectator of the youthful revelry.

Washington in fact, though habitually grave and thoughtful, was of a social disposition, and loved cheerful society. He was fond of the dance; and it was the boast of many ancient dames in our day, who had been belles in the time of the Revolution, that they had danced minuets with him, or had him for a partner in contra-dances. There were balls in camp, in some of the dark times of the Revolution. "We had a little dance at my quarters," writes General Greene from Middlebrook, in March, 1779. "His Excellency and Mrs. Greene danced upwards of three hours without once sitting down. Upon the whole, we had a pretty little frisk." §

A letter of Colonel Tench Tilghman, one of Washington's aides-de-camp, gives an instance of the general's festive gayety, when in the above year the army was cantoned near Morristown. A large company, of which the general and Mrs. Washington, general and Mrs. Greene, and Mr. and Mrs. Olney were part, dined with colonel and Mrs. Biddle. Some little time after the ladies had retired from table, Mr. Olney followed them into the next room. A clamor was raised against him as a deserter, and it was resolved that a party should be sent to demand him, and that if the ladies refused

* MS. notes of the Rev. Joseph F. Tuttle.
§ Greene to Col. Wadsworth. MS.

to give him up, he should be brought by force. Washington humored the joke, and offered to head the party. He led it with great formality to the door of the drawing-room, and sent in a summons. The ladies refused to give up the deserter. An attempt was made to capture him. The ladies came to the rescue. There was a melée; in the course of which his Excellency seems to have had a passage at arms with Mrs. Olney. The ladies were victorious, as they always ought to be, says the gallant Tilghman.*

More than one instance is told of Washington's being surprised into hearty fits of laughter, even during the war. We have recorded one produced by the sudden appearance of old General Putnam on horseback, with a female prisoner *en croupe*. The following is another which occurred at the camp at Morristown. Washington had purchased a young horse of great spirit and power. A braggadocio of the army, vain of his horsemanship, asked the privilege of breaking it. Washington gave his consent, and with some of his officers attended to see the horse receive his first lesson. After much preparation, the pretender to equitation mounted into the saddle and was making a great display of his science, when the horse suddenly planted his forefeet, threw up his heels, and gave the unlucky Gambado a somerset over his head. Washington, a thorough horseman, and quick to perceive the ludicrous in these matters, was so convulsed with laughter, that, we are told, the tears ran down his cheeks.†

Still another instance is given, which occurred at the return of peace, when he was sailing in a boat on the Hudson, and was so overcome by the drollery of a story told by Major Fairlie of New York, of facetious memory, that he fell back in the boat in a paroxysm of laughter. In that fit of laughter, it was sagely presumed that he threw off the burthen of care which had been weighing down his spirits throughout the war. He certainly relaxed much of his thoughtful gravity of demeanor when he had no longer the anxieties of a general command to harass him. The late Judge Brooke, who had

* This sportive occurrence gave rise to a piece of camp scandal. It was reported at a distance that Mrs. Olney had been in a violent rage, and had told Washington that, "if he did not let go her hand she would tear his eyes out, and that though he was a general, he was but a man."

Mr. Olney wrote to Colonel Tilghman, begging him to refute the scandal. The latter gave a true statement of the affair, declaring that the whole was done in jest, and that in the mock contest Mrs. Olney had made use of no expressions unbecoming a lady of her good breeding, or such as were taken the least amiss by the general.

† Notes of the Rev. M. Tuttle. MS.

served as an officer in the legion of Light-horse Harry, used to tell of having frequently met Washington on his visits to Fredericksburg after the revolutionary war, and how "hilarious" the general was on those occasions with "Jack Willis, and other friends of his young days," laughing heartily at the comic songs which were sung at table.

Colonel Henry Lee, too, who used to be a favored guest at Mount Vernon, does not seem to have been much under the influence of that "reverential awe" which Washington is said to have inspired; if we may judge from the following anecdote. Washington one day at table mentioned his being in want of carriage horses, and asked Lee if he knew where he could get a pair.

"I have a fine pair, general," replied Lee, "but you cannot get them."

"Why not?"

"Because you will never pay more than half price for anything; and I must have full price for my horses."

The bantering reply set Mrs. Washington laughing, and her parrot, perched beside her, joined in the laugh. The general took this familiar assault upon his dignity in great good part. "Ah, Lee, you are a funny fellow," said he,—"see, that bird is laughing at you." *

Hearty laughter, however, was rare with Washington. The sudden explosions we hear of were the result of some sudden and ludicrous surprise. His general habit was a calm seriousness, easily softening into a benevolent smile.

* Communicated to us in a letter from a son of Colonel Lee.

NOTE.

Another instance is on record of one of Washington's fits of laughter, which occurred in subsequent years. Judge Marshall and Judge Washington, a relative of the general, were on their way on horseback to visit Mount Vernon, attended by a black servant, who had charge of a large portmanteau containing their clothes. As they passed through a wood in the skirts of the Mount Vernon grounds, they were tempted to make a hasty toilet beneath its shade; being covered with dust from the state of the roads. Dismounting, they threw off their dusty garments, while the servant took down the portmanteau. As he opened it, out flew cakes of windsor soap and fancy articles of all kinds. The man by mistake had changed their portmanteau at the last stopping place for one which resembled it, belonging to a Scotch pedler. The consternation of the negro, and their own dismantled state, struck them so ludicrously as to produce loud and repeated bursts of laughter. Washington, who happened to be out upon the grounds, was attracted by the noise, and so overcome by the strange plight of his friends, and the whimsicality of the whole scene, that he is said to have actually rolled on the grass with laughter.—See *Life of Judge J. Smith.*

In some few of his familiar letters, yet preserved, and not relating to business, there is occasionally a vein of pleasantry and even of humor; but almost invariably, they treat of matters of too grave import to admit of anything of the kind. It is to be deeply regretted that most of his family letters have been purposely destroyed.

The passion for hunting had revived with Washington on returning to his old hunting-grounds; but he had no hounds. His kennel had been broken up when he went to the wars, and the dogs given away, and it was not easy to replace them. After a time he received several hounds from France, sent out by Lafayette and other of the French officers, and once more sallied forth to renew his ancient sport. The French hounds, however, proved indifferent; he was out with them repeatedly, putting other hounds with them borrowed from gentlemen of the neighborhood. They improved after a while, but were never stanch, and caused him frequent disappointments. Probably he was not as stanch himself as formerly; an interval of several years may have blunted his keenness, if we may judge from the following entry in his diary:

"Out after breakfast with my hounds, found a fox and ran him sometimes hard, and sometimes at cold hunting from 11 till near 2—when I came home and left the huntsmen with them who followed in the same manner two hours or more, and then took the dogs off without killing."

He appears at one time to have had an idea of stocking part of his estate with deer. In a letter to his friend, George William Fairfax, in England, a letter expressive of kind recollections of former companionship, he says: "Though envy is no part of my composition, yet the picture you have drawn of your present habitation and mode of living, is enough to create a strong desire in me to be a participator of the tranquillity and rural amusements you have described. I am getting into the latter as fast as I can, being determined to make the remainder of my life easy, let the world or the affairs of it go as they may. I am not a little obliged to you for contributing to this, by procuring me a buck and doe of the best English deer; but if you have not already been at this trouble, I would, my good sir, now wish to relieve you from it, as Mr. Ogle of Maryland has been so obliging as to present me six fawns from his park of English deer at Bellair. With these, and tolerable care, I shall soon have a full stock for my small paddock." *

* George William Fairfax resided in Bath, where he died on the 3d of

While Washington was thus calmly enjoying himself, came a letter from Henry Lee, who was now in Congress, conveying a mournful piece of intelligence: "Your friend and second, the patriot and noble Greene, is no more. Universal grief reigns here." Greene died on the 18th of June, at his estate of Mulberry Grove, on Savannah River, presented to him by the State of Georgia. His last illness was brief; caused by a stroke of the sun; he was but forty-four years of age.

The news of his death struck heavily on Washington's heart, to whom, in the most arduous trials of the Revolution, he had been a second self. He had taken Washington as his model, and possessed naturally many of his great qualities. Like him, he was sound in judgment; persevering in the midst of discouragements; calm and self-possessed in time of danger; heedful of the safety of others; heedless of his own. Like him, he was modest and unpretending, and like him he had a perfect command of temper.

He had Washington's habits of early rising, and close and methodical despatch of business, "never suffering the day to crowd upon the morrow." In private intercourse he was frank, noble, candid and intelligent; in the hurry of business he was free from petulance, and had, we are told, "a winning blandness of manner that won the affections of his officers."

His campaigns in the Carolinas showed him to be a worthy disciple of Washington, keeping the war alive by his own persevering hope and inexhaustible energy, and, as it were, fighting almost without weapons. His great contest of generalship with the veteran Cornwallis, has insured for him a lasting renown.

"He was a great and good man!" was Washington's comprehensive eulogy on him; and in a letter to Lafayette he writes: "Greene's death is an event which has given such general concern, and is so much regretted by his numerous friends that I can scarce persuade myself to touch upon it, even so far as to say that in him you lost a man who affectionately regarded, and was a sincere admirer of you." *

Other deaths pressed upon Washington's sensibility about

April, 1787, in the sixty-third year of his age. Though his income was greatly reduced by the confiscation of his property in Virginia, he contributed generously during the revolutionary war to the relief of American prisoners.—*Sparks' Washington's Writings*, v. ii., p. 53.

* We are happy to learn that a complete collection of the correspondence of General Greene is about to be published by his worthy and highly cultivated grandson, George Washington Greene. It is a work that, like Sparks' Writings of Washington, should form a part of every American library.

the same time. That of General McDougall, who had served his country faithfully through the war, and since with equal fidelity in Congress. That, too, of Colonel Tench Tilghman, for a long time one of Washington's aides-de-camp, and "who left," writes he, "as fair a reputation as ever belonged to a human character." "Thus," adds he, "some of the pillars of the Revolution fall. Others are mouldering by insensible degrees. May our country never want props to support the glorious fabric!"

In his correspondence about this time with several of the French noblemen who had been his associates in arms, his letters breathe the spirit of peace which was natural to him; for war with him had only been a matter of patriotism and public duty. To the Marquis de la Rouerie, who had so bravely but modestly fought under the title of Colonel Armand, he writes: "I never expect to draw my sword again. I can scarcely conceive the cause that would induce me to do it. My time is now occupied by rural amusements in which I have great satisfaction; and my first wish is (although it is against the profession of arms, and would clip the wings of some of our young soldiers who are soaring after glory) to see the whole world in peace, and the inhabitants of it as one band of brothers, striving who should contribute most to the happiness of mankind."

So, also, in a letter to Count Rochambeau, dated July 31st, 1786: "It must give pleasure," writes he, "to friends of humanity, even in this distant section of the globe, to find that the clouds which threatened to burst in a storm of war on Europe have dissipated, and left a still brighter horizon. * * * * * As the rage of conquest, which in times of barbarity stimulated nations to blood, has in a great measure ceased; as the objects which formerly gave birth to wars are daily diminishing; and as mankind are becoming more enlightened and humanized, I cannot but flatter myself with the pleasing prospect, that a more liberal policy and more pacific systems will take place amongst them. To indulge this idea affords a soothing consolation to a philanthropic mind; insomuch that, although it should be found an illusion, one would hardly wish to be divested of an error so grateful in itself and so innocent in its consequences."

And in another letter,—"It is thus, you see, my dear Count, in retirement upon my farm I speculate upon the fate of nations, amusing myself with innocent reveries that mankind will one day grow happier and better."

How easily may the wisest of men be deceived in their

speculations as to the future, especially when founded on the idea of the perfectibility of human nature. These halcyon dreams of universal peace were indulged on the very eve, as it were, of the French Revolution, which was to deluge the world in blood, and when the rage for conquest was to have unbounded scope under the belligerent sway of Napoleon.

CHAPTER XI.

Washington Doubts the Solidity of the Confederation—Correspondence with John Jay on the Subject—Plan of a Convention of all the States to Revise the Federal System—Washington Heads the Virginia Delegation—Insurrection in Massachusetts—The Convention—A Federal Constitution Organized—Ratified.

From his quiet retreat of Mount Vernon, Washington, though ostensibly withdrawn from public affairs, was watching with intense solicitude the working together of the several parts in the great political confederacy; anxious to know whether the thirteen distinct States, under the present organization, could form a sufficiently efficient general government. He was daily becoming more and more doubtful of the solidity of the fabric he had assisted to raise. The form of confederation which had bound the States together and met the public exigencies during the Revolution, when there was a pressure of external danger, was daily proving more and more incompetent to the purposes of a national government. Congress had devised a system of credit to provide for the national expenditure and the extinction of the national debts, which amounted to something more than forty millions of dollars. The system experienced neglect from some States and opposition from others; each consulting its local interests and prejudices, instead of the interests and obligations of the whole. In like manner treaty stipulations, which bound the good faith of the whole, were slighted, if not violated by individual States, apparently unconscious that they must each share in the discredit thus brought upon the national name.

In a letter to James Warren, who had formerly been President of the Massachusetts Provincial Congress, Washington writes: "The confederation appears to me to be little more than a shadow without the substance, and Congress a nugatory body; their ordinances being little attended to. To me

it is a solecism in politics; indeed, it is one of the most extraordinary things in nature, that we should confederate as a nation, and yet be afraid to give the rulers of that nation (who are creatures of our own making, appointed for a limited and short duration, and who are amenable for every action and may be recalled at any moment, and are subject to all the evils which they may be instrumental in producing) sufficient powers to order and direct the affairs of the same. By such policy as this the wheels of government are clogged, and our brightest prospects, and that high expectation which was entertained of us by the wondering world, are turned into astonishment; and from the high ground on which we stood, we are descending into the vale of confusion and darkness." *

Not long previous to the writing of this letter, Washington had been visited at Mount Vernon by commissioners, who had been appointed by the legislatures of Virginia and Maryland to form a compact relative to the navigation of the rivers Potomac and Pocomoke, and of part of the Chesapeake Bay, and who had met at Alexandria for the purpose. During their visit at Mount Vernon, the policy of maintaining a naval force on the Chesapeake, and of establishing a tariff of duties on imports to which the laws of both States should conform, was discussed, and it was agreed, that the commissioners should propose to the governments of their respective States the appointment of other commissioners, with powers to make conjoint arrangements for the above purposes; to which the assent of Congress was to be solicited.

The idea of conjoint arrangements between States, thus suggested in the quiet councils of Mount Vernon, was a step in the right direction, and will be found to lead to important results.

From a letter, written two or three months subsequently, we gather some of the ideas on national policy which were occupying Washington's mind. "I have ever been a friend to adequate powers in Congress, without which it is evident to me we never shall establish a national character, or be considered as on a respectable footing by the powers of Europe. —We are either a united people under one head and for federal purposes, or we are thirteen independent sovereignties, eternally counteracting each other.—If the former, whatever such a majority of the States as the constitution points out, conceives to be for the benefit of the whole, should, in my humble opinion, be submitted to by the minority.—I can

* Sparks, ix. 139.

foresee no evil greater than disunion; than those *unreasonable* jealousies (I say unreasonable, because I would have a *proper* jealousy always awake, and the United States on the watch to prevent individual States from infracting the constitution with impunity)which are continually poisoning our minds and filling them with imaginary evils for the prevention of real ones." *

An earnest correspondence took place some months subsequently between Washington and the illustrious patriot, John Jay, at that time Secretary of Foreign Affairs, wherein the signs of the times were feelingly discussed.

"Our affairs," writes Jay, "seem to lead to some crisis, something that I cannot foresee or conjecture. I am uneasy and apprehensive, more so than during the war. Then we had a fixed object, and though the means and time of obtaining it were problematical, yet I did firmly believe that we should ultimately succeed, because I did firmly believe that justice was with us. The case is now altered. We are going and doing wrong, and therefore I look forward to evils and calamities, but without being able to guess at the instrument, nature, or measure of them. * * * * * * * What I most fear is, that the better kind of people, by which I mean the people who are orderly and industrious, who are content with their situations, and not uneasy in their circumstances, will be led by the insecurity of property, the loss of public faith and rectitude, to consider the charms of liberty as imaginary and delusive. A state of uncertainty and fluctuation must disgust and alarm." Washington, in reply, coincided in opinion that public affairs were drawing rapidly to a crisis, and he acknowledged the event to be equally beyond his foresight. "We have errors," said he, "to correct. We have probably had too good an opinion of human nature in forming our confederation. Experience has taught us that men will not adopt and carry into execution measures the best calculated for their own good, without the intervention of coercive power. I do not conceive we can exist long as a nation, without lodging, somewhere, a power which will pervade the whole Union in as energetic a manner, as the authority of the State governments extends over the several States. To be fearful of investing Congress, constituted as that body is, with ample authorities for national purposes, appears to me the very climax of popular absurdity and madness. Could Congress exert them for the detriment of the

* See Letter to James McHenry. Sparks, ix. 121.

people, without injuring themselves in an equal or greater proportion? Are not their interests inseparably connected with those of their constituents? By the rotation of appointments must they not mingle frequently with the mass of the citizens? Is it not rather to be apprehended, if they were not possessed of the powers before described, that the individual members would be induced to use them, on many occasions, very timidly and inefficaciously, for fear of losing their popularity and future election? We must take human nature as we find it; perfection falls not to the share of mortals.

"What then is to be done? things cannot go on in the same strain for ever. It is much to be feared, as you observe, that the better kind of people, being disgusted with these circumstances, will have their minds prepared for any revolution whatever. We are apt to run from one extreme to another. * * * * I am told that even respectable characters speak of a monarchical form of government without horror. From thinking proceeds speaking, thence acting is often but a single step. But how irrevocable and tremendous! What a triumph for our enemies to verify their predictions! What a triumph for the advocates of despotism to find that we are incapable of governing ourselves, and that systems, founded on the basis of equal liberty, are merely ideal and fallacious! Would to God that wise measures may be taken in time to avert the consequences we have but too much reason to apprehend.

"Retired as I am from the world, I frankly acknowledge I cannot feel myself an unconcerned spectator. Yet, having happily assisted in bringing the ship into port, and, having been fairly discharged, it is not my business to embark again on the sea of troubles.

"Nor could it be expected that my sentiments and opinion would have much weight in the minds of my countrymen. They have been neglected, though given as a last legacy, in a most solemn manner. I then perhaps had some claims to public attention. I consider myself as having none at present."

His anxiety on this subject was quickened by accounts of discontents and commotions in the Eastern States produced by the pressure of the times, the public and private indebtedness, and the imposition of heavy taxes, at a moment of financial embarrassment.

General Knox, now Secretary at War, who had been sent by Congress to Massachusetts to inquire into these troubles, thus writes about the insurgents: "Their creed is that the

property of the United States has been protected from the confiscation of Britain by the joint exertions of *all*, and therefore ought to be *the common property of all*, and he that attempts opposition to this creed, is an enemy to equity and justice, and ought to be swept from off the face of the earth." Again: "They are determined to annihilate all debts, public and private, and have agrarian laws, which are easily effected by the means of unfunded paper, which shall be a tender in all cases whatever."

In reply to Colonel Henry Lee in Congress, who had addressed several letters to him on the subject, Washington writes: "You talk, my good sir, of employing influence to appease the present tumults in Massachusetts. I know not where that influence is to be found, or, if attainable, that it would be a proper remedy for the disorders. *Influence* is not *government*. Let us have a government by which our lives, liberties and properties will be secured, or let us know the worst at once. There is a call for decision. Know precisely what the insurgents aim at. If they have *real* grievances, redress them, if possible; or acknowledge the justice of them, and your inability to do it at the moment. If they have not, employ the force of government against them at once. If this is inadequate, *all* will be convinced that the superstructure is bad and wants support. To delay one or other of these expedients, is to exasperate on the one hand, or to give confidence on the other. * * * * Let the reins of government, then, be braced and held with a steady hand, and every violation of the constitution be reprehended. If defective, let it be amended; but not suffered to be trampled upon whilst it has an existence."

A letter to him from his former aide-de-camp, Colonel Humphreys, dated New Haven, November 1st, says: "The troubles in Massachusetts still continue. Government is prostrated in the dust, and it is much to be feared that there is not energy enough in that State to re-establish the civil powers. The leaders of the mob, whose fortunes and measures are desperate, are strengthening themselves daily; and it is expected that they will soon take possession of the Continental magazine at Springfield, in which there are from ten to fifteen thousand stand of arms in excellent order.

"A general want of compliance with the requisitions of Congress for money seems to prognosticate that we are rapidly advancing to a crisis. Congress, I am told, are seriously alarmed, and hardly know which way to turn or what to expect. Indeed, my dear General, nothing but a good Providence can extricate us from the present convulsion.

"In case of civil discord, I have already told you it was seriously my opinion that you could not remain neuter, and that you would be obliged, in self-defence, to take one part or the other, or withdraw from the continent. Your friends are of the same opinion."

Close upon the receipt of this letter, came intelligence that the insurgents of Massachusetts, far from being satisfied with the redress which had been offered by their general court, were still acting in open violation of law and government; and that the chief magistrate had been obliged to call upon the militia of the State to support the constitution.

"What, gracious God! is man," writes Washington, "that there should be such inconsistency and perfidiousness in his conduct. It was but the other day, that we were shedding our blood to obtain the constitutions under which we now live; constitutions of our own choice and making; and now we are unsheathing the sword to overturn them. The thing is so unaccountable, that I hardly know how to realize it, or to persuade myself that I am not under the illusion of a dream."

His letters to Knox show the trouble of his mind. "I feel, my dear General Knox, infinitely more than I can express to you, for the disorders which have arisen in these States. Good God! who, besides a tory, could have foreseen, or a Briton predicted them? I do assure you that, even at this moment, when I reflect upon the present prospect of our affairs, it seems to me to be like the vision of a dream. * * * * After what I have seen, or rather what I have heard, I shall be surprised at nothing; for, if three years since, any person had told me that there would have been such a formidable rebellion as exists at this day against the laws and constitution of our own making, I should have thought him a bedlamite, a fit subject for a madhouse. * * * In regretting, which I have often done with the keenest sorrow, the death of our much lamented friend, General Greene, I have accompanied it of late with a query, whether he would not have preferred such an exit, to the scenes which, it is more than probable, many of his compatriots may live to bemoan."

To James Madison, also, he writes in the same strain. "How melancholy is the reflection, that in so short a time we should have made such large strides towards fulfilling the predictions of our transatlantic foes! 'Leave them to themselves, and their government will soon dissolve.' Will not the wise and good strive hard to avert this evil? Or will their supineness suffer ignorance and the arts of self-interested and

designing, disaffected and desperate characters, to involve this great country in wretchedness and contempt? What stronger evidence can be given of the want of energy in our government than these disorders? If there is not power in it to check them, what security has a man for life, liberty, or property? To you, I am sure I need not add aught on the subject. The consequences of a lax or inefficient government are too obvious to be dwelt upon. Thirteen sovereignties pulling against each other, and all tugging at the federal head, will soon bring ruin on the whole; whereas, a liberal and energetic constitution, well checked and well watched, to prevent encroachments, might restore us to that degree of respectability and consequence to which we had the fairest prospect of attaining."

Thus Washington, even though in retirement, was almost unconsciously exercising a powerful influence on national affairs; no longer the soldier, he was now becoming the statesman. The opinion and counsels given in his letters were widely effective. The leading expedient for federate organization, mooted in his conferences with the commissioners of Maryland and Virginia, during their visit to Mount Vernon in the previous year, had been extended and ripened in legislative Assemblies, and ended in a plan of a convention composed of delegates from all the States, to meet in Philadelphia for the sole and express purpose of revising the federal system, and correcting its defects; the proceedings of the convention to be subsequently reported to Congress, and the several Legslatures, for approval and confirmation.

Washington was unanimously put at the head of the Virginia delegation; but for some time objected to accept the nomination. He feared to be charged with inconsistency in again appearing in a public situation, after his declared resolution to the contrary. "It will have also," said he, "a tendency to sweep me back into the tide of public affairs, when retirement and ease are so much desired by me, and so essentially necessary."* Beside, he had just avowed his intention of resigning the presidency of the Cincinnati Society, which was to hold its triennial meeting in May, in Philadelphia, and he could not appear at the same time and place on any other occasion, without giving offence to his worthy companions in arms, the late officers of the American army.

These considerations were strenuously combated, for the weight and influence of his name and counsel were felt to be

* Letter to Edmund Randolph, governor of Virginia.

all important in giving dignity to the delegation. Two things contributed to bring him to a favorable decision: First, an insinuation that the opponents of the convention were monarchists, who wished the distractions of the country should continue, until a monarchical government might be resorted to as an ark of safety. The other was the insurrection in Massachusetts.

Having made up his mind to serve as a delegate to the convention, he went into a course of preparatory reading on history and general principles of ancient and modern confederacies. An abstract of the general principles of each with notes of their vices or defects, exists in his own handwriting, among his papers; though it is doubted, by a judicious commentator * whether it was originally drawn up by him, as several works are cited, which are written in languages that he did not understand.

Before the time arrived for the meeting of the convention, which was the second Monday in May, his mind was relieved from one source of poignant solicitude, by learning that the insurrection in Massachusetts had been suppressed with but little bloodshed, and that the principals had fled to Canada. He doubted, however, the policy of the Legislature of the State in disfranchising a large number of citizens for their rebellious conduct; thinking more lenient measures might have produced as good an effect, without entirely alienating the affections of the people from the government; beside depriving some of them of the means of gaining a livelihood.

On the 9th of May, Washington set out in his carriage from Mount Vernon to attend the convention. At Chester, where he arrived on the 13th, he was met by General Mifflin, now speaker of the Pennsylvania Assembly, Generals Knox and Varnum, Colonel Humphreys, and other personages of note. At Gray's Ferry the city light-horse were in attendance, by whom he was escorted into Philadelphia.

It was not until the 25th of May that a sufficient number of delegates were assembled to form a quorum; when they proceeded to organize the body, and by a unanimous vote Washington was called up to the chair as President.

The following anecdote is recorded by Mr. Leigh Pierce, who was a delegate from Georgia. When the convention first opened, there were a number of propositions brought forward as great leading principles of the new government to be established. A copy of them was given to each member

* Mr. Sparks. For this interesting document see Writings of Washington, vol. iv. Appendix, No. iv.

with an injunction of profound secrecy. One morning a member, by accident, dropped his copy of the propositions. It was luckily picked up by General Mifflin, and handed to General Washington, who put it in his pocket. After the debates of the day were over, and the question for adjournment was called for, Washington rose, and previous to putting the question, addressed the committee as follows: "Gentlemen, I am sorry to find that some one member of this body has been so neglectful of the secrets of the convention, as to drop in the State House a copy of their proceedings; which, by accident, was picked up and delivered to me this morning. I must entreat gentlemen to be more careful, lest our transactions get into the newspapers, and disturb the public repose by premature speculations. I know not whose paper it is, but there it is (throwing it down on the table); let him who owns it take it." At the same time he bowed, took his hat, and left the room with a dignity so severe that every person seemed alarmed. "For my part, I was extremely so, adds Mr. Pierce, "for, putting my hand in my pocket, I missed my copy of the same paper; but advancing to the table, my fears soon disappeared. I found it to be in the handwriting of another person."

Mr. Pierce found his copy at his lodgings, in the pocket of a coat which he had changed that morning. No person ever ventured to claim the anonymous paper.

We forbear to go into the voluminous proceedings of this memorable convention, which occupied from four to seven hours each day for four months; and in which every point was the subject of able and scrupulous discussion by the best talent, and noblest spirits of the country. Washington felt restrained by his situation as President, from taking a part in the debates, but his well-known opinions influenced the whole. The result was the formation of the constitution of the United States, which (with some amendments made in after years) still exists.

As the members on the last day of the session were signing the engrossed constitution, Dr. Franklin, looking towards the President's chair, at the back of which a sun was painted, observed to those persons next to him, "I have often and often, in the course of the session, and the vicissitudes of my hopes and fears as to its issue, looked at the sun behind the President, without being able to tell whether it was rising or setting; at length I have the happiness to know it is a rising and not a setting sun." *

* The Madison Papers, iii. 1624.

"The business being closed," says Washington in his diary (Sept. 17), "the members adjourned to the city tavern, dined together, and took a cordial leave of each other. After which I returned to my lodgings, did some business with, and received the papers from, the secretary of the convention, and retired to meditate on the momentous work which had been executed."

"It appears to me little short of miracle," writes he to Lafayette, "that the delegates from so many States, different from each other, as you know, in their manners, circumstances and prejudices, should unite in forming a system of national government so little liable to well-founded objections. Nor am I such an enthusiastic, partial, or undiscriminating admirer of it, as not to perceive it is tinctured with some real, though not radical defects. With regard to the two great points, the pivots upon which the whole machine must move, my creed is simply, First, that the general government is not invested with more powers than are indispensably necessary to perform the functions of a good government; and consequently, that no objection ought to be made against the quantity of power delegated to it.

"Secondly, that these powers, as the appointment of all rulers will forever arise from, and at short, stated intervals recur to, the free suffrages of the people, are so distributed among the legislative, executive, and judicial branches into which the general government is arranged, that it can never be in danger of degenerating into a monarchy, an oligarchy, an aristocracy, or any other despotic or oppressive form, so long as there shall remain any virtue in the body of the people.

"It will at least be a recommendation to the proposed constitution, that it is provided with more checks and barriers against the introduction of tyranny, and those of a nature less liable to be surmounted, than any government hitherto instituted among mortals."

"We are not to expect perfection in this world; but mankind, in modern times, have apparently made some progress in the science of government. Should that which is now offered to the people of America, be found on experiment less perfect than it can be made, a constitutional door is left open for its amelioration."

The constitution thus formed, was forwarded to Congress, and thence transmitted to the State Legislatures, each of which submitted it to a State convention composed of delegates chosen for that express purpose by the people. The

ratification of the instrument by nine States was necessary to carry it into effect; and as the several State conventions would assemble at different times, nearly a year must elapse before the decisions of the requisite number could be obtained.

During this time, Washington resumed his retired life at Mount Vernon, seldom riding, as he says, beyond the limits of his own farms, but kept informed by his numerous correspondents, such as James Madison, John Jay, and Generals Knox, Lincoln and Armstrong, of the progress of the constitution through its various ordeals, and of the strenuous opposition which it met with in different quarters; both in debate and through the press. A diversity of opinions and inclinations on the subject had been expected by him. "The various passions and motives by which men are influenced," said he, "are concomitants of fallibility, and ingrafted into our nature." Still he never had a doubt that it would ultimately be adopted; and, in fact, the national decision in its favor was more fully and strongly pronounced than even he had anticipated.

His feelings on learning the result were expressed with that solemn and religious faith in the protection of heaven, manifested by him in all the trials and vicissitudes through which his country had passed. "We may," said he, "with a kind of pious and grateful exultation, trace the finger of Providence through those dark and mysterious events, which first induced the States to appoint a general convention, and then led them, one after another, by such steps as were best calculated to effect the object, into an adoption of the system recommended by the general convention; thereby, in all human probability, laying a lasting foundation for tranquillity and happiness, when we had but too much reason to fear, that confusion and misery were coming rapidly upon us."*

The testimonials of ratification having been recived by Congress from a sufficient number of States, an act was passed by that body on the 13th of September, appointing the first Wednesday in January, 1789, for the people of the United States to choose electors of a President according to the constitution, and the first Wednesday in the month of February following for the electors to meet and make a choice. The meeting of the government was to be on the first Wednesday in March, and in the city of New York.

* Letter to Jonathan Trumbull, 20th July, 1788.

CHAPTER XII.

Washington talked of for the Presidency—His Letters on the Subject Expressing his Reluctance—His Election—His Progress to the Seat of Government—His Reception at New York—The Inauguration.

The adoption of the Federal constitution was another epoch in the life of Washington. Before the official forms of an election could be carried into operation, a unanimous sentiment throughout the Union pronounced him the nation's choice to fill the presidential chair. He looked forward to the possibility of his election with characteristic modesty and unfeigned reluctance; as his letters to his confidential friends bear witness. "It has no fascinating allurements for me," writes he to Lafayette. "At my time of life and under my circumstances, the increasing infirmities of nature and the growing love of retirement do not permit me to entertain a wish beyond that of living and dying an honest man on my own farm. Let those follow the pursuits of ambition and fame who have a keener relish for them, or who may have more years in store for the enjoyment."

Colonel Henry Lee had written to him warmly and eloquently on the subject. "My anxiety is extreme that the new government may have an auspicious beginning. To effect this and to perpetuate a nation formed under your auspices, it is certain that again you will be called forth. The same principles of devotion to the good of mankind which have invariably governed your conduct, will no doubt continue to rule your mind, however opposite their consequences may be to your repose and happiness. If the same success should attend your efforts on this important occasion which has distinguished you hitherto, then to be sure you will have spent a life which Providence rarely, if ever, gave to the lot of one man. It is my belief, it is my anxious hope, that this will be the case."

"The event to which you allude may never happen," replies Washington. "This consideration alone would supersede the expediency of announcing any definitive and irrevocable resolution. You are among the small number of those who know my invincible attachment to domestic life, and that my sincerest wish is to continue in the enjoyment of it solely until my final hour. But the world would be neither so well

instructed, nor so candidly disposed as to believe me uninfluenced by sinister motives, in case any circumstance should render a deviation from the line of conduct I had prescribed to myself indispensable.

"Should my unfeigned reluctance to accept the office be overcome by a deference for the reason and opinions of my friends; might I not, after the declarations I have made (and Heaven knows they were made in the sincerity of my heart,) in the judgment of the impartial world and of posterity, be chargeable with levity and inconsistency, if not with rashness and ambition? Nay, farther, would there not be some apparent foundation for the two former charges? Now justice to myself, and tranquillity of conscience require, that I should act a part, if not above imputation, at least capable of vindication. Nor will you conceive me to be too solicitous for reputation. Though I prize as I ought the good opinion of my fellow-citizens, yet, if I know myself, I would not seek popularity at the expense of one social duty or moral virtue.

"While doing what my conscience informed me was right, as it respected my God, my country and myself, I should despise all the party clamor and unjust censure, which must be expected from some, whose personal enmity might be occasioned by their hostility to the government. I am conscious, that I fear alone to give any real occasion for obloquy, and that I do not dread to meet with unmerited reproach. And certain I am, whensoever I shall be convinced the good of my country requires my reputation to be put in risk, regard for my own fame will not come in competition with an object of so much magnitude.

"If I declined the task, it would lie upon quite another principle. Notwithstanding my advanced season of life, my increasing fondness for agricultural amusements, and my growing love of retirement, augment and confirm my decided predilection for the character of a private citizen, yet it would be no one of these motives, nor the hazard to which my former reputation might be exposed, nor the terror of encountering new fatigues and troubles, that would deter me from an acceptance; but a belief, that some other person, who had less pretence and less inclination to be excused, could execute all the duties full as satisfactorily as myself."

In a letter to Colonel Alexander Hamilton he writes: "In taking a survey of the subject, in whatever point of light I have been able to place it, I have always felt a kind of gloom upon my mind, as often as I have been taught to expect I

might, and perhaps must ere long, be called upon to make a decision. You will, I am well assured, believe the assertion, though I have little expectation it would gain credit from those who are less acquainted with me, that, if I should receive the appointment, and, if I should be prevailed upon to accept it, the acceptance would be attended with more diffidence and reluctance than ever I experienced before in my life. It would be, however, with a fixed and sole determination of lending whatever assistance might be in my power to promote the public weal, in hopes that, at a convenient and early period, my services might be dispensed with, and that I might be permitted once more to retire, to pass an unclouded evening, after the stormy day of life, in the bosom of domestic tranquillity."

To Lafayette he declares that his difficulties increase and multiply as he draws toward the period when, according to common belief, it will be necessary for him to give a definitive answer as to the office in question.

"Should circumstances render it in a manner inevitably necessary to be in the affirmative," writes he, "I shall assume the task with the most unfeigned reluctance, and with a real diffidence, for which I shall probably receive no credit from the world. If I know my own heart, nothing short of a conviction of duty will induce me again to take an active part in public affairs; and in that case, if I can form a plan for my own conduct, my endeavors shall be unremittingly exerted, even at the hazard of former fame or present popularity, to extricate my country from the embarrassments in which it is entangled through want of credit; and to establish a general system of policy, which if pursued will ensure permanent felicity to the commonwealth. I think I see a path clear and direct as a ray of light, which leads to the attainment of that object. Nothing but harmony, honesty, industry, and frugality, are necessary to make us a great and happy people. Happily the present posture of affairs, and the prevailing disposition of my countrymen, promise to co-operate in establishing those four great and essential pillars of public felicity."

The election took place at the appointed time, and it was soon ascertained that Washington was chosen President for the term of four years from the 4th of March. By this time the arguments and entreaties of his friends, and his own convictions of public expediency, had determined him to accept; and he made preparations to depart for the seat of government, as soon as he should receive official notice of his election. Among other duties, he paid a visit to his mother at Freder-

icksburg; it was a painful, because likely to be a final one, for she was afflicted with a malady which, it was evident, must soon terminate her life. Their parting was affectionate, but solemn; she had always been reserved and moderate in expressing herself in regard to the successes of her son; but it must have been a serene satisfaction at the close of her life to see him elevated by his virtues to the highest honor of his country.

From a delay in forming a quorum of Congress the votes of the electoral college were not counted until early in April, when they were found to be unanimous in favor of Washington. "The delay," said he, in a letter to General Knox, "may be compared to a reprieve; for in confidence I tell you (with the *world* it would obtain little credit), that my movements to the chair of government will be accompanied by feelings not unlike those of a culprit, who is going to the place of his execution; so unwilling am I, in the evening of a life nearly consumed in public cares, to quit a peaceful abode for an ocean of difficulties, without that competency of political skill, abilities and inclination, which are necessary to manage the helm. I am sensible that I am embarking the voice of the people, and a good name of my own, on this voyage; but what returns will be made for them, heaven alone can foretell. Integrity and firmness are all I can promise. These, be the voyage long or short, shall never forsake me, although I may be deserted by all men; for of the consolations, which are to be derived from these, under any circumstances, the world cannot deprive me."

At length, on the 14th of April, he received a letter from the president of Congress, duly notifying him of his election; and he prepared to set out immediately for New York, the seat of government. An entry in his diary, dated the 16th, says, "About ten o'clock I bade adieu to Mount Vernon, to private life, and to domestic felicity; and with a mind oppressed with more anxious and painful sensations than I have words to express, set out for New York with the best disposition to render service to my country in obedience to its call, but with less hope of answering its expectations."

At the first stage of his journey a trial of his tenderest feelings awaited him in a public dinner given him at Alexandria, by his neighbors and personal friends, among whom he had lived in the constant interchange of kind offices, and who were so aware of the practical beneficence of his private character. A deep feeling of regret mingled with their festivity. The mayor, who presided, and spoke the sentiments of the

people of Alexandria, deplored in his departure the loss of the first and best of their citizens, the ornament of the aged, the model of the young, the improver of their agriculture; the friend of their commerce, the protector of their infant academy, the benefactor of their poor,—but "go," added he, "and make a grateful people happy, who will be doubly grateful when they contemplate this new sacrifice for their interests."

Washington was too deeply affected for many words in reply. "Just after having bade adieu to my domestic connections," said he, "this tender proof of your friendship is but too well calculated to awaken still further my sensibility, and increase my regret at parting from the enjoyments of private life. All that now remains for me is to commit myself and you to the care of that beneficent Being, who, on a former occasion, happily brought us together after a long and distressing separation. Perhaps the same gracious Providence will again indulge me. But words fail me. Unutterable sensations must, then, be left to more expressive silence, while from an aching heart I bid all my affectionate friends and kind neighbors farewell!"

His progress to the seat of government was a continual ovation. The ringing of bells and roaring of cannonry proclaimed his course through the country. The old and young, women and children, thronged the highways to bless and welcome him. Deputations of the most respectable inhabitants from the principal places came forth to meet and escort him. At Baltimore, on his arrival and departure, his carriage was attended by a numerous cavalcade of citizens, and he was saluted by the thunder of artillery.

At the frontier of Pennsylvania he was met by his former companion in arms, Mifflin, now governor of the State, who with Judge Peters and a civil and military escort, was waiting to receive him. Washington had hoped to be spared all military parade, but found it was not to be evaded. At Chester, where he stopped to breakfast, there were preparations for a public entrance into Philadelphia. Cavalry had assembled from the surrounding country; a superb white horse was led out for Washington to mount, and a grand procession set forward, with General St. Clair of revolutionary notoriety at its head. It gathered numbers as it advanced; passed under triumphal arches entwined with laurel, and entered Philadelphia amid the shouts of the multitude.

A day of public festivity succeeded, ended by a display of fireworks. Washington's reply to the congratulations of the mayor at a great civic banquet, spoke the genuine feelings of

his modest nature, amid these testimonials of a world's applause. "When I contemplate the interposition of Providence, as it was visibly manifested in guiding us through the Revolution, in preparing us for the reception of the general government, and in conciliating the good will of the people of America towards one another after its adoption, I feel myself oppressed and almost overwhelmed with a sense of divine munificence. I feel that nothing is due to my personal agency in all those wonderful and complicated events, except what can be attributed to an honest zeal for the good of my country."

We question whether any of these testimonials of a nation's gratitude affected Washington more sensibly than those he received at Trenton. It was on a sunny afternoon when he arrived on the banks of the Delaware, where, twelve years before, he had crossed in darkness and storm, through clouds of snow and drifts of floating ice, on his daring attempt to strike a blow at a triumphant enemy.

Here at present all was peace and sunshine, the broad river flowed placidly along, and crowds awaited him on the opposite bank, to hail him with love and transport.

We will not dwell on the joyous ceremonials with which he was welcomed, but there was one too peculiar to be omitted. The reader may remember Washington's gloomy night on the banks of the Assunpink, which flows through Trenton; the camp fires of Cornwallis in front of him; the Delaware full of floating ice in the rear; and his sudden resolve on the midnight retreat which turned the fortunes of the campaign. On the bridge crossing that eventful stream, the ladies of Trenton had caused a triumphal arch to be erected. It was entwined with evergreens and laurels, and bore the inscription, "The defender of the mothers will be the protector of the daughters." At this bridge the matrons of the city were assembled to pay him reverence; and as he passed under the arch, a number of young girls, dressed in white and crowned with garlands, strewed flowers before him, singing an ode expressive of their love and gratitude. Never was ovation more graceful, touching and sincere; and Washington, tenderly affected, declared that the impression of it on his heart could never be effaced.

His whole progress through New Jersey, must have afforded a similar contrast to his weary marchings to and fro, harassed by doubts and perplexities, with bale fires blazing on its hills, instead of festive illuminations, and when the ringing of bells and booming of cannon, now so joyous, were the signals of invasion and maraud.

In respect to his reception at New York, Washington had signified in a letter to Governor Clinton, that none could be so congenial to his feelings as a quiet entry devoid of ceremony; but his modest wishes were not complied with. At Elizabethtown Point, a committee of both Houses of Congress, with various civic functionaries, waited by appointment to receive him. He embarked on board of a splendid barge, constructed for the occasion. It was manned by thirteen branch pilots, masters of vessels, in white uniforms, and commanded by Commodore Nicholson. Other barges fancifully decorated followed, having on board the heads of departments and other public officers, and several distinguished citizens. As they passed through the strait between the Jerseys and Staten Island, called the Kills, other boats decorated with flags fell in their wake, until the whole, forming a nautical procession, swept up the broad and beautiful bay of New York, to the sound of instrumental music. On board of two vessels were parties of ladies and gentlemen who sang congratulatory odes as Washington's barge approached. The ships at anchor in the harbor, dressed in colors, fired salutes as it passed. One alone, the Galveston, a Spanish man-of-war, displayed no signs of gratulation, until the barge of the general was nearly abreast; when suddenly as if by magic, the yards were manned, the ship burst forth, as it were, into a full array of flags and signals, and thundered a salute of thirteen guns.

He approached the landing place of Murray's Wharf, amid the ringing of bells, the roaring of cannonry, and the shouting of multitudes collected on every pier-head. On landing, he was received by Governor Clinton. General Knox, too, who had taken such affectionate leave of him on his retirement from military life, was there to welcome him in his civil capacity. Other of his fellow-soldiers of the Revolution were likewise there, mingled with the civic dignitaries. At this juncture, an officer stepped up and requested Washington's orders, announcing himself as commanding his guard. Washington desired him to proceed according to the directions he might have received in the present arrangements, but that for the future the affection of his fellow-citizens was all the guard he wanted.

Carpets had been spread to a carriage prepared to convey him to his destined residence, but he preferred to walk. He was attended by a long civil and military train. In the streets through which he passed the houses were decorated with flags, silken banners, garlands of flowers and evergreens, and

bore his name in every form of ornament. The streets were crowded with people, so that it was with difficulty a passage could be made by the city officers. Washington frequently bowed to the multitude as he passed, taking off his hat to the ladies, who thronged every window, waving their handkerchiefs, throwing flowers before him, and many of them shedding tears of enthusiasm.

That day he dined with his old friend Governor Clinton, who had invited a numerous company of public functionaries and foreign diplomatists to meet him, and in the evening the city was brilliantly illuminated.

Would the reader know the effect upon Washington's mind of this triumphant entry into New York? It was to depress rather than to excite him. Modestly diffident of his abilities to cope with the new duties on which he was entering, he was overwhelmed by what he regarded as proofs of public expectation. Noting in his diary the events of the day, he writes: "The display of boats which attended and joined us on this occasion, some with vocal and some with instrumental music on board; the decorations of the ships, the roar of cannon, and the loud acclamations of the people which rent the skies, as I passed along the wharves, filled my mind with sensations as painful (considering the reverse of this scene, which may be the case after all my labors to do good) as they are pleasing."

The inauguration was delayed for several days in which a question arose as to the form or title by which the President elect was to be addressed; and a committee in both Houses was appointed to report upon the subject. The question was stated without Washington's privity, and contrary to his desire; as he feared that any title might awaken the sensitive jealousy of republicans, at a moment when it was all-important to conciliate public good-will to the new form of government. It was a relief to him, therefore, when it was finally resolved that the address should be simply "the President of the United States," without any addition of title; a judicious form which has remained to the present day.

The inauguration took place on the 30th of April. At nine o'clock in the morning, there were religious services in all the churches, and prayers put up for the blessing of Heaven on the new government. At twelve o'clock the city troops paraded before Washington's door, and soon after the committees of Congress and heads of departments came in their carriages. At half-past twelve the procession moved forward, preceded by the troops, next came the committees and heads of depart-

ments in their carriages; then Washington in a coach of state, his aide-de-camp, Colonel Humphreys, and his secretary, Mr. Lear, in his own carriage. The foreign ministers and a long train of citizens brought up the rear.

About two hundred yards before reaching the hall, Washington and his suite alighted from their carriages, and passed through the troops, who were drawn up on each side, into the hall and senate chamber, where the Vice President, the Senate and House of Representatives were assembled. The Vice President, John Adams, recently inaugurated, advanced and conducted Washington to a chair of state at the upper end of the room. A solemn silence prevailed; when the Vice President rose, and informed him that all things were prepared for him to take the oath of office required by the constitution.

The oath was to be administered by the Chancellor of the State of New York, in a balcony in front of the senate chamber, and in full view of an immense multitude occupying the street, the windows, and even roofs of the adjacent houses. The balcony formed a kind of open recess, with lofty columns supporting the roof. In the center was a table with a covering of crimson velvet, upon which lay a superbly bound Bible on a crimson velvet cushion. This was all the paraphernalia for the august scene.

All eyes were fixed upon the balcony, when, at the appointed hour, Washington made his appearance, accompanied by various public functionaries, and members of the Senate and House of Representatives. He was clad in a full suit of dark-brown cloth, of American manufacture, with a steel-hilted dress sword, white silk stockings, and silver shoe-buckles. His hair was dressed and powered in the fashion of the day, and worn in a bag and solitaire.

His entrance on the balcony was hailed by universal shouts. He was evidently moved by this demonstration of public affection. Advancing to the front of the balcony, he laid his hand upon his heart, bowed several times, and then retreated to an arm-chair near the table. The populace appeared to understand that the scene had overcome him; and were hushed at once into profound silence.

After a few moments Washington rose and again came forward. John Adams, the Vice President, stood on his right; on his left the Chancellor of the State, Robert R. Livingston; somewhat in the rear were Roger Sherman, Alexander Hamilton, Generals Knox, St. Clair, the Baron Steuben and others.

The chancellor advanced to administer the oath prescribed by the constitution, and Mr. Otis, the secretary of the Senate,

held up the Bible on its crimson cushion. The oath was read slowly and distinctly; Washington at the same time laying his hand on the open Bible. When it was concluded, he replied solemnly, "I swear—so help me God!" Mr. Otis would have raised the Bible to his lips, but he bowed down reverently and kissed it.

The chancellor now stepped forward, waved his hand and exclaimed, "Long live George Washington, President of the United States!" At this moment a flag was displayed on the cupola of the hall; on which signal there was a general discharge of artillery on the battery. All the bells in the city rang out a joyful peal, and the multitude rent the air with acclamations.

Washington again bowed to the people and returned into the senate chamber, where he delivered, to both Houses of Congress, his inaugural address, characterized by his usual modesty, moderation and good sense, but uttered with a voice deep, slightly tremulous, and so low as to demand close attention in the listeners. After this he proceeded with the whole assemblage on foot to St. Paul's church, where prayers suited to the occasion were read by Dr. Prevost, Bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church in New York, who had been appointed by the Senate one of the chaplains of Congress. So closed the ceremonies of the inauguration.

The whole day was one of sincere rejoicing, and in the evening there were brilliant illuminations and fireworks.

We have been accustomed to look to Washington's private letters for the sentiments of his heart. Those written to several of his friends immediately after his inauguration, show how little he was excited by his official elevation. "I greatly fear," writes he, "that my countrymen will expect too much from me. I fear, if the issue of public measures should not correspond with their sanguine expectations, they will turn the extravagant, and I might almost say undue praises, which they are heaping upon me at this moment, into equally extravagant, though I will fondly hope unmerited censures."

Little was his modest spirit aware that the praises so dubiously received were but the opening notes of a theme that was to increase from age to age, to pervade all lands and endure throughout all generations.

In the volumes here concluded, * we have endeavored to narrate faithfully the career of Washington from childhood,

*Volume IV of the original edition closed at this point.

through his early surveying expeditions in the wilderness, his diplomatic mission to the French posts on the frontier, his campaigns in the French war, his arduous trials as commander-in-chief, throughout the Revolution, the noble simplicity of his life in retirement, until we have shown him elevated to the presidential chair, by no effort of his own, in a manner against his wishes, by the unanimous vote of a grateful country.

The plan of our work has necessarily carried us widely into the campaigns of the Revolution, even where Washington was not present in person; for his spirit pervaded and directed the whole, and a general knowledge of the whole is necessary to appreciate the sagacity, forecast, enduring fortitude, and comprehensive wisdom with which he conducted it. He himself has signified to one who aspired to write his biography, that any memoirs of his life distinct and unconnected with the history of the war, would be unsatisfactory. In treating of the Revolution, we have endeavored to do justice to what we consider its most striking characteristic; the greatness of the object and the scantiness of the means. We have endeavored to keep in view the prevailing poverty of resources, the scandalous neglects, the squalid miseries of all kinds, with which its champions had to contend in their expeditions through trackless wildernesses, or thinly peopled regions; beneath scorching suns or inclement skies; their wintry marches to be traced by bloody footprints on snow and ice; their desolate wintry encampments, rendered still more desolate by nakedness and famine. It was in the patience and fortitude with which these ills were sustained by a half-disciplined yeomanry, voluntary exiles from their homes, destitute of all the "pomp and circumstance" of war to excite them, and animated solely by their patriotism, that we read the noblest and most affecting characteristics of that great struggle for human rights. They do wrong to its moral grandeur, who seek by commonplace exaggeration, to give a melo-dramatic effect and false glare to its military operations, and to place its greatest triumphs in the conflicts of the field. Lafayette showed a true sense of the nature of the struggle, when Napoleon, accustomed to effect ambitious purposes by hundreds of thousands of troops, and tens of thousands of slain, sneered at the scanty armies of the American Revolution and its "boasted allies." "Sire," was the admirable and comprehensive reply, "it was the grandest of causes won by skirmishes of sentinels and outposts."

In regard to the character and conduct of Washington, we have endeavored to place his deeds in the clearest light, and

left them to speak for themselves, generally avoiding comment or eulogium. We have quoted his own words and writings largely, to explain his feelings and motives, and give the true key to his policy; for never did man leave a more truthful mirror of his heart and mind, and a more thorough exponent of his conduct, than he has left in his copious correspondence. There his character is to be found in all its majestic simplicity, its massive grandeur, and quiet colossal strength. He was no hero of romance; there was nothing of romantic heroism in his nature. As a warrior, he was incapable of fear, but made no merit of defying danger. He fought for a cause, but not for personal renown. Gladly, when he had won the cause, he hung up his sword never again to take it down. Glory, that blatant word, which haunts some military minds like the bray of the trumpet, formed no part of his aspirations. To act justly was his instinct, to promote the public weal his constant effort, to deserve the "affections of good men" his ambition. With such qualifications for the pure exercise of sound judgment and comprehensive wisdom, he ascended the presidential chair.

There for the present we leave him. So far our work is complete, comprehending the whole military life of Washington, and his agency in public affairs, up to the formation of our constitution. How well we have executed it, we leave to the public to determine; hoping to find it, as heretofore, far more easily satisfied with the result of our labors than we are ourselves. Should the measure of health and good spirits, with which a kind Providence has blessed us beyond the usual term of literary labor, be still continued, we may go on, and in another volume, give the presidential career and closing life of Washington. In the mean time, having found a resting-place in our task, we stay our hands, lay by our pen, and seek that relaxation and repose which gathering years require.

Sunnyside 1857. **W. I.**

CHAPTER XIII.

The New Government—Domestic and Foreign Relations—Washington's Anxious Position—Its Difficulties—Without Cabinet or Constitutional Adviser—John Jay—Hamilton—His Efficient Support of the Constitution and Theoretic Doubts—James Madison—Knox—His Characteristics.

The eyes of the world were upon Washington at the commencement of his administration. He had won laurels in the field: would they continue to flourish in the cabinet? His position was surrounded by difficulties. Inexperienced in the duties of civil administration, he was to inaugurate a new and untried system of government, composed of States and people, as yet a mere experiment, to which some looked forward with buoyant confidence,—many with doubt and apprehension.

He had moreover a high-spirited people to manage, in whom a jealous passion for freedom and independence had been strengthened by war, and who might bear with impatience even the restraints of self-imposed government. The constitution which he was to inaugurate had met with vehement opposition, when under discussion in the general and State governments. Only three States, New Jersey, Delaware and Georgia, had accepted it unanimously. Several of the most important States had adopted it by a mere majority; five of them under an expressed expectation of specified amendments or modifications; while two States, Rhode Island and North Carolina, still stood aloof.

It is true, the irritation produced by the conflict of opinions in the general and State conventions, had, in a great measure, subsided; but circumstances might occur to inflame it anew. A diversity of opinions still existed concerning the new government. Some feared that it would have too little control over the individual States; that the political connection would prove too weak to preserve order and prevent civil strife: others, that it would be too strong for their separate independence, and would tend towards consolidation and despotism.

The very extent of the country he was called upon to govern, ten times larger than that of any previous republic, must have pressed with weight upon Washington's mind. It presented to the Atlantic a front of fifteen hundred miles,

divided into individual States, differing in the forms of their local governments, differing from each other in interests, in territorial magnitudes, in the amount of population, in manners, soils, climates and productions, and the characteristics of their several peoples.

Beyond the Alleghanies extended regions almost boundless, as yet for the most part wild and uncultivated, the asylum of roving Indians and restless, discontented white men. Vast tracts, however, were rapidly being peopled, and would soon be portioned into sections requiring local governments. The great natural outlets for the exportation of the products of this region of inexhaustible fertility, was the Mississippi; but Spain opposed a barrier to the free navigation of this river. Here was peculiar cause of solicitude. Before leaving Mount Vernon, Washington had heard that the hardy yeomanry of the far West were becoming impatient of this barrier, and indignant at the apparent indifference of Congress to their prayers for its removal. He had heard, moreover, that British emissaries were fostering these discontents, sowing the seeds of disaffection, and offering assistance to the Western people to seize on the city of New Orleans and fortify the mouth of the Mississippi; while, on the other hand, the Spanish authorities at New Orleans were represented as intriguing to effect a separation of the Western territory from the Union, with a view or hope of attaching it to the dominion of Spain.

Great Britain, too, was giving grounds for territorial solicitude in these distant quarters by retaining possession of the Western posts, the surrender of which had been stipulated by treaty. Her plea was, that debts due to British subjects, for which by the same treaty the United States were bound, remained unpaid. This the Americans alleged was a mere pretext; the real object of their retention being the monopoly of the fur trade; and to the mischievous influence exercised by these posts over the Indian tribes, was attributed much of the hostile disposition manifested by the latter along the Western frontier.

While these brooding causes of anxiety existed at home, the foreign commerce of the Union was on a most unsatisfactory footing, and required prompt and thorough attention. It was subject to maraud, even by the corsairs of Algiers, Tunis and Tripoli, who captured American merchant vessels and carried their crews into slavery; no treaty having yet been made with any of the Barbary powers excepting Morocco.

To complete the perplexities which beset the new govern-

ment, the finances of the country were in a lamentable state. There was no money in the treasury. The efforts of the former government to pay or fund its debts, had failed; there was a universal state of indebtedness, foreign and domestic, and public credit was prostrate.

Such was the condition of affairs when Washington entered upon his new field of action. He was painfully aware of the difficulties and dangers of an undertaking in which past history and past experience afforded no precedents. "I walk, as it were, on untrodden ground," said he; "so many untoward circumstances may intervene in such a new and critical situation, that I shall feel an insuperable diffidence in my own abilities. I feel, in the execution of my arduous office, how much I shall stand in need of the countenance and aid of every friend to myself, of every friend to the revolution, and of every lover of good government."*

As yet he was without the support of constitutional advisers, the departments under the new government not being organized; he could turn with confidence, however, for counsel in an emergency to John Jay, who still remained at the head of affairs, where he had been placed in 1784. He was sure of sympathy also in his old comrade, General Knox, who continued to officiate as secretary of war; while the affairs of the treasury were managed by a board, consisting of Samuel Osgood, Walter Livingston, and Arthur Lee. Among the personal friends not in office, to whom Washington felt that he could safely have recourse for aid in initiating the new government, was Alexander Hamilton. It is true, many had their doubts of his sincere adhesion to it. In the convention in Philadelphia, he had held up the British constitution as a model to be approached as nearly as possible, by blending some of the advantages of monarchy with the republican form. The form finally adopted was too low-toned for him; he feared it might prove feeble and inefficient; but he voted for it as the best attainable, advocated it in the State convention in New York, and in a series of essays, collectively known as The Federalist, written conjunctively with Madison and Jay; and it was mainly through his efforts as a speaker and a writer that the constitution was ultimately accepted. Still many considered him at heart a monarchist, and suspected him of being secretly bent upon bringing the existing government to the monarchical form. In this they did him injustice. He still continued, it is true, to doubt whether the republican

* Letter to Edward Rutledge.

theory would admit of a vigorous execution of the laws, but was clear that it ought to be adhered to as long as there was any chance for its success. "The idea of a perfect equality of political rights among the citizens, exclusive of all permanent or hereditary distinctions," had not hitherto, he thought, from an imperfect structure of the government, had a fair trial, and "was of a nature to engage the good wishes of every good man, whatever might be his theoretic doubts;" the endeavor, therefore, in his opinion, ought to be to give it "a better chance of success by a government more capable of energy and order."*

Washington, who knew and appreciated Hamilton's character, had implicit confidence in his sincerity, and felt assured that he would loyally aid in carrying into effect the constitution as adopted.

It was a great satisfaction to Washington, on looking round for reliable advisers at this moment, to see James Madison among the members of Congress: Madison, who had been with him in the convention, who had labored in The Federalist, and whose talents as a speaker, and calm, dispassionate reasoner; whose extensive information and legislative experience destined him to be a leader in the House. Highly appreciating his intellectual and moral worth, Washington would often turn to him for counsel. "I am troublesome," would he say, "but you must excuse me; ascribe it to friendship and confidence."

Knox, of whose sure sympathies we have spoken, was in strong contrast with the cool statesman just mentioned. His mind was ardent and active, his imagination vivid, as was his language. He had abandoned the military garb, but still maintained his soldier-like air. He was large in person, above the middle stature, with a full face, radiant and benignant, bespeaking his open, buoyant, generous nature. He had a sonorous voice, and sometimes talked rather grandly, flourishing his cane to give effect to his periods.† He was cordially appreciated by Washington, who had experienced his prompt and efficient talent in time of war, had considered him one of the ablest officers of the revolution, and now looked to him as an energetic man of business, capable of giving practical advice in time of peace, and cherished for him that strong feeling of ancient companionship in toil and danger, which bound the veterans of the revolution firmly to each other.

* Hamilton's Writings iv. 273.

† See Sullivan's Letters on Public Characters, p. 84.

CHAPTER XIV.

Washington's Privacy Beset with Visits of Compliment—Queries as to the Proper Line of Conduct in his Presidential Intercourse—Opinions of Adams and Hamilton—Jefferson as to the Authors of the Minor Forms and Ceremonies—His Whimsical Anecdote of the First Levee—Inaugural Ball.

The moment the inauguration was over, Washington was made to perceive that he was no longer master of himself or of his home. "By the time I had done breakfast," writes he, "and thence till dinner, and afterwards till bed-time, I could not get rid of the ceremony of one visit before I had to attend to another. In a word, I had no leisure to read or to answer the despatches that were pouring in upon me from all quarters."

How was he to be protected from these intrusions? In his former capacity as commander-in-chief of the armies, his headquarters had been guarded by sentinels and military etiquette; but what was to guard the privacy of a popular chief magistrate?

What, too, were to be the forms and ceremonials to be adopted in the presidential mansion, that would maintain the dignity of his station, allow him time for the performance of its official duties, and yet be in harmony with the temper and feelings of the people, and the prevalent notions of equality and republican simplicity?

The conflict of opinions that had already occurred as to the form and title by which the President was to be addressed, had made him aware that every step at the outset of his career would be subject to scrutiny, perhaps cavil, and might hereafter be cited as a precedent. Looking round, therefore, upon the able men at hand, such as Adams, Hamilton, Jay, Madison, he propounded to them a series of questions as to a line of conduct proper for him to observe.

In regard to visitors, for instance, would not one day in the week be sufficient for visits of compliment, and one hour every morning (at eight o'clock for example) for visits on business?

Might he make social visits to acquaintances and public characters, not as President, but as private individual? And then as to his table—under the preceding form of government the Presidents of Congress had been accustomed to give din-

ners twice a week to large parties of both sexes, and invitations had been so indiscriminate, that every one who could get introduced to the President, conceived he had a right to be invited to his board. The table was, therefore, always crowded and with a mixed company; yet, as it was in the nature of things impracticable to invite everybody, as many offences were given as if no table had been kept.

Washington was resolved not to give general entertainments of this kind, but in his series of questions he asked whether he might not invite, informally or otherwise, six, eight, or ten official characters, including in rotation the members of both Houses of Congress, to dine with him on the days fixed for receiving company, without exciting clamors in the rest of the community.

Adams in his reply talked of chamberlains, aides-de-camp, masters of ceremony, and evinced a high idea of the presidential office and the state with which it ought to be maintained. "The office," writes he, "by its legal authority defined in the constitution, has no equal in the world excepting those only which are held by crowned heads; nor is the royal authority in all cases to be compared to it. The royal office in Poland is a mere shadow in comparison with it. The Dogeship in Venice, and the Stadtholdership in Holland, are not so much —neither dignity nor authority can be supported in human minds, collected into nations or any great numbers, without a splendor and majesty in some degree proportioned to them. The sending and receiving ambassadors is one of the most splendid and important prerogatives of sovereigns, absolute or limited, and this in our constitution is wholly in the President. If the state and pomp essential to this great department are not in a good degree preserved, it will be in vain for America to hope for consideration with foreign powers." *

According to Mr. Adams, two days in a week would be required for the receipt of visits of compliment. Persons desiring an interview with the President should make application though the minister of state. In every case the name, quality, or business of the visitor should be communicated to a chamberlain or gentleman in waiting, who should judge whom to admit, and whom to exclude. The time for receiving visits ought to be limited, as for example, from eight to nine or ten o'clock, lest the whole morning be taken up. The President might invite what official character, members of Congress, strangers, or citizens of distinction he pleased, in small parties

* Life and Works of John Adams, vol. viii. p. 493.

without exciting clamors; but this should always be done without formality. His private life should be at his own discretion, as to giving or receiving informal visits among friends and acquaintances; but in his official character, he should have no intercourse with society but upon public business, or at his levees. Adams, in the conclusion of his reply, ingenuously confessed that his long residence abroad might have impressed him with views of things incompatible with the present temper and feelings of his fellow-citizens; and Jefferson seems to have been heartily of the same opinion, for speaking of Adams in his *anas*, he observes that "the glare of royalty and nobility, during his mission to England, had made him believe their fascination a necessary ingredient in government."* Hamilton, in his reply, while he considered it a primary object for the public good that the dignity of the presidential office should be supported, advised that care should be taken to avoid so high a tone in the demeanor of the occupant, as to shock the prevalent notions of equality.

The President, he thought, should hold a levee at a fixed time once a week, remain half an hour, converse cursorily on indifferent subjects with such persons as invited his attention, and then retire.

He should accept no invitations, give formal entertainments twice, or at most, four times in the year; if twice, on the anniversaries of the declaration of independence and of his inauguration: if four times, the anniversary of the treaty of alliance with France and that of the definitive treaty with Great Britain to be added.

The President on levee days to give informal invitations to family dinners; not more than six or eight to be asked at a time, and the civility to be confined essentially to members of the legislature, and other official characters:—the President never to remain long at table.

The heads of departments should, of course, have access to the President on business. Foreign ministers of some descriptions should also be entitled to it. "In Europe, I am informed," writes Hamilton, "ambassadors only have direct access to the chief magistrate. Something very near what prevails there would, in my opinion, be right. The distinction of rank between diplomatic characters requires attention, and the door of access ought not be too wide to that class of persons. I have thought that the members of the Senate should also have a right of *individual* access on matters relative to

* Jefferson's Works, ix. 97.

the *public administration.* In England and France peers of the realm have this right. We have none such in this country, but I believe it will be satisfactory to the people to know that there is some body of men in the state who have a right of continual communication with the President. It will be considered a safeguard against secret combinations to deceive him." *

The reason alleged by Hamilton for giving the Senate this privilege, and not the Representatives, was, that in the constitution "the Senate are coupled with the President in certain executive functions, treaties, and appointments. This makes them in a degree his constitutional counsellors, and gives them a peculiar claim to the right of access."

These are the only written replies that we have before us of Washington's advisers on this subject.

Colonel Humphreys, formerly one of Washington's aides-de camp, and recently secretary of Jefferson's legation at Paris, was at present an inmate in the presidential mansion. General Knox was frequently there; to these Jefferson assures us, on Washington's authority, was assigned the task of considering and prescribing the minor forms and ceremonies, the etiquette, in fact, to be observed on public occasions. Some of the forms proposed by them, he adds, were adopted. Others were so highly strained that Washington absolutely rejected them. Knox was no favorite with Jefferson, who had no sympathies with the veteran soldier, and styles him "a man of parade," and Humphreys, he appears to think captivated by the ceremonials of foreign courts. He gives a whimsical account, which he had at a second or third hand, of the first levee. An ante-chamber and presence room were provided, and, when those who were to pay their court were assembled, the President set out, preceded by Humphreys. After passing through the ante-chamber, the door of the inner room was thrown open, and Humphreys entered first, calling out with a loud voice, "The President of the United States." The President was so much disconcerted with it that he did not recover in the whole time of the levee, and, when the company was gone, he said to Humphreys, "Well, you have taken me in once, but by ——, you shall never take me in a second time."

This anecdote is to be taken with caution, for Jefferson was disposed to receive any report that placed the forms adopted in a disparaging point of view.

* Hamilton's Works, vol. iv., p. 8.

He gives in his Ana a still more whimsical account on the authority of "a Mr. Brown," of the ceremonials at an inauguration ball at which Washington and Mrs. Washington presided in almost regal style. As it has been proved to be entirely incorrect, we have not deemed it worthy an insertion. A splendid ball was in fact given at the Assembly Rooms, and another by the French Minister, the Count de Moustier, at both of which Washington was present and danced; but Mrs. Washington was not at either of them not being yet arrived, and on neither occasion were any mock regal ceremonials observed. Washington was the last man that would have tolerated anything of the kind. Our next chapter will show the almost casual manner in which the simple formalities of the republican court originated.

CHAPTER XV.

Journey of Mrs. Washington to New York—Honors Paid her in her Progress—Receptions at the Seat of Government—The President's Equipage.

On the 17th of May, Mrs. Washington, accompanied by her grandchildren, Eleanor Custis and George Washington Parke Custis, set out from Mount Vernon in her travelling carriage with a small escort of horse, to join her husband at the seat of government; as she had been accustomed to join him at head-quarters, in the intervals of his revolutionary campaigns.

Throughout the journey she was greeted with public testimonials of respect and affection. As she approached Philadelphia, the President of Pennsylvania and other of the State functionaries, with a number of the principal inhabitants of both sexes, came forth to meet her, and she was attended into the city by a numerous cavalcade, and welcomed with the ringing of bells and firing of cannon.

Similar honors were paid her in her progress through New Jersey. At Elizabethtown she alighted at the residence of Governor Livingston, whither Washington came from New York to meet her. They proceeded thence by water, in the same splendid barge in which the general had been conveyed

for his inauguration. It was manned, as on that occasion by thirteen master pilots, arrayed in white, and had several persons of note on board. There was a salute of thirteen guns as the barge passed the Battery at New York. The landing took place at Peck Slip, not far from the presidential residence, amid the enthusiastic cheers of an immense multitude.

On the following day, Washington gave a demi-official dinner, of which Mr. Wingate, a senator from New Hampshire, who was present, writes as follows: "The guests consisted of the Vice President, the foreign ministers, the heads of departments, the Speaker of the House of Representatives, and the Senators from New Hampshire and Georgia, the then most Northern and Southern States. It was the least showy dinner that I ever saw at the President's table, and the company was not large. As there was no chaplain present, the President himself said a very short grace as he was sitting down. After dinner the dessert was finished, *one glass* of wine was passed around the table, and *no toast*. The President rose, and all the company retired to the drawing-room, from which the guests departed, as every one chose, without ceremony."

On the evening of the following day, (Friday, May 29th,) Mrs. Washington had a general reception, which was attended by all that was distinguished in official and fashionable society. Henceforward there were similar receptions every Friday evening, from eight to ten o'clock, to which the families of all persons of respectability, native or foreign, had access, without special invitation; and at which the President was always present. These assemblages were as free from ostentation and restraint as the ordinary receptions of polite society; yet the reader will find they were soon subject to invidious misrepresentation; and cavilled at as "court-like levees" and "queenly drawing-rooms."

Beside these public receptions, the presidential family had its private circle of social intimacy; the President, moreover, was always ready to receive visits by appointment on public or private business.

The sanctity and quiet of Sunday were strictly observed by Washington. He attended church in the morning, and passed the afternoon alone in his closet. No visitors were admitted, excepting perhaps an intimate friend in the evening, which was spent by him in the bosom of his family.

The household establishment was conducted on an ample and dignified scale, but without ostentation, and regulated with characteristic system and exactness. Samuel Fraunces,

once landlord of the city tavern in Broad street, where Washington took leave of the officers of the army in 1783, was now Steward of the presidential household. He was required to render a weekly statement of receipts and expenditures, and warned to guard against waste and extravagance. "We are happy to inform our readers," says Fenno's Gazette of the day, "that the President is determined to pursue that system of regularity and economy in his household which has always marked his public and private life."

In regard to the deportment of Washington at this juncture, we have been informed by one who had opportunities of seeing him, that he still retained a military air of command which had become habitual to him. At levees and drawing-rooms he sometimes appeared cold and distant, but this was attributed by those who best knew him to the novelty of his position and his innate diffidence, which seemed to increase with the light which his renown shed about him. Though reserved at times, his reserve had nothing repulsive in it, and in social intercourse, where he was no longer the eye of critical supervision, soon gave way to soldier-like frankness and cordiality. At all times his courtesy was genuine and benignant, and totally free from the stately condescension sometimes mistaken for politeness. Nothing we are told could surpass the noble grace with which he presided at a ceremonial dinner; kindly attentive to all his guests, but particularly attentive to put those at their ease and in a favorable light, who appeared to be most diffident.

As to Mrs. Washington, those who really knew her at the time, speak of her as free from pretension or affectation; undazzled by her position, and discharging its duties with the truthful simplicity and real good-breeding of one accustomed to preside over a hospitable mansion in the "Ancient Dominion." She had her husband's predilection for private life. In a letter to an intimate she writes: "It is owing to the kindness of our numerous friends in all quarters that my new and unwished for situation is not indeed a burden to me. When I was much younger, I should probably have enjoyed the innocent gayeties of life as much as most persons of my age; but I had long since placed all the prospects of my future worldly happiness in the still enjoyments of the fireside at Mount Vernon.

"I little thought, when the war was finished, that any circumstances could possibly happen, which would call the General into public life again. I had anticipated that from that moment we should be suffered to grow old together in

solitude and tranquillity. That was the first and dearest wish of my heart." *

Much has been said of Washington's equipages, when at New York, and of his having four, and sometimes six horses before his carriage, with servants and outriders in rich livery. Such style we would premise was usual at the time both in England and the colonies, and had been occasionally maintained by the continental dignitaries, and by Governors of the several States, prior to the adoption of the new constitution. It was still prevalent, we are told, among the wealthy planters of the South, and sometimes adopted by 'merchant princes' and rich individuals at the North. It does not appear, however, that Washington ever indulged in it through ostentation. When he repaired to the Hall of Congress, at his inauguration, he was drawn by a single pair of horses in a chariot presented for the occasion, on the panels of which were emblazoned the arms of the United States.

Beside this modest equipage there was the ample family carriage which had been brought from Virginia. To this four horses were put when the family drove out into the country, the state of the roads in those days requiring it. For the same reason six horses were put to the same vehicle on journeys, and once on a state occasion. If there was anything he was likely to take a pride in, it was horses; he was passionately fond of that noble animal, and mention is occasionally made of four white horses of great beauty which he owned while in New York.† His favorite exercise when the weather permitted it was on horseback, accompanied by one or more of the members of his household, and he was noted always for being admirably mounted, and one of the best horsemen of his day.

* Quoted in a note to Sparks, p. 422.

† For some of these particulars concerning Washington we are indebted to the late William A. Duer, president of Columbia College, who in his boyhood was frequently in the President's house, playmate of young Custis, Mrs. Washington's grandson.

Washington's Residences in New York.—The first Presidential residence was at the junction of Pearl and Cherry streets, Franklin square. At the end of about a year, the President removed to the house on the west side of Broadway, near Rector street, afterwards known as Bunker's Mansion House. Both of these buildings have disappeared, in the course of modern "improvements."

CHAPTER XVI.

Alarming Illness of the President—The senate Rejects one of his Nominations—His Sensitive Vindication of it—Death of his Mother—Her character—The Executive Departments Instituted—Selection of Officers for the Treasury and War Departments—Hamilton Instructed to Report a Financial Plan at the next Session of Congress—Arrangement of the Judiciary Department—Edmund Randolph—Adjournment of Congress — Its Character, by Fisher Ames.

As soon as Washington could command sufficient leisure to inspect papers and documents, he called unofficially upon the heads of departments to furnish him with such reports in writing as would aid him in gaining a distinct idea of the state of public affairs. For this purpose also he had recourse to the public archives, and proceeded to make notes of the foreign official correspondence from the close of the war until his inauguration. He was interrupted in his task by a virulent attack of anthrax, which for several days threatened mortification. The knowledge of his perilous condition spread alarm through the community; he, however, remained unagitated. His medical adviser was Dr. Samuel Bard, of New York, an excellent physician and most estimable man, who attended him with unremitting assiduity. Being alone one day with the doctor, Washington regarded him steadily, and asked his candid opinion as to the probable result of his case. "Do not flatter me with vain hopes," said he, with placid firmness; "I am not afraid to die, and therefore can bear the worst." The doctor expressed hope, but owned that he had apprehensions. "Whether to-night or twenty years hence, makes no difference," observed Washington. "I know that I am in the hands of a good Providence." His sufferings were intense, and his recovery was slow. For six weeks he was obliged to lie on his right side; but after a time he had his carriage so contrived that he could extend himself at full length in it, and take exercise in the open air

While rendered morbidly sensitive by bodily pain, he suffered deep annoyance from having one of his earliest nominations, that of Benjamin Fishburn, for the place of naval officer of the port of Savannah, rejected by the Senate.

If there was anything in which Washington was scrupulously conscientious, it was in the exercise of the nominating power;

scrutinizing the fitness of candidates; their comparative claims on account of public services, and sacrifices, and with regard to the equable distribution of offices among the States; in all which he governed himself solely by considerations for the public good. He was especially scrupulous where his own friends and connections were concerned. "So far as I know my own mind," would he say, "I would not be in the remotest degree influenced in making nominations by motives arising from the ties of family or blood."

He was principally hurt in the present instance by the want of deference on the part of the Senate, in assigning no reason for rejecting his nomination of Mr. Fishburn. He acquiesced, however, in the rejection, and forthwith sent in the name of another candidate; but at the same time administered a temperate and dignified rebuke. "Whatever may have been the reasons which induced your dissent," writes he to the Senate, "I am persuaded that they were such as you deemed sufficient. Permit me to submit to your consideration, whether, on occasions where the propriety of nominations appears questionable to you, it would not be expedient to communicate that circumstance to me, and thereby avail yourselves of the information which led me to make them, and which I would with pleasure lay before you. Probably my reasons for nominating Mr. Fishburn may tend to show that such a mode of proceeding, in such cases, might be useful. I will therefore detail them."

He then proceeds to state, that Colonel Fishburn had served under his own eye with reputation as an officer and a gentleman; had distinguished himself at the storming of Stony Point; had repeatedly been elected to the Assembly of Georgia as a representative from Chatham County, in which Savannah was situated; had been elected by the officers of the militia of that county, Lieutenant Colonel of the militia of the district; had been member of the Executive Council of the State, and president of the same; had been appointed by the council to an office which he actually held, in the port of Savannah, nearly similar to that for which Washington had nominated him.

"It appeared therefore to me," adds Washington, "that Mr. Fishburn must have enjoyed the *confidence* of the militia officers in order to have been elected to a military rank—the *confidence* of the freemen, to have been elected to the Assembly—the *confidence* of the Assembly to have been selected for the Council, and the *confidence* of the Council to have been appointed collector of the port of Savannah."

We give this letter in some detail, as relating to the only instance in which a nomination by Washington was rejected. The reasons of the Senate for rejecting it do not appear. They seem to have felt his rebuke, for the nomination last made by him was instantly confirmed.

While yet in a state of convalescence, Washington received intelligence of the death of his mother. The event, which took place at Fredericksburg in Virginia, on the 25th of August, was not unexpected; she was eighty-two years of age, and had for some time been sinking under an incurable malady, so that when he last parted with her he had apprehended that it was a final separation. Still he was deeply affected by the intelligence; consoling himself, however, with the reflection that "Heaven had spared her to an age beyond which few attain; had favored her with the full enjoyment of her mental faculties, and as much bodily health as usually falls to the lot of fourscore."

Mrs. Mary Washington is represented as a woman of strong plain sense, strict integrity, and an inflexible spirit of command. We have mentioned the exemplary manner in which she, a lone widow, had trained her little flock in their childhood. The deference for her, then instilled into their minds, continued throughout life, and was manifested by Washington when at the height of his power and reputation. Eminently practical, she had thwarted his military aspirings when he was about to seek honor in the British navy. During his early and disastrous campaigns on the frontier, she would often shake her head and exclaim, "Ah, George had better have staid at home and cultivated his farm." Even his ultimate success and renown had never dazzled, however much they may have gratified her. When others congratulated her, and were enthusiastic in his praise, she listened in silence, and would temperately reply that he had been a good son, and she believed he had done his duty as a man.

Hitherto the new government had not been properly organized, but its several duties had been performed by the officers who had them in charge at the time of Washington's inauguration. It was not until the 10th of September that laws were passed instituting a department of Foreign Affairs (afterwards termed Department of State), a Treasury department, and a department of War, and fixing their respective salaries. On the following day, Washington nominated General Knox to the department of War, the duties of which that officer had hitherto discharged.

The post of Secretary of the Treasury was one of far greater

importance at the present moment. It was a time of financial exigency. As yet no statistical account of the country had been attempted; its fiscal resources were wholly unknown; its credit was almost annihilated, for it was obliged to borrow money even to pay the interest of its debts.

We have already quoted the language held by Washington in regard to this state of things before he had assumed the direction of affairs. "My endeavors shall be unremittingly exerted, even at the hazard of former fame, or present popularity, to extricate my country from the embarrassments in which it is entangled through want of credit."

Under all these circumstances, and to carry out these views, he needed an able and zealous coadjutor in the Treasury department; one equally solicitous with himself on the points in question, and more prepared upon them by financial studies and investigations than he could pretend to be. Such a person he considered Alexander Hamilton, whom he nominated as Secretary of the Treasury, and whose qualifications for the office were so well understood by the Senate that his nomination was confirmed on the same day on which it was made.

Within a few days after Hamilton's appointment, the House of Representatives (Sept. 21), acting upon the policy so ardently desired by Washinton, passed a resolution, declaring their opinion of the high importance to the honor and prosperity of the United States, that an adequate provision should be made for the support of public credit; and instructing the Secretary of the Treasury to prepare a plan for the purpose, and report it at their next session.

The arrangement of the Judicial department was one of Washington's earliest cares. On the 27th of September, he wrote unofficially to Edmund Randolph, of Virginia, informing him that he had nominated him Attorney-General of the United States, and would be highly gratified with his acceptance of that office. Some old recollections of the camp and of the early days of the revolution, may have been at the bottom of this good-will, for Randolph had joined the army at Cambridge in 1775, and acted for a time as aide-de-camp to Washington in place of Mifflin. He had since gained experience in legislative business as member of Congress, from 1779 to 1782, Governor of Virginia in 1786, and delegate to the convention in 1787. In the discussions of that celebrated body, he had been opposed to a single executive, professing to discern in the unity of that power the "fœtus of monarchy;" and preferring an executive consisting of three; whereas, in the opinion of others, this plural executive would be "a kind of

Cerberus with three heads." Like Madison, he had disapproved of the equality of suffrage in the Senate, and been, moreover, of opinion, that the President should be ineligible to office after a given number of years.

Dissatisfied with some of the provisions of the constitution as adopted, he had refused to sign it; but had afterwards supported it in the State convention of Virginia. As we recollect him many years afterwards, his appearance and address were dignified and prepossessing; he had an expressive countenance, a beaming eye, and somewhat of the *ore rotundo* in speaking. Randolph promptly accepted the nomination, but did not take his seat in the cabinet until some months after Knox and Hamilton.

By the judicial system established for the Federal Government, the Supreme Court of the United States was to be composed of a chief justice and five associate judges. There were to be district courts with a judge in each State, and circuit courts held by an associate judge and a district judge. John Jay, of New York, received the appointment of Chief Justice, and in a letter enclosing his commission, Washington expressed the singular pleasure he felt in addressing him "as the head of that department which must be considered as the keystone of our political fabric."

Jay's associate judges were, John Rutledge of South Carolina, James Wilson of Pennsylvania, William Cushing of Massachusetts, John Blair of Virginia, and James Iredell of North Carolina. Washington had originally nominated to one of the judgeships his former military secretary, Robert Harrison, familiarly known as *the old Secretary;* but he preferred the office of Chancellor of Maryland, recently conferred upon him.

On the 29th of September, Congress adjourned to the first Monday in January, after an arduous session, in which many important questions had been discussed, and powers organized and distributed. The actual Congress was inferior in eloquence and shining talent to the first Congress of the revolution; but it possessed men well fitted for the momentous work before them; sober, solid, upright, and well informed. An admirable harmony had prevailed between the legislature and the executive, and the utmost decorum had reigned over the public deliberations.

Fisher Ames, then a young man, who had acquired a brilliant reputation in Massachusetts by the eloquence with which he had championed the new constitution in the convention of that important State, and who had recently been elected to

Congress, speaks of it in the following terms: "I have never seen an assembly where so little art was used. If they wish to carry a point, it is directly declared and justified. Its merits and defects are plainly stated, not without sophistry and prejudice, but without management. * * * There is no intrigue, no caucusing, little of clanning together, little asperity in debate, or personal bitterness out of the House."

CHAPTER XVII.

The Department of State still without a Head—Sketch of Jefferson's Character and Opinions—Deeply Immersed in French Politics at Paris—Gouverneur Morris Abroad—Contrast of his and Jefferson's Views on the French Crisis—News of the French Revolution in America—Popular Excitement—Washington's Cautious Opinion on the Subject—Hamilton's Apprehensive View—Jefferson Offered a Place in the Cabinet as Secretary of State.

THE cabinet was still incomplete; the department of foreign affairs, or rather of State, as it was now called, was yet to be supplied with a head. John Jay would have received the nomination had he not preferred the bench. Washington next thought of Thomas Jefferson, who had so long filled the post of Minister Plenipotentiary at the Court of Versailles, but had recently solicited and obtained permission to return, for a few months, to the United States for the purpose of placing his children among their friends in their native country, and of arranging his private affairs, which had suffered from his protracted absence. And here we will venture a few particulars concerning this eminent statesman, introductory to the important influence he was to exercise on national affairs.

His political principles as a democratic republican, had been avowed at an early date in his draft of the Declaration of Independence, and subsequently in the successful war which he made upon the old cavalier traditions of his native State; its laws of entails and primogeniture, and its church establishment, a war which broke down the hereditary fortunes and hereditary families, and put an end to the hereditary aristocracy of the Ancient Dominion.

Being sent to Paris as minister plenipotentiary a year or two after the peace, he arrived there, as he says, "when the

American revolution seemed to have awakened the thinking part of the French nation from the sleep of despotism in which they had been sunk."

Carrying with him his republican principles and zeal, his house became the resort of Lafayette and others of the French officers who had served in the American revolution. They were mostly, he said, young men little shackled by habits and prejudices, and had come back with new ideas and new impressions which began to be disseminated by the press and in conversation. Politics became the theme of all societies, male and female, and a very extensive and zealous party was formed which acquired the appellation of the Patriot Party, who, sensible of the abuses of the government under which they lived, sighed for occasions of reforming it. This party, writes Jefferson, "comprehended all the honesty of the kingdom sufficiently at leisure to think, the men of letters, the easy bourgeois, the young nobility, partly from reflection, partly from the mode; for these sentiments became matter of mode, and, as such, united most of the young women to the party."

By this party Jefferson was considered high authority from his republican principles and experience, and his advice was continually sought in the great effort for political reform which was daily growing stronger and stronger. His absence in Europe had prevented his taking part in the debates on the new constitution, but he had exercised his influence through his correspondence. "I express freely," writes he, in letters to my friends, and most particularly to Mr. Madison and General Washington, my approbations and objections." * What those approbations and objections were appears by the following citations, which are important to be kept in mind as illustrating his after conduct:

"I approved, from the first moment, of the great mass of what is in the new constitution, the consolidation of the government, the organization into executive, legislative, and judiciary; the subdivision of the legislature, the happy compromise of the interests between the great and little States by the different manner of voting in the different Houses, the voting by persons instead of States, the qualified negative on laws given to the executive, which, however, I should have liked better if associated with the judiciary also, as in New York, and the power of taxation: what I disapproved from the first moment, was the want of a Bill of rights to guard liberty against the legislative as well as against the executive

* Autobiography, Works, i. 79.

branches of the government; that is to say, to secure freedom of religion, freedom of the press, freedom from monopolies, freedom from unlawful imprisonment, freedom from a permanent military, and a trial by jury in all cases determinable by the laws of the land."

What he greatly objected to was the perpetual re-eligibility of the President. "This, I fear," said he, "will make that an office for life, first, and then hereditary. I was much an enemy to monarchies before I came to Europe, and am ten thousand times more so since I have seen what they are. There is scarcely an evil known in these countries which may not be traced to their king as its source, nor a good which is not derived from the small fibres of republicanism existing among them. I can further say, with safety, there is not a crowned head in Europe whose talents or merits would entitle him to be elected a vestryman by the people of any parish in America." *

In short, such a horror had he imbibed of kingly rule, that, in a familiar letter to Colonel Humphreys, who had been his Secretary of Legation, he gives it as the duty of our young Republic "to besiege the throne of heaven with eternal prayers to extirpate from creation this class of human lions, tigers, and mammoths, called kings, from whom, let him perish who does not say, 'Good Lord, deliver us!'"

Jefferson's political fervor occasionally tended to exaltation, but it was genuine. In his excited state he regarded with quick suspicion everything in his own country that appeared to him to have a regal tendency. His sensitiveness had been awakened by the debates in Congress as to the title to be given to the President, whether or not he should be addressed as His Highness; and had been relieved by the decision that he was to have no title but that of office, viz.: President of the United States. "I hope," said Jefferson, "the terms of Excellency, Honor, Worship, Esquire, forever disappear from among us from that moment. I wish that of Mr. would follow them." †

With regard to the re-eligibility of the President, his anxiety was quieted for the present, by the elevation of Washington to the Presidential chair. "Since the thing [re-eligibility] is established," writes he, "I would wish it not to be altered during the life-time of our great leader, whose executive talents are superior to those, I believe, of any man in the world, and who, alone, by the authority of his name, and the

* Letter to Washington, May 2, 1788. Works ii. 375.
† Letter to Mr. Carmichael, Works iii. 88.

confidence reposed in his perfect integrity, is fully qualified to put the new government so under way as to secure it against the efforts of opposition. But, having derived from our error all the good there was in it, I hope we shall correct it the moment we can no longer have the same name at the helm." *

Jefferson, at the time of which we are speaking, was, as we have shown, deeply immersed in French politics and interested in the success of the "Patriot Party," in its efforts to reform the country. His despatches to government all proved how strongly he was on the side of the people. "He considered a successful reformation in France as insuring a general reformation throughout Europe, and the resurrection to a new life of their people now ground to dust by the abuses of the governing powers."

Gouverneur Morris, who was at that time in Paris on private business, gives a different view of the state of things produced by the Patriot party. Morris had arrived in Paris on the 3d of February, 1789, furnished by Washington with letters of introduction to persons in England, France, and Holland. His brilliant talents, ready conversational powers, easy confidence in society, and striking aristocratical appearance, had given him great currency, especially in the court party and among the ancient nobility; in which direction his tastes most inclined. He had renewed his intimacy with Lafayette, whom he found "full of politics," but "too republican for the genius of his country."

In a letter to the French Minister, residing in New York, Morris writes on the 23d of February, 1789: "Your nation is now in a most important crisis, and the great question—shall we hereafter have a constitution, or shall will continue to be law—employs every mind and agitates every heart in France. Even voluptuousness itself rises from its couch of roses and looks anxiously abroad at the busy scene to which nothing can now be indifferent.

"Your nobles, your clergy, your people, are all in motion for the elections. A spirit which has been dormant for generations starts up and stares about, ignorant of the means of obtaining, but ardently desirous to possess its object—consequently active, energetic, easily led, but also easily, too easily misled. Such is the instinctive love of freedom which now grows warm in the bosom of your country."

When the king was constrained by the popular voice to con-

* Letter to F. Hopkinson, Works, ii. 587.

vene the States General at Versailles for the purpose of discussing measures of reform, Jefferson was a constant attendant upon the debates of that body. "I was much acquainted with the leading patriots of the Assembly," writes he, "being from a country which had successfully passed through similar reform; they were disposed to my acquaintance and had some confidence in me. I urged most strenuously an immediate compromise to secure what the government was now ready to yield, and trust to future occasions for what might still be wanting."

The "leading patriots" here spoken of, were chiefly the deputies from Brittany, who, with others, formed an association called the Breton Club, to watch the matters debated in Parliament and shape the course of affairs.

Morris, speaking of Jefferson at this juncture, observes, "He and I differ in our system of politics. He, with all the leaders of liberty here, is desirous of annihilating distinctions of order. How far such views may be right, respecting mankind in general, is, I think, extremely problematical. But, with respect to this nation, I am sure it is wrong and cannot eventuate well." *

Jefferson, in a letter to Thomas Paine (July 11), giving some account of the proceedings of the States General, observes, "The National Assembly (for that is the name they take) having shown, through every stage of these transactions, a coolness, wisdom, and resolution to set fire to the four corners of the kingdom, and to perish with it themselves rather than to relinquish an iota from their plan of a total change of government, are now in complete and undisputed possession of the Sovereignty. The executive and aristocracy are at their feet; the mass of the nation, the mass of the clergy, and the army are with them; they have prostrated the old government and are now beginning to build one from the foundation."

It was but three days after the date of this letter that the people of Paris rose in their might, plundered the arsenal of the Invalides, furnished themselves with arms, stormed the Bastille; and a national guard, formed of the Bourgeoisie, with the tricolored cockade for an emblem and Lafayette as commander, took Paris under its protection.

Information of these events was given at midnight to the king at Versailles by Rochefoucauld-Liancourt. "It is a

* Life of G. Morris, i. 313.

revolt," exclaimed the king. "Sire," replied Liancourt, "*it is a revolution!*"

Jefferson, in his despatches to government, spoke with admiration of the conduct of the people throughout the violent scenes which accomplished this popular convulsion. "There was a severity of honesty observed, of which no example has been known. Bags of money, offered on various occasions through fear or guilt, have been uniformly refused by the mobs. The churches are now occupied in singing '*De Profundis*' and '*Requiems*' for the repose of the souls of the brave and valiant citizens who have sealed, with their blood, the liberty of the nation. * * * We cannot suppose this paroxysm confined to Paris alone; the whole country must pass successively through it, and happy if they get through as soon and as well as Paris has done." *

Gouverneur Morris, writing on the same subject to Washington, on the 31st of July, observes: "You may consider the revolution as complete. The authority of the king and of the nobility is completely subdued; yet I tremble for the constitution. They have all the romantic spirit and all the romantic ideas of government, which, happily for America, we were cured of before it was too late."

The foregoing brief notices of affairs in revolutionary France, and of the feelings with which they were viewed by American statesmen resident there, will be found of service in illustrating subsequent events in the United States.

The first news of the revolution reached America in October, and was hailed by the great mass of the people with enthusiasm. Washington, in reply to his old comrade in arms, the Count de Rochambeau, observes: "I am persuaded I express the sentiments of my fellow-citizens, when I offer an earnest prayer that it may terminate in the permanent honor and happiness of your government and people."

But, in a reply of the same date (13th Oct.) to Gouverneur Morris, he shows that his circumspect and cautious spirit was not to be hurried away by popular excitement. "The revolution which has been effected in France," writes he, "is of so wonderful a nature, that the mind can hardly realize the fact. If it ends as our last accounts of the 1st of August predict, that nation will be the most powerful and happy in Europe; but I fear, though it has gone triumphantly through the first paroxysm it is not the last it has to encounter before matters are finally settled. In a word, the revolution is of too great

* Letter to John Jay. Jefferson's Works, iii. 80.

a magnitude to be effected in so short a space, and with the loss of so little blood. The mortification of the king, the intrigues of the queen, and the discontent of the princes and noblesse, will forment divisions, if possible, in the National Assembly; and they will, unquestionably, avail themselves of every *faux pas* in the formation of the constitution, if they do not give a more open, active opposition. In addition to these, the licentiousness of the people on one hand, and sanguinary punishments on the other, will alarm the best disposed friends to the measure, and contribute not a little to the overthrow of their object. Great temperance, firmness, and foresight are necessary in the movements of that body. To forbear running from one extreme to another, is no easy matter: and should this be the case, rocks and shelves, not visible at present, may wreck the vessel and give a higher-toned despotism than the one which existed before." *

Hamilton, too, regarded the recent event in France with a mixture of pleasure and apprehension. In a letter to Lafayette he writes: "As a friend to mankind and to liberty, I rejoice in the efforts which you are making to establish it, while I fear much for the final success of the attempts, for the fate of those who are engaged in it, and for the danger, in case of success, of innovations greater than will consist with the real felicity of your nation. * * * I dread disagreements among these who are now united, about the nature of your constitution; I dread the vehement character of your people, whom, I fear, you may find it more easy to bring on, than to keep within proper bounds after you have put them in motion. I dread the interested refractoriness of your nobles, who cannot all be gratified, and who may be unwilling to submit to the requisite sacrifices. And I dread the reveries of your philosophic politicians, who appear in the moment to have great influence, and who, being mere speculatists, may aim at more refinement than suits either with human nature or the composition of your nation." †

The opposite views and feelings of Hamilton and Jefferson, with regard to the French revolution, are the more interesting as these eminent statesmen were soon to be brought face to in the cabinet, the policy of which would be greatly influenced by French affairs; for it was at this time that Washington wrote to Jefferson, offering him the situation of Secretary of State, but forbearing to nominate a successor to his post at the Court of Versailles, until he should be informed of his determination.

* Writings of Washington, x. 39.
† Hamilton's Works, v. 440.

CHAPTER XVIII.

Washington's Journey through the Eastern States—John Hancock—Clashing between the Civil and Municipal Authorities on the President's Entry into Boston A contest of Etiquette—Washington's Account of his Entry—His Reception—A New Punctilio—Address of Cincinnati Society- -Return to New York.

At the time of writing the letter to Jefferson, offering him the department of State, Washington was on the eve of a journey though the Eastern States, with a view, as he said, to observe the situation of the country, and with a hope of perfectly re-establishing his health, which a series of indispositions had much impaired. Having made all his arrangements, and left the papers appertaining to the office of Foreign Affairs under the temporary superintendence of Mr. Jay, he set out from New York on the 15th of October, travelling in his carriage with four horses, and accompanied by his official secretary, Major Jackson, and his private secretary, Mr. Lear. Though averse from public parade, he could not but be deeply affected and gratified at every step by the manifestations of a people's love. Wherever he came, all labor was suspended; business neglected. The bells were rung, the guns were fired; there were civic processions and military parades and triumphal arches, and all classes poured forth to testify, in every possible manner, their gratitude and affection for the man whom they hailed as the Father of his country; and well did his noble stature, his dignified demeanor, his matured years, and his benevolent aspect, suit that venerable appellation.

On the 22d, just after entering Massachusetts, he was met by an express from the Governor of the State (the Hon. John Hancock), inviting him to make his quarters at his house while he should remain in Boston, and announcing to him that he had issued orders for proper escorts to attend him, and that the troops with the gentlemen of the Council would receive him at Cambridge and wait on him to town.

Washington, in a courteous reply, declined the Governor's invitation to his residence, having resolved, he said, on leaving New York, to accept of no invitations of the kind while on his journey, through an unwillingness to give trouble to private families. He had accordingly instructed a friend to engage lodgings for him during his stay in Boston. He was highly

sensible, he observed, of the honors intended him; but, could his wishes prevail, he would desire to visit the metropolis without any parade or extraordinary ceremony. It was never Washington's good fortune, on occasions of the kind, to have his modest inclinations consulted; in the present instance they were little in accord with the habits and notions of the Governor, who, accustomed to fill public stations and preside at public assemblies, which he did with the punctilio of the old school, was strictly observant of everything appertaining to official rank and dignity. Governor Hancock was now about fifty-two years of age, tall and thin, of a commanding deportment and graceful manner, though stooping a little and much afflicted with the gout. He was really hospitable, which his ample wealth enabled him to be, and was no doubt desirous of having Washington as a guest under his roof, but resolved, at all events to give him a signal reception as the guest of the State over which he presided. Now it so happened that the "select men," or municipal authorities of Boston, had also made arangements for receiving the President in their civic domain, and in so doing had proceeded without consulting the Governor; as might have been expected, some clashing of rival plans was the result.

In pursuance of the Governor's arrangement, the militia, with General Brooks at their head, and Mr. Samual Adams, the Lieutenant Governor, at the head of the Executive Council, met Washington at Cambridge, and escorted him with great ceremony to town. Being arrived at the grand entrance, which is over what is called "The Neck," the Lieutenant Governor and the Executive Council were brought to a sudden halt by observing the municipal authorities drawn up in their carriages, in formal array, to pay civic honors to the city's guest. Here ensued a great question of etiquette. The Executive Council insisted on the right of the Governor, as chief of the State, to receive and welcome its guest, at the entrance of its capital. "He should have met him at the boundary of the State over which he presides," replied the others; "and there have welcomed him to the hospitalities of the commonwealth. When the President is about to enter the *town*, it is the delegated right of the *municipal authorities* thereof to receive and bid him welcome."

The contending parties remained drawn up resolutely in their carriages, while aides-de-camp and marshals were posting to and fro between them, carrying on a kind of diplomatic parley.

In the meantime the President, and Major Jackson, his sec

retary, had mounted on horseback, and were waiting on the Neck to be conducted into the town. The day was unusually cold and murky. Washington became chilled and impatient, and when informed of the cause of the detention, "Is there no other avenue into the town?" demanded he of Major Jackson. He was, in fact, on the point of wheeling about, when word was brought that the controversy was over, and that he would be received by the municipal authorities.

We give his own account of the succeeding part of the ceremony. "At the entrance, I was welcomed by the select men in a body. Then following the Lieutenant Governor and Council in the order we came from Cambridge (preceded by the town corps very handsomely dressed), we passed through the citizens, classed in their different professions, and under their own banners, till we came to the State House."

The streets, the doors, the windows, the housetops, were crowded with well-dressed people of both sexes. "He was on horseback," says an observer, "dressed in his old continental uniform, with his hat off. He did not bow to the spectators as he passed, but sat on his horse with a calm, dignified air. He dismounted at the old State House, now City Hall.* and came out on a temporary balcony at the west end; a long procession passed before him, whose salutations he occasionally returned. These and other ceremonials being over, the Lieutenant Governor and Council, accompanied by the Vice President, conducted Washington to his lodgings, where they took leave of him." And now he is doomed to the annoyance of a new question of etiquette. He had previously accepted the invitation of Governor Hancock to an informal dinner, but had expected that that functionary would wait upon him as soon as he should arrive; instead of which he received a message from him, pleading that he was too much indisposed to do so. Washington distrusted the sincerity of the apology. He had been given to understand that the Governor wished to evade paying the first visit, conceiving that, as Governor of a State, and within the bounds of that State, the point of etiquette made it proper that he should receive the first visit, even from the President of United States. Washington determined to resist this pretension; he therefore excused himself from the informal dinner, and dined at his lodgings, where the Vice President favored him with his company.

The next day the Governor, on consultation with his friends, was persuaded to waive the point of etiquette, and sent "his

* This was written some years ago.

best respects to the President," informing him that, if at home and at leisure, he would do himself the honor to visit him in half an hour, intimating that he would have done it sooner had his health permitted, and that it was not without hazard to his health that he did it now.

The following was Washington's reply, the last sentence of which almost savors of irony:

"SUNDAY, 26th October, 1 o'clock.

"The President of the United States presents his best respects to the Governor, and has the honor to inform him that he shall be home till two o'clock.

"The President need not express the pleasure it will give him to see the Governor; but at the same time, he most earnestly begs that the Governor will not hazard his health on the occasion."

From Washington's diary we find that the Governor found strength to pay the litigated visit within the specified time—though, according to one authority, he went enveloped in red baize and was borne, in the arms of servants, into the house.*

It does not appear that any harm resulted from the hazard to which the Governor exposed himself. At all events, the hydra etiquette was silenced and everything went on pleasantly and decorously throughout the remainder of Washington's sojourn in Boston.

Various addresses were made to him in the course of his visit, but none that reached his heart more directly than that of his old companions in arms, the Cincinnati Society of Massachusetts, who hailed him as "their glorious leader in war, their illustrious example in peace."

"Dear, indeed," said he, in reply, "is the occasion which restores an intercourse with my associates in prosperous and adverse fortune; and enhanced are the triumphs of peace participated with those whose virtue and valor so largely contributed to procure them. To that virtue and valor your country has confessed her obligations. Be mine the grateful task to add to the testimony of a connection which it was my pride to own in the field, and is now my happiness to acknowledge in the enjoyments of peace and freedom."

After remaining in Boston for a week, féted in the most hospitable manner, he appointed eight o'clock, on Thursday

* Sullivan's Letters on Public Characters, p. 15.

the 29th, for his departure. The appointed time arrived, but not the escort; whereupon, punctual himself, and fearing, perhaps, to be detained by some new question of etiquette, he departed without them, and was overtaken by them on the road.

His journey eastward terminated at Portsmouth, whence he turned his face homeward by a middle route through the interior of the country to Hartford, and thence to New York, where he arrived between two and three o'clock on the 13th of November.

CHAPTER XIX.

Col. John Trumbull—Message to Washington from Lafayette—Jefferson's Embarkation for America—Washington Forwards his Commission as Secretary of State—His Acceptance.

Not long after Washington's return from his eastern tour, Colonel John Trumbull, his aide-de-camp in former days, now an historical painter of eminence, arrived from Europe, where he had been successfully prosecuting his art and preparing for his grand pictures, illustrative of our revolutionary history. At Mr. Jefferson's house in Paris, he had been enabled to sketch from the life the portraits of several of the French officers who had been present at the capture of Cornwallis, and were now among the popular agitators of France. He had renewed his military acquaintance with Lafayette; witnessed the outbreak of the revolution; the storming of the Bastille; and attended the Marquis on one occasion, when the latter succeeded in calming the riotous excesses of a mob, principally workmen, in the Faubourg St. Antoine.

Trumbull brought an especial message from Lafayette. The Marquis had been anxious that Washington should know the state of affairs in France, and the progress and prospects of the momentous cause in which he was engaged, but, in the hurry of occupation, had not time to write with the necessary detail; finding, however, that Trumbull was soon to depart for the United States, he invited him to breakfast with him at an early hour and alone, for the express purpose of explaining matters to him frankly and fully, to be communicated by him to Washington, immediately on his arrival in America.

We give the Colonel's report of Lafayette's conversation, as he has recorded it in his autobiography.

"You have witnessed the surface of things," said the Marquis; "it is for me to explain the interior. The object which is aimed at by the Duke de Rochefoucauld, M. Condorcet, myself, and some others, who consider ourselves leaders, is to obtain from France a constitution nearly resembling that of England, which we regard as the most perfect model of government hitherto known. To accomplish this, it is necessary to diminish, very essentially, the power of the king; but our object is to retain the throne, in great majesty, as the first branch of the legislative power, but retrenching its executive power in one point, which, though very important in the British crown, we think is needless here. The peerage of France is already so numerous, that we would take from our king the right of creating new peers, except in cases where old families may become extinct. To all this, the king (who is one of the best of men, and sincerely desirous of the happiness of his people) most freely and cordially consents.

"We wish a House of Peers with powers of legislation similar to that of England, restricted in number to one hundred members, to be elected by the whole body from among themselves, in the same manner as the Scotch peers are in the British Parliament. * * * We wish, as the third branch of the legislative body, a House of Representatives, chosen by the great body of the people from among themselves, by such a ratio as shall not make the House too numerous; and this branch of our project meets unanimous applause. * * * Unhappily, there is one powerful and wicked man, who, I fear, will destroy this beautiful fabric of human happiness—the Duke of Orleans. He does not, indeed, possess talent to carry into execution a great project, but he possesses immense wealth, and France abounds in marketable talents. Every city and town has young men eminent for abilities, particularly in the law—ardent in character, eloquent, ambitious of distinction, but poor. These are the instruments which the Duke may command by money, and they will do his bidding. His hatred of the royal family can be satiated only by their ruin; his ambition, probably leads him to aspire to the throne.

"You saw the other day, in the mob, men who were called *les Marseillois, les patriots par excellence.* You saw them particularly active and audacious in stimulating the discontented artisans and laborers, who composed the great mass of the mob, to acts of violence and ferocity; these men are, in

truth, desperadoes, assassins from the south of France, familiar with murder, robbery, and every atrocious crime, who have been brought up to Paris by the money of the Duke, for the very purpose in which you saw them employed, of mingling in all mobs, and exciting the passions of the people to frenzy.

"This is the first act of the drama. The second will be to influence the elections, to fill the approaching Assembly with ardent, inexperienced, desperate, ambitious young men, who, instead of proceeding to discuss calmly the details of the plan of which I have given you the general outline, and to carry it quietly into operation, will, under disguise of zeal for the people, and abhorrence of the aristocrats, drive every measure to extremity, for the purpose of throwing the affairs of the nation into utter confusion, when the master spirit may accomplish his ultimate purpose." *

Such was the report of affairs in France which Lafayette transmitted by Trumbull to Washington. It was not long after this conversation of the Colonel with the Marquis that, the sittings of the National Assembly being transferred from Versailles to Paris, the Breton club fixed itself on the site of the convent of Jacobins; threw open its doors to the public and soon, under the appellation of the JACOBIN CLUB, exercised the baleful influence in public affairs, which Lafayette apprehended.

Washington had listened with profound attention to the report rendered by Trumbull. In the course of a subsequent conversation the latter informed him that Mr. Jefferson had embarked for America, and, it was probable, had already landed at Norfolk in Virginia. Washington immediately forwarded to him his commission as Secretary of State, requesting to know his determination on the subject.

Jefferson, in reply, expressed himself flattered by the nomination, but dubious of his being equal to its extensive and various duties, while, on the other hand, he felt familiar with the duties of his present office. "But it is not for an individual to choose his path," said he. "You are to marshal us as may best be for the public good. * * * Signify to me, by another line, your ultimate wish, and I shall conform to it cordially. If it should be to remain in New York, my chief comfort will be to work under your eye; my only shelter the authority of your name and the wisdom of measures to be dictated by you and implicitly executed by me." †

* Trumbull's Autobiography, 151.
† Jefferson's Works, vol. iii. p. 125.

Washington, in answer, informed him that he considered the successful administration of the general government an object of almost infinite consequence to the present and future happiness of the citizens of the United States; that he regarded the office of Secretary for the department of State very important, and that he knew of no person who, in his judgment, could better execute the duties of it than himself.*

Jefferson accordingly accepted the nomination, but observed that the matters which had called him home, would probably prevent his setting out for New York before the month of March

CHAPTER XX.

Reassembling of Congress—Financial Condition of the Country—Tts Debt at Home and Abroad—Debts of the States—Hamilton's Report—Opposition to it—Dr. Stuart's Warning Letter to Washington—His Reply—Jefferson's Arrival at the Seat of Government—New York at that Period—Jefferson Apprehends Monarchical Designs.

CONGRESS reassembled on the 4th of January (1790), but a quorum of the two Houses was not present until the 8th, when the session was opened by Washington in form, with an address delivered before them in the Senate chamber.†

* Washington's Writings, x. 77.

† As the degree of state with which the session was opened was subsequently a matter of comment, we extract from Washington's diary his own account of it, premising that the regulations were devised by General Knox and Colonel Humphreys.

"Friday 8th, according to appointment, at 11 o'clock, I set out for the City Hall in my coach, preceded by Colonel Humphreys and Major Jackson in uniform (on my two white horses), and followed by Messrs. Lear and Nelson in my chariot, and Mr. Lewis, on horseback, following them. In their rear was the Chief Justice of the United States and Secretaries of the Treasury and War Departments in their respective carriages, and in the order they are named. At the outer door of the Hall, I was met by the door-keepers of the Senate and House and conducted to the door of the Senate chamber, and passing from thence to the chair through the Senate on the right and House of Representatives on the left, I took my seat. The gentlemen who attended me followed and took their stands behind the senators; the whole rising as I entered. After being seated, at which time the members of both Houses also sat, I rose (as they also did), and made my speech, delivering one copy to the President of the Senate and another to the Speaker of the House of Representatives—after which, and being a few moments seated, I retired, bowing on each side to the assembly (who stood) as I passed, and descending to the lower hall attended as before, I returned with them to my house."

Among the most important objects suggested in the address for the deliberation of Congress, were provisions for national defence; provisions for facilitating intercourse with foreign nations, and defraying the expenses of diplomatic agents; laws for the naturalization of foreigners; uniformity in the currency, weights, and measures of the United States; facilities for the advancement of commerce, agriculture, and manufactures; attention to the post-office and post-roads; measures for the promotion of science and literature, and for the support of public credit.

This last object was the one which Washington had more immediately at heart. The government was now organized, apparently, to the satisfaction of all parties; but its efficiency would essentially depend on the success of a measure which Washington had pledged himself to institute, and which was yet to be tried; namely, a system of finance adapted to revive the national credit, and place the public debt in a condition to be paid off. The credit of the country was at a low ebb. The confederacy, by its articles, had the power of contracting debts for a national object, but no control over the means of payment. Thirteen independent legislatures could grant or withhold the means. The government was then a government under governments—the States had more power than Congress. At the close of the war the debt amounted to forty-two millions of dollars; but so little had the country been able to fulfil its engagements, owing to the want of a sovereign legislature having the sole and exclusive power of laying duties upon imports, and thus providing adequate resources, that the debt had swollen, through arrears of interest, to upwards of fifty-four millions. Of this amount nearly eight millions were due to France, between three and four millions to private lenders in Holland, and about two hundred and fifty thousand in Spain; making, altogether, nearly twelve millions due abroad. The debt contracted at home amounted to upwards of forty-two millions, and was due, originally, to officers and soldiers of the revolutionary war, who had risked their lives for the cause; farmers who had furnished supplies for the public service, or whose property had been assumed for it; capitalists who, in critical periods of the war, had adventured their fortunes in support of their country's independence. The domestic debt, therefore, could not have had a more sacred and patriotic origin; but, in the long delay of national justice, the paper which represented these outstanding claims, had sunk to less than a sixth of its nominal value, and the larger portion of it had been parted

with at that depreciated rate, either in the course of trade, or to speculative purchasers, who were willing to take the risk of eventual payment, however little their confidence seemed to be warranted, at the time, by the pecuniary condition and prospects of the country.

The debt, when thus transferred, lost its commanding appeal to patriotic sympathy; but remained as obligatory in the eye of justice. In public newspapers, however, and in private circles, the propriety of a discrimination between the assignees and the original holders of the public securities, was freely discussed. Beside the foreign and domestic debt of the federal government, the States, individually, were involved in liabilities contracted for the common cause, to an aggregate amount of about twenty-five millions of dollars; of which, more than one-half was due from three of them; Massachusetts and South Carolina each owing more than five millions, and Virginia more than three and a half. The reputation and the well-being of the government were, therefore, at stake upon the issue of some plan to retrieve the national credit, and establish it upon a firm and secure foundation.

The Secretary of the Treasury (Mr. Hamilton), it will be remembered, had been directed by Congress to prepare such a plan during its recess. In the one thus prepared, he asserted, what none were disposed to question, the propriety of paying the foreign debt according to its terms. He asserted, also, the equal validity of the original claims of the American creditors of the government; whether those creditors were the original holders of its certificates or subsequent purchasers of them at a depreciated value. The idea of any distinction between them, which some were inclined to advance, he repudiated as alike unjust, impolitic, and impracticable. He urged, moreover, the assumption, by the general government, of the separate debts of the States, contracted for the common cause, and that a like provision should be made for their payment as for the payment of those of the Union. They were all contracted in the struggle for national independence, not for the independence of any particular part. No more money would be required for their discharge as federal, than as State debts. Money could be raised more readily by the federal government than by the States, and all clashing and jealousy between State and federal debtors would thus be prevented. A reason, also, which, no doubt, had great weight with him, though he did not bring it under consideration in his report, for fear, probably, of offending the jealousy of State sovereignty, dormant, but not ex-

tinct, was, that it would tend to unite the States financially, as they were united politically, and strengthen the central government by rallying capitalists around it; subjecting them to its influence, and rendering them agents of its will. He recommended, therefore, that the entire mass of debt be funded; the Union made responsible for it, and taxes imposed for its liquidation. He suggested, moreover, the expediency, for the greater security of the debt and punctuality in the payment of interest, that the domestic creditors submit to an abatement of accruing interest.

The plan was reported to the House by Mr. Hamilton, the 14th of January, but did not undergo consideration until the 8th of February, when it was opposed with great earnestness, especially the point of assuming the State debts, as tending to consolidation, as giving an undue influence to the general government, and as being of doubtful constitutionality. This financial union of the States was reprobated, not only on the floor of Congress, but in different parts of the Union, as fraught with political evil. The Northern and Eastern States generally favored the plan, as did also South Carolina, but Virginia manifested a determined opposition. The measure, however, passed, in Committee of the Whole, on the 9th of March, by a vote of 31 to 26.

The funding of the State debts was supposed to benefit, materially, the Northern States, in which was the entire capital of the country; yet, South Carolina voted for the assumption. The fact is, opinions were honestly divided on the subject. The great majority were aiming to do their duty—to do what was right: but their disagreement was the result of real difficulties incident to the intricate and complicated problem with which they had to deal.

A letter from Washington's monitory friend, Dr. Stuart of Virginia (dated March 15), spoke with alarm of the jealous belief growing up in that quarter, that the Northern and Eastern States were combining to pursue their own exclusive interests. Many, he observed, who had heretofore been warm supporters of the government, were changing their sentiments, from a conviction of the impracticability of union with States whose interests were so dissimilar.

Washington had little sympathy with these sectional jealousies; and the noble language in which he rebukes them, cannot be too largely cited. "I am sorry," observes he, "such jealousies as you speak of, should be gaining ground and poisoning the minds of the southern people; but, admit the fact which is alleged as the cause of them, and give it full

scope, does it amount to more than was known to every man of information before, at, and since the adoption of the Constitution? Was it not always believed that there are some points which peculiarly interest the Eastern States? And did any one who reads human nature, and more especially the character of the eastern people, conceive that they would not pursue them steadily, by a combination of their force? Are there not other points which equally concern the Southern States? If these States are less tenacious of their interest, or if, while the Eastern move in a solid phalanx to effect their views, the Southern are always divided, which of the two is most to be blamed? That there is a diversity of interests in the Union, none has denied. That this is the case, also, in every State, is equally certain; and that it even extends to the counties of individual States, can be as readily proved. Instance the southern and northern parts of Virginia, the upper and lower parts of South Carolina. Have not the interests of these always been at variance? Witness the county of Fairfax. Have not the interests of the people of the county varied, or the inhabitants been taught to believe so? These are well-known truths, and yet it did not follow that separation was to result from the disagreement.

"To constitute a dispute, there must be two parties. To understand it well, both parties, and all the circumstances must be fully heard; and, to accommodate differences, temper and mutual forbearance are requisite. Common danger brought the states into confederacy, and on the union our safety and importance depend. A spirit of accommodation was the basis of the present Constitution. Can it be expected, then, that the southern or eastern parts of the empire will succeed in all their measures? Certainly not. But I will readily grant that more points will be carried by the latter than the former, and for the reason which has been mentioned; namely, that in all great national questions, they move in unison, whilst the others are divided. But I ask again, which is most blameworthy, these who see and will steadily pursue their interest, or those who cannot see, or seeing, will not act wisely? And I will ask another question, of the highest magnitude in my mind, to wit, if the Eastern and Northern States are dangerous in *union*, will they be less in *separation?* If self-interest is their governing principle, will it forsake them, or be restrained by such an event? I hardly think it would. Then, independently of other considerations, what would Virginia, and such other States as might be in-

clined to join her, gain by a separation? Would they not, most unquestionably, be the weaker party?"

At this juncture (March 21st), when Virginian discontents were daily gaining strength, Mr. Jefferson arrived in New York to undertake the duties of the Department of State. We have shown his strong antipathies, while in Paris, to every thing of a monarchical or aristocratical tendency; he had just been in Virginia, where the forms and ceremonials adopted at the seat of our government, were subjects of cavil and sneer; where it was reported that Washington affected a monarchical style in his official intercourse, that he held court-like levees, and Mrs. Washington "queenly drawing-rooms," at which none but the aristocracy were admitted, that the manners of both were haughty, and their personal habits reserved and exclusive.

The impressions thus made on Jefferson's mind, received a deeper stamp on his arrival in New York, from conversations with his friend Madison, in the course of which the latter observed, that "the satellites and sycophants which surrounded Washington, had wound up the ceremonials of the government to a pitch of stateliness which nothing but his personal character could have supported, and which no character after him could ever maintain."

Thus prepossessed and premonished, Jefferson looked round him with an apprehensive eye, and appears to have seen something to startle him at every turn. We give, from his private correspondence, his own account of his impressions. "Being fresh from the French revolution, while in its first and pure stage, and, consequently, somewhat whetted up in my own republican principles, I found a state of things in the general society of the place, which I could not have supposed possible. The revolution I had left, and that we had just gone through in the recent change of our own government, being the common topics of conversation, I was astonished to find the general prevalence of monarchical sentiments, insomuch, that in maintaining those of republicanism, I had always the whole company on my hands, never scarcely finding among them a single co-advocate in that argument, unless some old member of Congress happened to be present. The furthest that any one would go in support of the republican features of our new government, would be to say, 'the present constitution is well as a beginning, and may be allowed a fair trial, but it is, in fact, only a stepping stone to something better.'"

This picture, given under excitement and with preconceived notions, is probably over-charged; but, allowing it to be true,

we can hardly wonder at it, viewed in connection with the place and times. New York, during the session of Congress, was the gathering place of politicians of every party. The revolution of France had made the forms of government once more the usual topics of conversation, and revived the conflicts of opinions on the subject. As yet, the history of the world had furnished no favorable examples of popular government; speculative writers in England had contended that no government more popular than their own, was consistent with either internal tranquillity, the supremacy of the laws, or a great extent of empire. Our republic was ten times larger than any that had yet existed. Jay, one of the calmest thinkers of the Union, expressed himself dubiously on the subject.

"Whether any people could long govern themselves in an equal, uniform, and orderly manner, was a question of vital importance to the cause of liberty, but a question which, like others, whose solution depends on facts, could only be determined by experience—now, as yet, there had been very few opportunities of making the experiment."

Alexander Hamilton, though pledged and sincerely disposed to support the republican form, with regard to our country, preferred, *theoretically*, a monarchical form; and, being frank of speech, and, as Gouverneur Morris writes, "prone to mount his hobby," may have spoken openly in favor of that form as suitable to France; and as his admirers took their creed from him, opinions of the kind may have been uttered pretty freely at dinner-tables. These, however, which so much surprised and shocked Mr. Jefferson, were probably merely speculative opinions, broached in unguarded hours, with no sinister design, by men who had no thought of paving the way for a monarchy. They made, however, a deep impression on his apprehensive mind, which sank deeper and deeper until it became a fixed opinion with him, that there was the desire and aim of a large party, of which Hamilton was the leader, to give a regal form to the government.

CHAPTER XXI.

The Assumption of the State Debts discussed—Washington in favor—A Majority of Two Against it—Hamilton's Appeal to Jefferson on the subject—The Latter Arranges for a Compromise—His account of it—Adjustment about the Seat of Government—Assumption carried—Treaty of Peace with the Creeks—Cavillings about Presidential Etiquette—Washington's Defence—Adjournment of Congress—Fancied Harmony of the Cabinet—Jefferson suspects Hamilton of Finesse in Procuring his Agency in the Assumption.

The question of the assumption of the State debts was resumed in Congress on the 29th of March, on a motion to commit, which was carried by a majority of two; the five members from North Carolina (now a State of the Union) who were strongly opposed to assumption, having taken their seats and reversed the position of parties on the question. An angry and intemperate discussion was revived, much to the chagrin of Washington, who was concerned for the dignity of Congress; and who considered the assumption of the State debts, under proper restrictions and scrutiny into accounts, to be just and reasonable.* On the 12th of April, when the question to commit was taken, there was a majority of two against the assumption.

On the 26th the House was discharged, for the present, from proceeding on so much of the report as related to the assumption. Jefferson, who had arrived in New York in the midst of what he terms "this bitter and angry contest," had taken no concern in it; being, as he says, "a stranger to the ground, a stranger to the actors in it, so long absent as to have lost all familiarity with the subject, and to be unaware of its object." We give his own account of an earnest effort made by Hamilton, who, he says, was "in despair," to resuscitate, through his influence, his almost hopeless project. "As I was going to the President's one day, I met him [Hamilton] in the street. He walked me backwards and forwards before the President's door for half an hour. He painted pathetically the temper into which the legislature had been wrought; the disgust of those who were called the creditor States; the danger of the *secession* of their members, and the separation of the States. He observed that the members of the administration ought to act in concert; that though this question was not of my department, yet a common duty should make it a common concern; that the President was the centre on

* See letter to David Stuart, Writings, x. p. 98.

which all administrative questions ultimately rested, and that all of us should rally around him, and support, with joint efforts, measures approved by him; and that the question having been lost by a small majority only, it was probable that an appeal from me to the judgment and discretion of some of my friends, might effect a change in the vote, and the machine of government, now suspended, might be again set into motion. I told him that I was really a stranger to the whole subject; that not having yet informed myself of the system of finance adopted, I knew not how far this was a necessary sequence; that undoubtedly, if its rejection endangered a dissolution of our Union at this incipient stage, I should deem that the most unfortunate of all consequences, to avert which all partial and temporary evils should be yielded. I proposed to him, however, to dine with me the next day, and I would invite another friend or two, bring them into conference together, and I thought it impossible that reasonable men, consulting together coolly, could fail, by some mutual sacrifices of opinion, to form a compromise which was to save the Union. The discussion took place. I could take no part in it but an exhortatory one, because I was a stranger to the circumstances which should govern it. But it was finally agreed, that whatever importance had been attached to the rejection of this proposition, the preservation of the Union and of concord among the States, was more important, and that, therefore, it would be better that the vote of rejection should be rescinded, to effect which some members should change their votes. But it was observed that this pill would be peculiarly bitter to the Southern States, and that some concomitant measure should be adopted to sweeten it a little to them. There had before been projects to fix the seat of government either at Philadelphia or at Georgetown on the Potomac; and it was thought that, by giving it to Philadelphia for ten years, and to Georgetown permanently afterwards, this might, as an anodyne, calm in some degree the ferment which might be excited by the other measure alone. So two of the Potomac members (White and Lee, but White with a revulsion of stomach almost convulsive) agreed to change their votes, and Hamilton undertook to carry the other point. In doing this, the influence he had established over the eastern members, with the agency of Robert Morris with those of the Middle States, effected his side of the engagement." *

The decision of Congress was ultimately in favor of assump-

* Jefferson's Works, ix. 93, The Anas.

tion, though the form in which it finally passed differed somewhat from the proposition of Hamilton. A specific sum was assumed ($21,500,000), and this was distributed among the States in specific portions. Thus modified, it passed the Senate, July 22d, by the close vote of fourteen to twelve; and the House, July 24th, by thirty-four to twenty-eight, "after having," says Washington, "been agitated with a warmth and intemperance, with prolixity and threats which, it is to be feared, have lessened the dignity of Congress and decreased the respect once entertained for it."

The question about the permanent seat of government, which, from the variety of contending interests, had been equally a subject of violent contest, was now compromised. It was agreed that Congress should continue for ten years to hold its sessions at Philadelphia; during which time the public buildings should be erected at some place on the Potomac, to which the government should remove at the expiration of the above term. A territory, ten miles square, selected for the purpose on the confines of Maryland and Virginia, was ceded by those States to the United States, and subsequently designated as the District of Columbia.

One of the last acts of the Executive during the session was the conclusion of a treaty of peace and friendship with the Creek nation of Indians, represented at New York by Mr. M'Gillivray, and thirty of the chiefs and head men. By this treaty (signed August 7th), an extensive territory, claimed by Georgia, was relinquished greatly to the discontent of that State; being considered by it an unjustifiable abandonment of its rights and interests. Jefferson, however, lauded the treaty as important, "drawing a line," said he, "between the Creeks and Georgia, and enabling the government to do, as it will do, justice against either party offending."

In familiar conversation with the President, Jefferson remonstrated frequently and earnestly against the forms and ceremonies prevailing at the seat of government. Washington, in reply, gave the explanation which we have stated in a preceding chapter; that they had been adopted at the advice of others, and that for himself he was indifferent to all forms. He soon, however, became painfully aware of the exaggerated notions on the subject prevalent in Virginia. A letter from his friend, Dr. Stuart, informed him that Patrick Henry had scouted the idea of being elected to the Senate; he was too old, he said, to fall into the awkward imitations which were now become fashionable. "From this expression," adds Mr. Stuart, "I suspect the old patriot has heard

some extraordinary representations of the etiquette established at your levees." Another person whom Dr. Stuart designates as Col. B——, had affirmed "that there was more pomp used there than at St. James's where he had been, and that Washington's bows were more distant and stiff."

These misapprehensions and exaggerations, prevalent in his native State, touched Washington to the quick, and called forth a more sensitive reply than, on such subjects, he was accustomed to make. "That I have not been able," writes he, "to make bows to the taste of poor Colonel B—— (who, by the by, I believe, never saw one of them), is to be regretted, especially, too, as, upon those occasions, they were indiscriminately bestowed, and the best I was master of. Would it not have been better to throw the veil of charity over them, ascribing their stiffness to the effects of age, or to the unskilfulness of my teacher, rather than to pride and the dignity of office, which, God knows, has no charm for me? For I can truly say, I had rather be at Mount Vernon with a friend or two about me, than to be attended at the seat of government by the officers of State and the representatives of every power in Europe."

He then goes on to give a sketch of his levees, and the little ceremony that prevailed there. As to the visits made on those occasions to the presidential mansion, they were optional, and made without invitation. "Between the hours of three and four, every Tuesday, I am prepared to receive them. Gentlemen, often in great numbers, come and go, chat with each other, and act as they please; a porter shows them into the room, and they retire from it when they please, and without ceremony. At their first entrance they salute me, and I them, and as many as I can talk to, I do. What pomp there is in all this, I am unable to discover. Perhaps it consists in not sitting. To this, two reasons are opposed: first, it is unusual; secondly, which is a more substantial one, because I have no room large enough to contain a third of the chairs which would be sufficient to admit it.

"Similar to the above, but of a more sociable kind, are the visits every Friday afternoon to Mrs. Washington, where I always am. These public meetings, and a dinner once a week, to as many as my table will hold, with the references to and from the different departments of State, and other communications with all parts of the union, are as much, if not more, than I am able to undergo; for I have already had, within less than a year, two severe attacks—the last worse than the

first. A third, more than probably, will put me to sleep with my fathers."

Congress adjourned on the 12th of August. Jefferson, commenting on the discord that had prevailed for a time among the members, observes, that in the latter part of the session, they had reacquired the harmony which had always distinguished their proceedings before the introduction of the two disagreeable subjects of the Assumption and the Residence: "these," said he, "really threatened, at one time, a separation of the legislature *sine die*."

"It is not foreseen," adds he, sanguinely, "that anything so generative of dissension can arise again; and, therefore, the friends of government hope, that difficulty surmounted in the States, everything will work well." *

Washington, too, however grieved and disappointed he may have been by the dissensions which had prevailed in Congress, consoled himself by the fancied harmony of his cabinet. Singularly free himself from all jealousy of the talents and popularity of others, and solely actuated by zeal for the public good, he had sought the ablest men to assist him in his arduous task, and supposed them influenced by the same unselfish spirit. In a letter to Lafayette, he writes, "Many of your old acquaintances and friends are concerned with me in the administration of this government. By having Mr. Jefferson at the head of the department of State, Mr. Jay of the judiciary, Hamilton of the treasury, and Knox of war, I feel myself supported by able coadjutors who harmonize extremely well together."

Yet, at this very moment, a lurking spirit of rivalry between Jefferson and Hamilton was already existing and daily gaining strength. Jefferson, who, as we have intimated, already considered Hamilton a monarchist in his principles, regarded all his financial schemes with suspicion, as intended to strengthen the influence of the treasury, and make its chief the master of every vote in the legislature, "which might give to the government the direction suited to his political views."

Under these impressions, Jefferson looked back with an angry and resentful eye, to the manner in which Hamilton had procured his aid in effecting the measure of assumption. He now regarded it as a finesse by which he had been entrapped, and stigmatized the measure itself as a "fiscal manœuvre, to which he had most ignorantly and innocently been made to hold the candle."

* Jefferson's Works, iii. 184.
† Jefferson's Works, ix. 92.

CHAPTER XXII.

Lafayette at the Head of the Revolution in France—His Letter to Washington—Gouverneur Morris's Opinion of his Position—Washington's Dubious and Anxious Views—Presented by Lafayette with the Key of the Bastille—Visits Rhode Island and Mount Vernon.

During these early stages of his administration the attention of Washington was often called off from affairs at home to affairs in France; and to the conspicuous and perilous part which his friend and disciple Lafayette, was playing in the great revolutionary drama.

"Your friend, the Marquis de Lafayette," writes the Marquis de la Luzerne, "finds himself at the head of the revolution; and, indeed, it is a very fortunate circumstance for the State that he is, but very little so for himself. Never has any man been placed in a more critical situation. A good citizen, a faithful subject, he is embarrassed by a thousand difficulties in making many people sensible of what is proper, who very often feel it not, and who sometimes do not understand what it is."

Lafayette, too, amid the perplexities of conducting a revolution, looked back to the time when, in his early campaigns in America, he had shared Washington's councils, bivouacked with him on the field of battle, and been benefited by his guardian wisdom in every emergency.

"How often, my well-beloved general," writes he (January, 1790), "have I regretted your sage councils and friendly support. We have advanced in the career of the revolution without the vessel of State being wrecked against the rocks of aristocracy or faction. In the midst of efforts, always renewing, of the partisans of the past and of the ambitious, we advance towards a tolerable conclusion. At present, that which existed has been destroyed; a new political edifice is forming; without being perfect, it is sufficient to assure liberty. Thus prepared, the nation will be in a state to elect, in two years, a convention which can correct the faults of the constitution. * * * The result will, I hope, be happy for my country and for humanity. One perceives the germs of liberty in other parts of Europe. I will encourage their development by all the means in my power."

Gouverneur Morris, who is no enthusiast of the revolution,

regards its progress with a dubious eye. Lafayette, in the previous month of November, had asked his opinion of his situation. "I give it to him," writes Morris, "*sans ménagement.* I tell him that the time approaches when all good men must cling to the throne. That the present king is very valuable on account of his moderation; and if he should possess too great authority, might be persuaded to grant a proper constitution. That the thing called a constitution, which the Assembly have framed, is good for nothing. That, as to himself, his personal situation is very delicate. That he nominally, but not really, commands his troops. That I really cannot understand how he is to establish discipline among them, but, unless he can accomplish that object, he must be ruined sooner or later."

On the 22d of January, 1790, Morris writes to Washington, "Our friend, Lafayette, burns with desire to be at the head of an army in Flanders, and drive the Stadtholder into a ditch. He acts now a splendid, but dangerous part. Unluckily, he has given in to measures, as to the constitution, which he does not heartily approve, and heartily approves many things which experience will demonstrate to be injurious." *

Far removed as Washington was from the theatre of political action, and but little acquainted with many of the minute circumstances which might influence important decisions, he was cautious in hazarding opinions in his replies to his French correspondents. Indeed, the whole revolutionary movement appeared to him so extraordinary in its commencement, so wonderful in its progress, and so stupendous in its possible consequences, that he declared himself almost lost in the contemplation of it. "Of one thing you may rest perfectly assured," writes he to the Marquis de la Luzerne, "that nobody is more anxious for the happy issue of that business than I am; as no one can wish more sincerely for the prosperity of the French nation than I do. Nor is it without the most sensible pleasure that I learn that our friend, the Marquis de Lafayette, has, in acting the arduous part which has fallen to his share, conducted himself with so much wisdom and apparently with such general satisfaction."

A letter subsequently received from Lafayette gives him two months' later tidings, extending to the middle of March. "Our revolution pursues its march as happily as is possible, with a nation which, receiving at once all its liberties, is yet subject to confound them with licentiousness. The Assembly has more

* Sparks' Life of Morris, ii. 86.

of hatred against the ancient system, than of experience to organize the new constitutional government; the ministers regret their ancient power, and do not dare to make use of that which they have; in short, as all which existed has been destroyed, and replaced by institutions very incomplete, there is ample matter for critiques and calumnies. Add to this, we are attacked by two sorts of enemies; the aristocrats who aim at a counter-revolution, and the factious who would annihilate all authority, perhaps even attempt the life of the members of the reigning branch. These two parties foment all the troubles.

"After having avowed all this, my dear general, I will tell you, with the same frankness, that we have made an admirable and almost incredible destruction of all the abuses, of all the prejudices; that all which was not useful to the people; all which did not come from them, has been retrenched; that, in considering the situation, topographical, moral, and political of France, we have effected more changes in ten months, than the most presumptuous patriots could have hoped, and that the reports about our anarchy, our internal troubles, are greatly exaggerated.

In concluding his letter, he writes: "Permit me, my dear general, to offer you a picture representing the Bastille, such as it was some days after I had given orders for its demolition. I make you homage, also, of the principal key of this fortress of despotism. It is a tribute which I owe you, as son to my adopted father, as aide-de-camp to my general, as missionary of liberty to its patriarch." *

Thomas Paine was to have been the bearer of the key, but he forwarded it to Washington from London. "I feel myself happy," writes he, "in being the person through whom the Marquis has conveyed this early trophy of the spoils of despotism, and the first ripe fruits of American principles, transplanted into Europe, to his great master and patron. That the principles of America opened the Bastille is not to be doubted, and, therefore, the key comes to the right place."

Washington received the key with reverence, as a "token of the victory gained by liberty over despotism;" and it is still preserved at Mount Vernon, as a precious historical relic.

His affectionate solicitude for the well-being of Lafayette, was somewhat relieved by the contents of his letter; but while his regard for the French nation made him rejoice in the progress of the political reform which he considered essential to its welfare, he felt a generous solicitude for the per-

* Mem. de Lafayette, T. ii. 446.

sonal safety of the youthful monarch, who had befriended America in its time of need.

"Happy am I, my good friend," writes he to the Marquis, "that, amidst all the tremendous tempests which have assailed your political ship, you have had address and fortitude enough to steer her hitherto safely through the quicksands and rocks which threatened instant destruction on every side; and that your young king, in all things, seems so well disposed to conform to the wishes of the nation. In such an important, such a hazardous voyage, when everything dear and sacred is embarked, you know full well, my best wishes have never left you for a moment. Yet I will avow, that the accounts we received through the English papers, which were sometimes our only channels of information, caused our fears of failure almost to exceed our expectations of success."

Those fears were not chimerical; for, at the very time he penned this letter, the Jacobin club of Paris had already sent forth ramifications throughout France; corresponding clubs were springing up by hundreds in the provinces, and everything was hurrying forward to a violent catastrophe.

Three days after the despatch of the last-cited letter, and two days after the adjournment of Congress, Washington, accompanied by Mr. Jefferson, departed by water on a visit to Rhode Island, which State had recently acceded to the Union. He was cordially welcomed by the inhabitants, and returned to New York, after an absence of ten days, whence he again departed for his beloved Mount Vernon, there to cast off public cares as much as possible, and enjoy the pleasures of the country during the residue of the recess of Congress.

CHAPTER XXIII.

Frontier Difficulties with the Indians—General Harmer's Expedition against them—Ambuscade of Col. Hardin's Detachment—Escape of Capt. Armstrong—A Second Detachment of Col. Hardin Compelled to Retreat—Washington's Long Anxiety as to the Result of the Enterprise—Final Tidings.

Frequent depredations had of late been made on our frontier settlements by what Washington termed "certain banditti of Indians" from the north-west side of the Ohio Some of our people had been massacred and others carried into deplorable captivity.

Strict justice and equity had always formed the basis of

Washington's dealings with the Indian tribes, and he had endeavored to convince them that such was the general policy of our government; but his efforts were often thwarted by the conduct of our own people; the encroachments of land speculators and the lawless conduct of our frontiersmen; and jealousies thus excited were fomented by the intrigues of foreign agents.

The Indians of the Wabash and the Miami rivers, who were the present aggressors, were numerous, warlike, and not deficient in discipline. They were well armed also, obtaining weapons and ammunition from the posts which the British still retained within the territories of the United States, contrary to the treaty of peace.

Washington had deprecated a war with these savages, whom he considered acting under delusion; but finding all pacific overtures unavailing, and rather productive of more daring atrocities, he felt compelled to resort to it, alike by motives of policy, humanity, and justice. An act had been provided for emergencies, by which the President was empowered to call out the militia for the protection of the frontier; this act he put in force in the interval of Congress; and under it an expedition was set on foot, which began its march on the 30th of September from Fort Washington (which stood on the site of the present city of Cincinnati). Brigadier General Harmer, a veteran of the Revolution, led the expedition, having under him three hundred and twenty regulars, with militia detachments from Pennsylvania and Virginia (or Kentucky), making in all fourteen hundred and fifty-three men. After a march of seventeen days, they approached the principal village of the Miamis. The Indians did not await an attack, but set fire to the village and fled to the woods. The destruction of the place, with that of large quantities of provisions, was completed.

An Indian trail being discovered, Colonel Hardin, a continental officer who commanded the Kentucky militia, was detached to follow it, at the head of one hundred and fifty of his men, and about thirty regulars, under Captain Armstrong and Ensign Hartshorn. They followed the trail for about six miles, and were crossing a plain covered by thickets, when suddenly there were volleys of rifles on each side, from unseen marksmen, accompanied by the horrid war-whoop. The trail had, in fact, decoyed them into an ambush of seven hundred savages, under the famous warrior Little Turtle. The militia fled, without firing a musket. The savages now turned upon the little handful of regulars, who stood their ground, and

made a brave resistance with the bayonet until all were slain, excepting Captain Armstrong, Ensign Hartshorn, and five privates. The ensign was saved by falling behind a log, which screened him from his pursuers. Armstrong plunged into a swamp, where he sank up to his neck, and remained for several hours of the night within two hundred yards of the field of action, a spectator of the war-dance of the savages over the slain. The two officers who escaped thus narrowly, found their way back to the camp about six miles distant.*

The army, notwithstanding, effected the main purpose of the expedition in laying waste the Indian villages and destroying their winter's stock of provisions, after which it commenced its march back to Fort Washington. On the 21st of October, when it was halted about ten miles to the west of Chillicothe, an opportunity was given Colonel Hardin to wipe out the late disgrace of his arms. He was detached with a larger body of militia than before, and sixty regulars, under Major Willys, to seek and bring the savages to action. The accounts of these Indian wars are very confused. It appears, however, that he had another encounter with Little Turtle and his braves. It was a bloody battle, fought well on both sides. The militia behaved bravely, and lost many men and officers, as did the regulars; Major Willys fell at the commencement of the action. Colonel Hardin was at length compelled to retreat, leaving the dead and wounded in the hands of the enemy. After he had rejoined the main force, the whole expedition made its way back to Fort Washington, on the banks of the Ohio.

During all this time, Washington had been rusticating at Mount Vernon, in utter ignorance of the events of this expedition. Week after week elapsed, without any tidings of its issue, progress, or even commencement. On the 2d of November he wrote to the Secretary of War (General Knox), expressing his surprise at this lack of information, and his anxiety as to the result of the enterprise, and requesting him to forward any official or other accounts that he might have relating to it.

"This matter," observed he, "favorable or otherwise in the issue, will require to be laid before Congress, that the motives which induced the expedition may appear." Nearly another month elapsed; the time for the reassembling of Congress was at hand, yet Washington was still without the desired information. It was not until the last of November,

*Butler's Hist. of Kentucky, 192.

that he received a letter from Governor George Clinton, of New York, communicating particulars of the affair related to him by Brant, the celebrated Indian chief.

"If the information of Captain Brant be true," wrote Washington, in reply, "the issue of the expedition against the Indians will indeed prove unfortunate and disgraceful to the troops who suffered themselves to be ambuscaded."

CHAPTER XXIV.

Congress Reassembles at Philadelphia—Residence of Washington at the New Seat of Government—The State Carriage—Hamilton's Financial Arrangements–Impost and Excise Bill—Passage of a Bill for a National Bank—Jefferson's Objections—Formation of Two Political Parties under Hamilton and Jefferson—Their Different Views—Dissatisfaction of Congress at the Report of Harmer's Expedition—Washington's Address to the Seneca Chiefs– His Desire to Civilize the Savages—Kentucky and Vermont Admitted into the Union—First Congress Expires—A New Expedition Projected Against the Hostile Tribes under General St. Clair—Washington's Solemn Warning on Taking Leave of Him.

Congress reassembled, according to adjournment, on the first Monday in December, at Philadelphia, which was now, for a time, the seat of government. A house belonging to Mr. Robert Morris, the financier, had been hired by Washington for his residence, and at his request, had undergone additions and alterations "in a plain and neat, and not by any means in an extravagant style."

His secretary, Mr. Lear, had made every preparation for his arrival and accommodation, and, among other things had spoken of the rich and elegant style in which the state carriage was fitted up. "I had rather have heard," replied Washington, "that my repaired coach was plain and elegant than rich and elegant."

Congress, at its opening, was chiefly occupied in financial arrangements, intended to establish the public credit and provide for the expenses of government. According to the statement of the Secretary of the Treasury, an additional annual revenue of eight hundred and twenty-six thousand dollars would be required, principally to meet the additional charges arising from the assumption of the State debts. He proposed to raise it by an increase of the impost on foreign distilled

spirits, and a tax by way of excise on spirits distilled at home. An Impost and Excise bill was accordingly introduced into Congress, and met with violent opposition. An attempt was made to strike out the excise, but failed, and the whole bill was finally carried through the House.

Mr. Hamilton, in his former Treasury report, had recommended the establishment of a National Bank; he now, in a special report, urged the policy of the measure. A bill, introduced in conformity with his views, was passed in the Senate, but vehemently opposed in the House; partly on considerations of policy; but chiefly on the ground of constitutionality. On one side it was denied that the constitution had given to Congress the power of incorporation; on the other side it was insisted that such power was incident to the power vested in Congress for raising money.

The question was argued at length, and with great ardor, and after passing the House of Representatives by a majority of nineteen votes, came before the executive for his approval. Washington was fully alive to the magnitude of the question and the interest felt in it by the opposing parties. The cabinet was divided on it. Jefferson and Randolph denied its constitutionality, Hamilton and Knox maintained it. Washington required of each minister the reasons of his opinion in writing; and, after maturely weighing them, gave his sanction to the act, and the bill was carried into effect.

The objection of Jefferson to a bank was not merely on constitutional grounds. In his subsequent writings he avows himself opposed to banks, as introducing a paper instead of a cash system—raising up a moneyed aristocracy, and abandoning the public to the discretion of avarice and swindlers. Paper money might have some advantages, but its abuses were inevitable, and by breaking up the measure of value, it made a lottery of all private property. These objections he maintained to his dying day; but he had others, which may have been more cogent with him in the present instance. He considered the bank as a powerful engine intended by Hamilton to complete the machinery by which the whole action of the legislature was to be placed under the direction of the Treasury, and shaped to further a monarchical system of government. Washington, he affirmed, was not aware of the drift or effect of Hamilton's schemes. "Unversed in financial projects and calculations and budgets, his approbation of them was bottomed on his confidence in the man."

Washington, however, was not prone to be swayed in his judgments by blind partiality. When he distrusted his own

knowledge in regard to any important measure, he asked the written opinions of those of his council who he thought were better informed, and examined and weighed them, and put them to the test of his almost unfailing sagacity. This was the way he had acted as a general, in his military councils, and he found the same plan efficacious in his cabinet. His confidence in Hamilton's talents, information, and integrity had led him to seek his counsels; but his approbation of those counsels was bottomed on a careful investigation of them. It was the same in regard to the counsels of Jefferson; they were received with great deference, but always deliberately and scrupulously weighed. The opposite policy of these rival statesmen brought them into incessant collision. "Hamilton and myself," writes Jefferson, "were daily pitted in the cabinet like two cocks." The warm-hearted Knox always sided with his old companion in arms; whose talents he revered. He is often noticed with a disparaging sneer by Jefferson, in consequence. Randolph commonly adhered to the latter. Washington's calm and massive intellect overruled any occasional discord. His policy with regard to his constitutional advisers has been happily estimated by a modern statesman: "He sought no unit cabinet, according to the set phrase of succeeding times. He asked no suppression of sentiment, no concealment of opinion; he exhibited no mean jealousy of high talent in others. He gathered around him the greatest public men of that day, and some of them to be ranked with the greatest of any day. He did not leave Jefferson and Hamilton without the cabinet, to shake, perhaps, the whole fabric of government in their fierce wars and rivalries, but he took them within, where he himself might arbitrate their disputes as they arose, and turn to the best account for the country their suggestions as they were made." *

In the mean time two political parties were forming throughout the Union, under the adverse standards of these statesmen. Both had the good of the country at heart, but differed as to the policy by which it was to be secured. The Federalists, who looked up to Hamilton as their model, were in favor of strengthening the general government so as to give it weight and dignity abroad and efficiency at home; to guard it against the encroachments of the individual States and a general tendency to anarchy. The other party, known as republicans or democrats, and taking Mr. Jefferson's view of affairs, saw in all the measures advocated by the Federalists, an intention to convert the Federal into a great central or

* Speech of R. M. T. Hunter, of Virginia.

consolidated government, preparatory to a change from a republic to a monarchy.

The particulars of General Harmer's expedition against the Indians, when reported to Congress, gave great dissatisfaction. The conduct of the troops, in suffering themselves to be surprised, was for some time stigmatized as disgraceful. Further troubles in that quarter were apprehended, for the Miamis were said to be less disheartened by the ravage of their villages than exultant at the successful ambuscades of Little Turtle.

Three Seneca chiefs, Cornplanter, Half Town, and Great Tree, being at the seat of government on business of their own nation, offered to visit these belligerent tribes, and persuade them to bury the hatchet. Washington, in a set speech, encouraged them in the undertaking. "By this humane measure," said he, "you will render these mistaken people a great service, and probably prevent their being swept off of the face of the earth. The United States require only that these people should demean themselves peaceably. But they may be assured that the United States are able, and will most certainly punish them severely for all their robberies and murders."

Washington had always been earnest in his desire to civilize the savages, but had little faith in the expedient which had been pursued, of sending their young men to our colleges; the true means, he thought, was to introduce the arts and habits of husbandry among them. In concluding his speech to the Seneca chiefs, he observed, "When you return to your country, tell your nation that it is my desire to promote their prosperity by teaching them the use of domestic animals, and the manner that the white people plough and raise so much corn; and if, upon consideration, it would be agreeable to the nation at large to learn those arts, I will find some means of teaching them at some places within their country as shall be agreed upon."

In the course of the present session, Congress received and granted the applications of Kentucky and Vermont for admission into the Union, the former after August, 1792; the latter immediately.

On the 3d of March the term of this first Congress expired. Washington, after reciting the various important measures that had been effected, testified to the great harmony and cordiality which had prevailed. In some few instances, he admitted, particularly in passing the law for higher duties on spirituous liquors, and more especially on the subject of the

bank, "the line between the southern and eastern interests had appeared more strongly marked than could be wished," the former against and the latter in favor of those measures, "but the debates," adds he, "were conducted with temper and candor."

As the Indians on the north-west side of the Ohio still continued their hostilities, one of the last measures of Congress had been an act to augment the military establishments, and to place in the hands of the executive more ample means for the protection of the frontiers. A new expedition against the belligerent tribes had, in consequence, been projected. General St. Clair, actually governor of the territory west of the Ohio, was appointed commander-in-chief of the forces to be employed.

Washington had been deeply chagrined by the mortifying disasters of General Harmer's expedition to the Wabash, resulting from Indian ambushes. In taking leave of his old military comrade, St. Clair, he wished him success and honor, but gave him a solemn warning. "You have your instructions from the Secretary of War. I had a strict eye to them, and will add but one word—Beware of a surprise! You know how the Indians fight. I repeat it—*Beware of a surprise!*" With these warning words sounding in his ear, St. Clair departed.*

CHAPTER XXV.

Washington's Tour through the Southern States—Letter to Lafayette—Gloomy Picture of French Affairs by Gouverneur Morris—His Allusion to Lafayette—Lafayette Depicts the Troubles of a Patriot Leader—Washington's Reply—Jefferson's Ardent Views of the French Revolution—Distrust of John Adams—His Contributions to Fenno's Gazette—Reprint of Paine's Rights of Man—Flight and Recapture of Louis XVI.—Jefferson Communicates the News to Washington—His Satisfaction when the King Accepts the Constitution.

In the month of March Washington set out on a tour through the Southern States; travelling with one set of horses and making occasional halts. The route projected, and of which he had marked off the halting places, was by Fredericksburg,

* Rush's Washington in Domestic Life, 67.

Richmond, Wilmington (N. C.) and Charleston to Savannah; thence to Augusta, Columbia, and the interior towns of North Carolina and Virginia, comprising a journey of eighteen hundred and eighty-seven miles; all which he accomplished without any interruption from sickness, bad weather, or any untoward accident. "Indeed," writes he, "so highly were we favored that we arrived at each place where I proposed to make any halt, on the very day I fixed upon before we set out. The same horses performed the whole tour; and, although much reduced in flesh, kept up their full spirits to the last day."

He returned to Philadelphia on the 6th of July, much pleased with his tour. It had enabled him, he said, to see, with his own eyes, the situation of the country, and to learn more accurately the disposition of the people, than he could have done from any verbal information. He had looked around him, in fact, with a paternal eye, been cheered as usual by continual demonstrations of a nation's love, and his heart had warmed with the reflection how much of this national happiness had been won by his own patriotic exertions.

"Every day's experience of the government of the United States," writes he to David Humphreys, "seems to confirm its establishment, and to render it more popular. A ready acquiescence in the laws made under it shows, in a strong light, the confidence which the people have in their representatives, and in the upright views of those who administer the government. At the time of passing a law imposing a duty on home-made spirits, it was vehemently affirmed by many that such a law could never be executed in the Southern States, particularly in Virginia and South Carolina. * * * But from the best information I could get on my journey respecting its operations on the minds of the people—and I took some pains to obtain information on this point—there remains not a doubt but it will be carried into effect, not only without opposition, but with very general approbation, in those very parts where it was foretold that it never would be submitted to by any one."

"Our public credit," adds he, "stands on that ground, which, three years ago, it would have been madness to have foretold. The astonishing rapidity with which the newly instituted bank was filled, gives an unexampled proof of the resources of our countrymen and their confidence in public measures. On the first day of opening the subscription the whole number of shares (twenty thousand) were taken up in one hour, and application made for upwards of four thousand

shares more than were granted by the institution, besides many others that were coming in from various quarters." *

To his comrade in arms, Lafayette, he also writes exultingly of the flourishing state of the country and the attachment of all classes to the government:

"While in Europe, wars or commotions seem to agitate almost every nation, peace and tranquillity prevail among us, except in some parts of our Western frontiers, where the Indians have been troublesome, to reclaim or chastise whom, proper measures are now pursuing. This contrast between the situation of the people of the United States and those of Europe, is too striking to be passed over, even by the most superficial observer, and may, I believe, be considered as one great cause of leading the people here to reflect more attentively on their own prosperous state, and to examine, more minutely, and consequently approve more fully, of the government under which they live, than they otherwise would have done. But we do not wish to be the only people who may taste the sweets of an equal and good government. We look with an anxious eye to the time when happiness and tranquillity shall prevail in your country, and when all Europe shall be freed from commotion, tumults, and alarms."

Letters from Gouverneur Morris had given him a gloomy picture of French affairs. "This unhappy country," writes he, "bewildered in pursuit of metaphysical whimsies, presents to our moral view a mighty ruin. Like the remnants of ancient magnificence, we admire the architecture of the temple, while we detest the false god to whom it was dedicated. Daws and ravens, and the birds of night, now build their nests in its niches. The sovereign, humbled to the level of a beggar's pity, without resources, without authority, without a friend. The Assembly at once a master and a slave, new in power, wild in theory, raw in practice. It engrosses all functions, though incapable of exercising any, and has taken from this fierce, ferocious people, every restraint of religion and of respect. * * * Lafayette has hitherto acted a splendid part. The king obeys but detests him. He obeys because he fears. Whoever possesses the royal person may do whatever he pleases with the royal character and authority. Hence, it happens that the ministers are of Lafayette's appointment." †

Lafayette's own letters depict the troubles of a patriot leader in the stormy time of a revolution: a leader warm,

* Writings, x. 171.
† Sparks' Life of G. Morris, ii. 117–119.

generous, honest, impulsive, but not far-seeing. "I continue to be forever tossed about on an ocean of factions and commotions of every kind; for it is my fate to be attacked with equal animosity; on one side, by all that is aristocratic, servile, parliamentary, in a word, by all the adversaries of my free and levelling doctrine; on the other, by the Orleans and anti-monarchical factions, and all the workers of disorder and pillage. If it is doubtful whether I may escape personally from so many enemies, the success of our grand and good revolution is, at least, thank heaven, assured in France, and soon it will propagate itself in the rest of the world, if we succeed in establishing public order in this country. Unfortunately, the people have much better learnt how to overturn despotism, than to comprehend the duty of submission to law. It is to you, my dear General, the patriarch and generalissimo of the promoters of universal liberty, that I ought always to render a faithful account of the conduct of your aide-de-camp in the service of this grand cause."

And in a subsequent letter: "I would that I could give you the assurance that our troubles were terminated and our constitution established. Nevertheless, though our horizon is still very dark, we commence to foresee the moment when a new legislative body will replace this Assembly; and, unless there come an intervention of foreign powers, I hope that four months from this your friend will have resumed the life of a peaceful and simple citizen.

"The rage of party, even between the different shades of patriots, has gone as far as possible without the effusion of blood; but if animosities are far from subsiding, present circumstances are somewhat less menacing of a collision between the different supporters of the popular cause. As to myself, I am always the butt for attacks of all parties, because they see in my person an insurmountable obstacle to their evil designs. In the mean time, what appears to me a species of phenomenon, my popularity hitherto has not been shaken."

And in another letter, he speaks of the multiplying dangers which menaced the progress of reform in France: "The refugees hovering about the frontiers, intrigues in most of the despotic and aristocratic cabinets, our regular army divided into Tory officers and undisciplined soldiers, licentiousness among the people not easily repressed, the capital, that gives the tone to the empire, tossed about by anti-revolutionary or factious parties, the Assembly fatigued by hard labor, and very unmanageable. However, according to the popular motto, *ça ira*, it will do."

When Lafayette thus wrote, faction was predominant at Paris. Liberty and equality began to be the watch-words, and the Jacobin club had set up a journal which was spreading the spirit of revolt and preparing the fate of royalty.

"I assure you," writes Washington, "I have often contemplated, with great anxiety, the danger to which you are personally exposed by your peculiar and delicate situation in the tumult of the time, and your letters are far from quieting that friendly concern. But to one who engages in hazardous enterprises for the good of his country, and who is guided by pure and upright views, as I am sure is the case with you, life is but a secondary consideration.

"The tumultuous populace of large cities are ever to be dreaded. Their indiscriminate violence prostrates, for the time, all public authority, and its consequences are sometimes extensive and terrible. In Paris, we may suppose these tumults are peculiarly disastrous at this time, when the public mind is in a ferment, and when, as is always the case on such occasions, there are not wanting wicked and designing men whose element is confusion, and who will not hesitate in destroying the public tranquillity to gain a favorite point."

Sympathy with the popular cause prevailed with a part of Washington's cabinet. Jefferson was ardent in his wishes that the revolution might be established. He felt, he said, that the permanence of our own revolution leaned, in some degree, on that of France; that a failure there would be a powerful argument to prove there must be a failure here, and that the success of the French revolution was necessary to stay up our own and "prevent its falling back to that kind of half-way house, the English constitution."

Outside of the cabinet, the Vice President, John Adams, regarded the French revolution with strong distrust. His official position, however, was too negative in its nature to afford him an opportunity of exerting influence on public affairs. He considered the post of Vice President beneath his talents. "My country," writes he, "has, in its wisdom, contrived for me the most insignificant office that ever the invention of man contrived or his imagination conceived."* Impatient of a situation in which, as he said, he could do neither good nor evil, he resorted, for mental relief, to the press, and for upwards of a year had exercised his fertile and ever ready pen, in furnishing Fenno's Gazette of the United States, with a series of papers entitled. "Discourses on Davila," being an analysis

* Life, i. 460.

of Davila's History of the Civil Wars of France in the 16th century. The aim of Mr. Adams, in this series, was to point out to his countrymen the dangers to be apprehended from powerful factions in ill-balanced forms of government; but his aim was mistaken, and he was charged with advocating monarchy, and laboring to prepare the way for an hereditary presidency. To counteract these "political heresies," a reprint of Paine's Rights of Man, written in reply to Burke's pamphlet on the French revolution, appeared under the auspices of Mr. Jefferson.

While the public mind was thus agitated with conflicting opinions, news arrived in August, of the flight of Louis XVI. from Paris, and his recapture at Varennes. All Jefferson's hatred of royalty was aroused by this breach of royal faith. "Such are the fruits of that form of government," said he, scornfully, "which heaps importance on idiots, and which the tories of the present day are trying to preach into our favor. It would be unfortunate were it in the power of any one man to defeat the issue of so beautiful a revolution. I hope and trust that it is not, and that, for the good of suffering humanity all over the earth, that revolution will be established and spread all over the world."

He was the first to communicate the intelligence to Washington, who was holding one of his levees, and observes, "I never saw him so much dejected by any event in my life." Washington, himself, declares that he remained for some time in painful suspense, as to what would be the consequences of this event. Ultimately, when news arrived that the king had accepted the constitution from the hands of the National Assembly, he hailed the event as promising happy consequences to France, and to mankind in general; and what added to his joy, was the noble and disinterested part which his friend, Lafayette, had acted in this great drama. "The prayers and wishes of the human race," writes he to the Marquis, "have attended the exertions of your nation; and when your affairs are settled under an energetic and equal government, the hearts of all good men will be satisfied."

CHAPTER XXVI.

Rural Hours at Mount Vernon—Assembling of Second Congress—Washington's Opening Speech—Two Expeditions Organized against the Indians, under Scott and Wilkinson—Their Feeble Result—Third Expedition under St. Clair—His Disastrous Contest and Dismal Retreat—How Washington Received the Intelligence.

A FEW weeks of autumn were passed by Washington at Mount Vernon, with his family in rural enjoyment, and in instructing a new agent, Mr. Robert Lewis, in the management of his estate; his nephew, Major George A. Washington, who ordinarily attended to his landed concerns, being absent among the mountains in quest of health.

The second Congress assembled at Philadelphia on the 24th of October, and on the 25th Washington delivered his opening speech. After remarking upon the prosperous situation of the country, and the success which had attended its financial measures, he adverted to the offensive operations against the Indians, which government had been compelled to adopt for the protection of the Western frontier. Some of these operations, he observed, had been successful, others were still depending. A brief statement will be sufficient for the successful operations alluded to. To reconcile some of the people of the West, to the appointment of General St. Clair as commander-in-chief in that quarter, a local board of war had been formed for the Western country, empowered to act in conjunction with the commanding officer of the United States, in calling out the militia; sending out expeditions against the Indians, and apportioning scouts through the exposed parts of the district of Kentucky.

Under this arrangement two expeditions had been organized in Kentucky against the villages on the Wabash. The first, in May, was led by General Charles Scott, having General Wilkinson as second in command. The second, a volunteer enterprise, in August, was led by Wilkinson alone. Very little good was effected, or glory gained by either of these expeditions. Indian villages and wigwams were burned, and fields laid waste; some few warriors were killed and prisoners taken, and an immense expense incurred.

Of the events of a third enterprise, led by General St. Clair himself, no tidings had been received at the time of Washing-

ton's opening speech; but we will anticipate the official despatches, and proceed to show how it fared with that veteran soldier, and how far he profited by the impressive warning which he had received from the President at parting.

The troops for his expedition assembled early in September, in the vicinity of Fort Washington (now Cincinnati). There were about two thousand regulars, and one thousand militia. The regulars included a corps of artillery and several squadrons of horse. An arduous task was before them. Roads were to be opened through a wilderness; bridges constructed for the conveyance of artillery and stores, and forts to be built so as to keep up a line of communication between the Wabash and the Ohio, the base of operations. The troops commenced their march directly North, on the 6th or 7th of September, cutting their way through the woods, and slowly constructing the line of forts. The little army, on the 24th of October, according to the diary of an officer, was respectable in numbers—"upon paper"—but, adds he, "the absence of the first Regiment, and desertions from the militia, had very much reduced us. With the residue there was too generally wanting the essential stamina of soldiers. Picked up and recruited from the off-scourings of large towns and cities, enervated by idleness, debauchery, and every species of vice, it was impossible they could have been made competent to the arduous duties of Indian warfare. An extraordinary aversion to service was also conspicuous amongst them, and demonstrated by repeated desertions; in many instances, to the very foe we were to combat. The late period at which they had been brought into the field, left no leisure nor opportunity to discipline them. They were, moreover, badly clothed, badly paid, and badly fed. * * * The military stores and arms were sent on in infamous order. Notwithstanding pointed orders against firing, and a penalty of one hundred lashes, game was so plenty and presented such a strong temptation, that the militia and the levies were constantly offending, to the great injury of the service and the destruction of all order in the army."*

After placing garrisons in the forts, the general continued his march. It was a forced one with him, for he was so afflicted with the gout that he could not walk, and had to be helped on and off of his horse; but his only chance to keep his little army together was to move on. A number of the Virginia troops had already, on the 27th of October, insisted on their discharges; there was danger that the whole

* Diary of Col. Winthrop Sargent, Adjutant General of the U. S. army during the campaign of 1791

battalion would follow their example, and the time of the other battalions was nearly up. The plan of the general was to push so far into the enemy's country, that such detachments as might be entitled to their discharges, would be afraid to return.

The army had proceeded six days after leaving Fort Jefferson, and were drawing near a part of the country where they were likely to meet with Indians, when, on the 30th of October, sixty of the militia deserted in a body; intending to supply themselves by plundering the convoys of provisions which were coming forward in the rear. The 1st United States regiment, under Major Hamtranck, was detached to march back beyond Fort Jefferson, apprehend these deserters, if possible, and, at all events, prevent the provisions that might be on the way, from being rifled. The force thus detached, consisted of three hundred of the best disciplined men in the service, with experienced officers.

Thus reduced to 1,400 effective rank and file, the army continued its march to a point about twenty-nine miles from Fort Jefferson, and ninety-seven from Fort Washington, and fifteen miles south of the Miami villages, where it encamped, November 3d, on a rising ground with a stream forty feet wide in front, running westerly. This stream was mistaken by General St. Clair for the St. Mary, which empties itself into the Miami of the lakes; but it was, in fact, a tributary of the Wabash.

A number of new and old Indian camps showed that this had been a place of general resort; and in the bends of the stream were tracks of a party of fifteen, horse and foot; a scouting party most probably, which must have quitted the ground just before the arrival of the army.

The troops were encamped in two lines, the right wing composed of Butler, Clarke, and Patterson's battalions, commanded by Major General Butler, forming the first line; Patterson on the right; and four pieces of artillery on the right of Butler. The left wing, consisting of Beddinger and Gaither's battalions, and the second United States regiment, commanded by Colonel Darke, formed the second line; with an interval of about seventy yards, which was all that the ground allowed. The length of the lines was nearly four hundred yards; the rear somewhat more, and the front somewhat less. A troop of horse, commanded by Captain Truman, and a company of riflemen under Captain Faulkner, were upon the right flank, and Snowden's troop of horse on the left

The ground descended gradually in front of the encampment to the stream, which, at this time, was fordable, and meandered in its course; in some places, one hundred yards distant from the camp, in others not more than twenty-five. The immediate spot of the encampment was very defensible against regular troops; but it was surrounded by close woods, dense thickets, and trunks of fallen trees, with here and there a ravine, and a small swamp—all the best kind of cover for stealthy Indian warfare.

The militia were encamped beyond the stream about a quarter of a mile in the advance, on a high flat; a much more favorable position than that occupied by the main body; and capacious enough to have accommodated the whole, and admitted any extent of lines.

It was the intention of St. Clair to throw up a slight work on the following day, and to move on to the attack of the Indian villages as soon as he should be rejoined by Major Hamtranck and the first United States regiment. The plan of this work he concerted in the evening with Major Ferguson of the artillery, a cool, indefatigable, determined man. In the mean time, Colonel Oldham, the commanding officer of the militia, was directed to send out two detachments that evening, to explore the country and gain information concerning the enemy. The militia, however, showed signs of insubordination. They complained of being too much fatigued for the purpose; in short, the service was not, and probably could not be enforced. Sentinels posted around the camp, about fifty paces distant from each other, formed the principal security.

About half an hour before sunrise on the next morning (Nov. 4th), and just after the troops had been dismissed on parade, a horrible sound burst forth from the woods around the militia camp, resembling, says an officer, the jangling of an infinitude of horse-bells. It was the direful Indian yell, followed by the sharp reports of the deadly rifle. The militia returned a feeble fire and then took to flight, dashing helter-skelter into the other camp. The first line of the continental troops, which was hastily forming, was thrown into disorder. The Indians were close upon the heels of the flying militia, and would have entered the camp with them, but the sight of troops drawn up with fixed bayonets to receive them, checked their ardor, and they threw themselves behind logs and bushes at the distance of seventy yards; and immediately commenced an attack upon the first line, which soon was extended to the second. The great weight of the attack was upon the center

of each line where the artillery was placed. The artillery, if not well served, was bravely fought; a quantity of canister and some round shot were thrown in the direction whence the Indians fired; but, concealed as they were, and only seen occasionally as they sprang from one covert to another, it was impossible to direct the pieces to advantage. The artillerists themselves were exposed to a murderous fire, and every officer, and more than two-thirds of the men, were killed and wounded. Twice the Indians pushed into the camp, delivering their fire and then rushing on with the tomahawk, but each time they were driven back. General Butler had been shot from his horse, and was sitting down to have his wound dressed, when a daring savage, darting into the camp, tomahawked and scalped him. He failed to carry off his trophy, being instantly slain.

The veteran St. Clair, who, unable to mount his horse, was borne about on a litter, preserved his coolness in the midst of the peril and disaster, giving his orders with judgment and self-possession. Seeing to what disadvantage his troops fought with a concealed enemy, he ordered Colonel Darke, with his regiment of regulars, to rouse the Indians from their covert with the bayonet, and turn their left flank. This was executed with great spirit: the enemy were driven three or four hundred yards; but, for want of cavalry or riflemen, the pursuit slackened, and the troops were forced to give back in turn. The savages had now got into the camp by the left flank; again several charges were made, but in vain. Great carnage was suffered from the enemy concealed in the woods; every shot seemed to take effect; all the officers of the second regiment were picked off, excepting three. The contest had now endured for more than two hours and a half. The spirits of the troops flagged under the loss of the officers; half the army was killed, and the situation of the remainder was desperate. There appeared to be no alternative but a retreat.

At half-past nine, General St. Clair ordered Colonel Darke, with the second regiment, to make another charge, as if to turn the right wing of the enemy, but, in fact, to regain the road from which the army was cut off. This object was effected. "Having collected in one body the greatest part of the troops," writes one of the officers, "and such of the wounded as could possibly hobble along with us, we pushed out from the left of the rear line, sacrificing our artillery and baggage." Some of the wounded officers were brought off on horses, but several of the disabled men had to be left on the ground. The poor fellows charged their pieces before

they were left: and the firing of musketry heard by the troops after they quitted the camp, told that their unfortunate comrades were selling their lives dear.

It was a disorderly flight. The troops threw away arms, ammunition, and accoutrements; even the officers, in some instances, divested themselves of their fusees. The general was mounted on a pack horse which could not be pricked out of a walk. Fortunately, the enemy did not pursue above a mile or two, returning, most probably, to plunder the camp.

By seven in the evening, the fugitives reached Fort Jefferson, a distance of twenty-nine miles. Here they met Major Hamtranck with the first regiment; but, as this force was far from sufficient to make up for the losses of the morning, the retreat was continued to Fort Washington, where the army arrived on the 8th at noon, shattered and broken-spirited. Many poor fellows fell behind in the retreat, and fancying the savages were upon them, left the road, and some of them were wandering several days, until nearly starved.

In this disastrous battle the whole loss of regular troops and levies amounted to five hundred and fifty killed, and two hundred wounded. Out of ninety-five commissioned officers who were on the field, thirty-one were slain and twenty-four wounded. Of the three hundred and nineteen militia, Colonel Oldham and three other officers were killed and five wounded; and of non-commissioned officers and privates, thirty-eight were killed and twenty-nine wounded. Fourteen artificers and ten pack horsemen were also killed, and thirteen wounded. So that, according to Colonel Sargent's estimate, the whole loss amounted to six hundred and seventy-seven killed, including thirty women, and two hundred and seventy-one wounded.

Poor St. Clair's defeat has been paralleled with that of Braddock. No doubt, when he realized the terrible havoc that had been made, he thought sadly of Washington's parting words, "Beware of a surprise!"

We have a graphic account of the manner in which the intelligence of the disaster was received by Washington at Philadelphia. Towards the close of a winter's day in December, an officer in uniform dismounted in front of the President's house, and, giving the bridle to his servant, knocked at the door. He was informed by the porter that the President was at dinner and had company. The officer was not to be denied; he was on public business, he brought despatches for the President. A servant was sent into the dining-room to communicate the matter to Mr. Lear. The latter left the table

and went into the hall, were the officer repeated what he had said to the porter. Mr. Lear, as secretary of the President, offered to take charge of the despatches and deliver them at the proper time. The officer replied that he was just arrived from the Western army; his orders were to deliver the despatches promptly to the President in person: but that he would wait his directions. Mr. Lear returned, and, in a whisper, communicated to the President what had passed. Washington rose from the table and went into the hall, whence he returned in a short time and resumed his seat, apologizing for his absence, but without alluding to the cause of it. One of the company, however, overheard him, as he took his seat, mutter to himself, with an ejaculation of extreme impatience, "I knew it would be so!"

Mrs. Washington held her drawing-room that evening. The gentlemen repaired thither from the table. Washington appeared there with his usual serenity; speaking courteously to every lady, as was his custom. By ten o'clock all the company had gone; Mrs. Washington retired soon after, and Washington and his secretary alone remained.

The general walked slowly backward and forward for some minutes in silence. As yet there had been no change in his manner. Taking a seat on a sofa by the fire he told Mr. Lear to sit down; the latter had scarce time to notice that he was extremely agitated, when he broke out suddenly: "It's all over!—St. Clair's defeated!—routed: the officers nearly all killed, the men by wholesale; the rout complete; too shocking to think of, and a surprise into the bargain!" All this was uttered with great vehemence. Then pausing and rising from the sofa, he walked up and down the room in silence, violently agitated, but saying nothing. When near the door he stopped short; stood still for a few moments, when there was another terrible explosion of wrath.

"Yes," exclaimed he, "HERE, on this very spot, I took leave of him; I wished him success and honor. 'You have your instructions from the Secretary of War,' said I, 'I had a strict eye to them, and will add but one word, BEWARE OF A SURPRISE! You know how the Indians fight us. I repeat it, BEWARE OF A SURPRISE.' He went off with that, my last warning, thrown into his ears. And yet!! To suffer that army to be cut to pieces, hacked, butchered, tomahawked, by a surprise—the very thing I guarded him against—O God! O God!" exclaimed he, throwing up his hands, and while his very frame shook with emotion, "he's worse than a murderer! How can he answer it to his country! The blood of the slain

is upon him—the curse of widows and orphans—the curse of heaven!"

Mr. Lear remained speechless; awed into breathless silence by the appalling tones in which this torrent of invective was poured forth. The paroxysm passed by. Washington again sat down on the sofa—he was silent—apparently uncomfortable, as if conscious of the ungovernable burst of passion which had overcome him. "This must not go beyond this room," said he at length, in a subdued and altered tone—there was another and a longer pause; then, in a tone quite low: "General St. Clair shall have justice," said he. "I looked hastily through the despatches; saw the whole disaster, but not all the particulars. I will receive him without displeasure; I will hear him without prejudice; he shall have full justice." *

Washington had recovered his equanimity. "The storm," we are told, "was over, and no sign of it was afterwards seen in his conduct or heard in his conversation." How well he kept his word, in regard to General St. Clair, will hereafter be shown.

CHAPTER XXVII.

The Apportionment Bill—Washington's Veto—His Concern at the Growing Asperities of Congress—Intended Retirement—Jefferson's Determination to Retire at the Same Time—Remonstrance of Washington—His Request to Madison to Prepare Valedictory—Wayne Appointed to Succeed St. Clair—Congress Adjourns—Washington at Mount Vernon—Suggests Topics for his Farewell Address—Madison's Draft—Jefferson Urges his Continuance.

In the course of the present session of Congress a bill was introduced for apportioning representatives among the people of the several States, according to the first enumeration.

The constitution had provided that the number of representatives should not exceed one for every thirty thousand persons, and the House of Representatives passed a bill allotting to each State one member for this amount of population. This ratio would leave a fraction, greater or less, in each State. Its operation was unequal, as in some States a large surplus would be unrepresented, and hence, in one branch of the legislature, the relative power of the State be affected. That, too, was

* Rush's Washington in Domestic Life.

the popular branch, which those who feared a strong executive, desired to provide with the counterpoise of as full a representation as possible.

To obviate this difficulty the Senate adopted a new principle of apportionment. They assumed the total population of the United States, and not the population of each State, as the basis on which the whole number of representatives should be ascertained. This aggregate they divided by thirty thousand: the quotient gave one hundred and twenty as the number of representatives; and this number they apportioned upon the several States according to their population; allotting to each one member for every thirty thousand, and distributing the residuary members (to make up the one hundred and twenty) among the States having the largest fractions.

After an earnest debate, the House concurred, and the bill came before the President for his decision. The sole question was as to its constitutionality; that being admitted, it was unexceptionable. Washington took the opinion of his cabinet. Jefferson and Randolph considered the act at variance with the constitution. Knox was undecided. Hamilton thought the claus of the constitution relating to the subject somewhat vague, and was in favor of the construction given to it by the legislature.

After weighing the arguments on both sides, and maturely deliberating, the President made up his mind that the act was unconstitutional. It was the obvious intent of the constitution to apply the ratio of representation according to the separate numbers of each State, and not to the aggregate of the population of the United States. Now this bill allotted to eight of the States more than one representative for thirty thousand inhabitants. He accordingly returned the bill with his objections, being the first exercise of the veto power. A new bill was substituted, and passed into a law; giving a representative for every thirty-three thousand to each State.

Great heat and asperity were manifested in the discussions of Congress throughout the present session. Washington had observed with pain the political divisions which were growing up in the country; and was deeply concerned at finding that they were pervading the halls of legislation. The press, too was contributing its powerful aid to keep up and increase the irritation. Two rival papers existed at the seat of government; one was Fenno's Gazette of the United States, in which John Adams had published his "Discourses on Davila;" the other was the National Gazette, edited by Philip Freneau. Freneau had been editor of the New York Daily Advertiser

but had come to Philadelphia in the autumn of 1791 to occupy the post of translating clerk in Mr. Jefferson's office, and had almost immediately (Oct. 31) published the first number of his Gazette. Notwithstanding his situation in the office of the Secretary of State, Freneau became and continued to be throughout the session, a virulent assailant of most of the measures of government; excepting such as originated with Mr. Jefferson, or were approved by him.

Heart-weary by the political strifes and disagreements which were disturbing the country and marring the harmony of his cabinet, the charge of government was becoming intolerably irksome to Washington; and he longed to be released from it, and to be once more master of himself, free to indulge those rural and agricultural tastes which were to give verdure and freshness to his future existence. He had some time before this expressed a determination to retire from public life at the end of his presidential term. But one more year of that term remained to be endured; he was congratulating himself with the thought, when Mr. Jefferson intimated that it was his intention to retire from office at the same time with himself.

Washington was exceedingly discomposed by this determination. Jefferson, in his Anas, assures us that the President remonstrated with him against it, "in an affectionate tone." For his own part, he observed, many motives compelled him to retire. It was only after much pressing that he had consented to take a part in the new government and get it under way. Were he to continue in it longer, it might give room to say that, having tasted the sweets of office, he could not do without them.

He observed, moreover, to Jefferson, that he really felt himself growing old; that his bodily health was less firm, and his memory, always bad, was becoming worse. The other faculties of his mind, perhaps, might be evincing to others a decay of which he himself might be insensible. This apprehension, he said, particularly oppressed him.

His activity, too, had declined; business was consequently more irksome, and the longing for tranquillity and retirement had become an irresistible passion. For these reasons he felt himself obliged, he said, to retire; yet he should consider it unfortunate if, in so doing, he should bring on the retirement of the great officers of government, which might produce a shock on the public mind of a dangerous consequence.

Jefferson, in reply, stated the reluctance with which he himself had entered upon public employment, and the resolution he had formed on accepting his station in the cabinet, to

make the resignation of the President the epoch of his own retirement from labors of which he was heartily tired. He did not believe, however, that any of his brethren in the administration had any idea of retiring; on the contrary, he had perceived, at a late meeting of the trustees of the sinking fund, that the Secretary of the Treasury had developed the plan he intended to pursue, and that it embraced years in its view.

Washington rejoined, that he considered the Treasury department a limited one, going only to the single object of revenue, while that of the Secretary of State, embracing nearly all the objects of administration, was much more important, and the retirement of the officer, therefore, would be more noticed; that though the government had set out with a pretty general good will, yet that symptoms of dissatisfaction had lately shown themselves, far beyond what he could have expected; and to what height these might arise, in case of too great a change in the administration, could not be foreseen.

Jefferson availed himself of this opportunity to have a thrust at his political rival. "I told him," (the President,) relates he, "that in my opinion there was only a single source of these discontents. Though they had, indeed, appeared to spread themselves over the war department also, yet I considered that as an overflowing only from their real channel, which would never have taken place if they had not first been generated in another department, to wit, that of the Treasury, That a system had there been contrived for deluging the States with paper money instead of gold and silver, for withdrawing our citizens from the pursuits of commerce, manufactures, buildings, and other branches of useful industry, to occupy themselves and their capitals in a species of gambling, destructive to morality, and which had introduced its poison into the government itself." *

Mr. Jefferson went on in the same strain, to comment at large upon the measures of Mr. Hamilton, but records no reply of importance on the part of Washington, whose object in seeking the conversation had been merely to persuade his Secretary to remain in the cabinet; and who had no relish for the censorious comments to which it had given rise.

Yet with all this political rivalry, Jefferson has left on record his appreciation of the sterling merit of Hamilton. In his Anas, he speaks of him as "of acute understanding, disinterested, honest, and honorable in all private transactions; amiable in society, and duly valuing virtue in private life. Yet

* Jefferson's Works, ix. 102.

so bewitched and pervaded by the British example, as to be under thorough conviction that corruption was essential to the government of a nation."

In support of this sweeping exception to Mr. Hamilton's political orthodoxy, Mr Jefferson gives, in his Anas, a conversation which occurred between that gentleman and Mr. Adams, at his (Mr. Jefferson's) table, *after the cloth was removed.* "Conversation," writes he, "began on other matters, and by some circumstance was led to the British constitution, on which Mr. Adams observed, 'purge that constitution of its corruption, and give to its popular branch equality of representation, and it would be the most perfect constitution ever devised by the wit of man.' Hamilton paused and said, 'purge it of its corruption, and give to its popular branch equality of representation, and it would become an *impracticable* government; as it stands at present, with all its supposed defects, it is the most perfect government which ever existed.'"*

This after-dinner conversation appears to us very loose ground on which to found the opinion continually expressed by Mr. Jefferson, that "Mr. Hamilton was not only a monarchist, but for a monarchy bottomed on corruption."

Subsequent to Washington's remonstrance with Mr. Jefferson above cited, he had confidential conversations with Mr. Madison on the subject of his intended retirement from office at the end of the presidential term, and asked him to think what would be the proper time and mode of announcing his intention to the public; and intimating a wish that Mr. Madison would prepare for him the announcement.

Mr. Madison remonstrated in the most earnest manner against such a resolution, setting forth, in urgent language, the importance to the country of his continuing in the presidency. Washington listened to his reasoning with profound attention, but still clung to his resolution.

In consequence of St. Clair's disastrous defeat and the increasing pressure of the Indian war, bills had been passed in Congress for increasing the army, by adding three regiments of infantry and a squadron of cavalry (which additional force was to serve for three years, unless sooner discharged), also for establishing a uniform militia system.

The question now came up as to the appointment of an officer to command in the western frontier. General St. Clair in a letter to Washington, expressed a wish that a court of in-

* Jefferson's Works, vol. ix. p. 96.

quiry might be instituted to investigate his conduct in the late expedition. "Your desire," replied Washington, March 28th, "of rectifying any errors of the public opinion relative to your conduct, by an investigation of a court of inquiry, is highly laudable, and would be readily complied with, were the measure practicable. But a total deficiency of officers in actual service, of competent rank to form a legal court for that purpose, precludes the power of gratifying your wishes on this occasion.

"The intimation of your wishes to afford your successor all the information of which you are capable, although unnecessary for my personal conviction, must be regarded as an additional evidence of the goodness of your heart, and of your attachment to your country."

In a letter dated March 31st, St. Clair urged reasons for being permitted to retain his commission "until an opportunity should be presented if necessary, of investigating his conduct in every mode presented by law."

These reasons, Washington replied, would be conclusive with him under any other circumstances than the present. "But the establishment of the troops," observes he, "allows only of one Major General. You have manifested your intention of retiring, and the essential interests of the public require that your successor should be immediately appointed, in order to repair to the frontiers.

"As the House of Representatives have been pleased to institute an inquiry into the causes of the failure of the late expedition, I should hope an opportunity would thereby be afforded you of explaining your conduct in a manner satisfactory to the public and yourself."

St. Clair resigned his commission, and was succeeded in his Western command by General Wayne, the mad Anthony of the revolution, still in the vigor of his days, being forty-seven years of age. "He has many good poin s as an officer," writes Washington, "and it is to be hoped that time, reflection, good advice, and, above all, a due sense of the importance of the trust which is committed to him, will correct his foibles, or cast a shade over them."*

Washington's first thought was that a decisive expedition conducted by this energetic man of the sword, might retrieve the recent frontier disgrace, and put an end to the persevering hostility of the Indians. In deference, however, to the clamors which had been raised against the war and its ex-

* Letter to Governor Lee. Washington's Writings, x. 248.

penses, and to meet what appeared to be the prevalent wish of the nation, he reluctantly relinquished his more energetic policy, and gave in to that which advised further negotiations for peace; though he was far from anticipating a beneficial result.

In regard to St. Clair, we will here add: that a committee of the House of Representatives ultimately inquired into the cause of the failure of his expedition, and rendered a report, in which he was explicitly exculpated. His adjutant-general also (Winthrop Sargent), in his private diary, testifies to St. Clair's coolness and bravery, though debilitated by illness. Public sentiment, however, remained for a long time adverse to him; but Washington, satisfied with the explanations which had been given, continued to honor him with his confidence and friendship.

Congress adjourned on the 8th of May, and soon afterward Washington set off on a short visit to Mount Vernon. The season was in all its beauty, and never had this rallying place of his affections appeared to him more attractive. How could he give up the prospect of a speedy return to its genial pursuits and pleasures from the harassing cares and janglings of public life. On the 20th of May, he wrote to Mr. Madison on the subject of their late conversation. "I have not been unmindful," says he, "of the sentiments expressed by you. On the contrary, I have again and again revolved them with thoughtful anxiety, but without being able to dispose my mind to a longer continuation in the office I have now the honor to hold. I therefore, still look forward with the fondest and most ardent wishes to spend the remainder of my days, which I cannot expect to be long, in ease and tranquillity."

He now renewed the request he had made Mr. Madison, for advice as to the proper time and mode for announcing his intention of retiring, and for assistance in preparing the announcement. "In revolving this subject myself," writes he, "my judgment has always been embarrassed. On the one hand, a previous declaration to retire, not only carries with it the appearance of vanity and self-importance, but it may be construed into a maneuver to be invited to remain; and, on the other hand, to say nothing, implies consent, or, at any rate, would leave the matter in doubt; and to decline afterwards, might be deemed as bad and uncandid."

"I would fain carry my request to you further," adds he. "As the recess [of Congress] may afford you leisure, and, I flatter myself, you have dispositions to oblige me, I will, with-

out apology, desire, if the measure in itself should strike you as proper, or likely to produce public good, or private honor, that you would turn your thoughts to a valedictory address from me to the public."

He then went on to suggest a number of the topics and ideas which the address was to contain; all to be expressed in "plain and modest terms." But, in the main, he left it to Mr. Madison to determine whether, in the first place, such an address would be proper; if so, what matters it ought to contain and when it ought to appear; whether at the same time with his [Washington's] declaration of his intention to retire, or at the close of his career.

Madison, in reply, approved of the measure, and advised that the notification and address should appear together, and be promulgated through the press in time to pervade every part of the Union by the beginning of November. With the letter he sent a draft of the address. "You will readily observe," writes he, "that, in executing it, I have aimed at that plainness and modesty of language, which you had in view, and which, indeed, are so peculiarly becoming the character and the occasion; and that I had little more to do as to the matter, than to follow the just and comprehensive outline which you had sketched. I flatter myself, however, that, in everything which has depended on me, much improvement will be made, before so interesting a paper shall have taken its last form."*

Before concluding his letter, Madison expressed a hope that Washington would reconsider his idea of retiring from office, and that the country might not, at so important a conjuncture, be deprived of the inestimable advantage of having him at the head of its councils.

On the 23d of May, Jefferson also addressed a long letter to Washington on the same subject. "When you first mentioned to me your purpose of retiring from the government, though I felt all the magnitude of the event, I was in a considerable degree silent. I knew that, to such a mind as yours, persuasion was idle and impertinent; that, before forming your decision, you had weighed all the reasons for and against the measure, had made up your mind in full view of them, and that there could be little hope of changing the result. Pursuing my reflections, too, I knew we were some day to try to walk alone, and, if the essay should be made while you should be alive and looking on, we should derive confidence

* Washington's Writings. Sparks, xii. 382.

from that circumstance, and resource if it failed. The public mind, too, was then calm and confident, and therefore in a favorable state for making the experiment. But the public mind is no longer so confident and serene; and that from causes in which you are no ways personally mixed."

Jefferson now launched out against the public debt and all the evils which he apprehended from the funding system, the ultimate object of all which was, said he, "to prepare the way for a change from the present republican form of government to that of a monarchy, of which the English constitution is to be the model." He concluded by pronouncing the continuance of Washington at the head of affairs, to be of the last importance.

"The confidence of the whole Union," writes he, "is centred in you. Your being at the helm will be more than an answer to every argument which can be used to alarm and lead the people in any quarter into violence or secession. North and South will hang together, if they have you to hang on; and, if the first corrective of a numerous representation should fail in its effect, your presence will give time for trying others not inconsistent with the union and peace of the States.

"I am perfectly aware of the oppression under which your present office lays your mind, and of the ardor with which you pant for retirement to domestic life. But there is sometimes an eminence of character on which society have such peculiar claims, as to control the predilections of the individual for a particular walk of happiness, and restrain him to that alone, arising from the present and future benedictions of mankind. This seems to be your condition, and the law imposed on you by Providence, in forming your character, and fashioning the events on which it was to operate; and it is to motives like these, and not to personal anxieties of mine or others, who have no right to call on you for sacrifices, that I appeal from your former determination and urge a revisal of it, on the ground of change in the aspect of things. Should an honest majority result from the new and enlarged representation, should those acquiesce, whose principles or interests they may control, your wishes for retirement would be gratified with less danger, as soon as that shall be manifest, without awaiting the completion of the second period of four years. One or two sessions will determine the crisis; and I cannot but hope, that you can resolve to add one or two more to the many years you have already sacrificed to the good of mankind." *

* Writings, x. 508.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

Jefferson's Suspicion—Contemned by Hamilton—Washington's Expostulation—Complaints of the Conduct of Freneau's Paper—Hamilton and Randolph Urge Him to a Re-election—A Warring Cabinet—Hamilton's Attack on Jefferson—Washington's Healing Admonitions—Replies of the Two Secretaries—Continued Hostility to the Excise Law—Washington's Proclamation—Renewed Effort to Allay the Discord in His Cabinet.

THE letter of Jefferson was not received by Washington until after his return to Philadelphia, and the purport of it was so painful to him, that he deferred from day to day having any conversation with that statesman on the subject. A letter written in the mean time, by Jefferson to Lafayette, shows the predominant suspicion, or rather belief, which had fixed itself in the mind of the former, and was shaping his course of action.

"A sect," writes he, "has shown itself among us, who declare they espoused our constitution not as a good and sufficient thing in itself, but only as a step to an English constitution, the only thing good and sufficient in itself, in their eyes. It is happy for us that these are preachers without followers, and that our people are firm and constant in their republican purity. You will wonder to be told that it is from the Eastward chiefly, that these champions for a king, lords, and commons, come. They get some important associates from New York, and are puffed up by a tribe of Agioteurs which have been hatched in a bed of corruption, made up after the model of their beloved England. Too many of these stock-jobbers and king-jobbers have come into our legislature, or rather, too many of our legislature have become stock-jobbers and king-jobbers. However, the voice of the people is beginning to make itself heard, and will probably cleanse their seats at the next election."*

In regard to the suspicions and apprehensions avowed in the above letter, and which apparently were haunting Jefferson's mind, Hamilton expressed himself roundly in one of his cabinet papers:

"The idea of introducing a monarchy or aristocracy into this country, by employing the influence and force of a govern-

* Jefferson's Works, iii. 450.

ment continually changing hands, towards it, is one of those visionary things that none but madmen could meditate, and that no wise man will believe. If it could be done at all, which is utterly incredible, it would require a long series of time, certainly beyond the life of any individual, to effect it —who, then, would enter into such a plot? for what purpose of interest or ambition?"

And as to the charge of stock-gambling in the legislature, Hamilton indignantly writes: "As far as I know, there is not a member of the legislature who can properly be called a stock-jobber or a paper-dealer. There are several of them who were proprietors of public debts, in various ways; some for money lent and property furnished for the use of the public during the war, others for sums received in payment of debts, and it is supposable enough that some of them had been purchasers of the public debt, with intention to hold it as a valuable and convenient property, considering an honorable provision for it as a matter of course.

"It is a strange perversion of ideas, and as novel as it is extraordinary, that men should be deemed corrupt and criminal for becoming proprietors in the funds of their country. Yet, I believe the number of members of Congress is very small, who have ever been considerable proprietors in the funds. As to improper speculations on measures depending before Congress, I believe never was any body of men freer from them." *

On the 10th of July, Washington had a conversation with Jefferson on the subject of the letter he had recently received from him; and endeavored with his usual supervising and moderating assiduity to allay the jealousies and suspicions which were disturbing the mind of that ardent politician. These, he intimated, had been carried a great deal too far. There might be *desires*, he said, among a few in the higher walks of life, particularly in the great cities, to change the form of government into a monarchy, but he did not believe there were any *designs;* and he believed the main body of the people in the Eastern States were as steadily for republicanism as in the Southern.

He now spoke with earnestness about articles in the public papers, especially in the Gazette edited by Freneau, the object of which seemed to be to excite opposition to the government, and which had actually excited it in Pennsylvania, in regard to the excise law. "These articles," said he, feelingly, "tend

* Hamilton's Works, iv. 268.

to produce a separation of the Union, *the most dreadful of calamities;* and whatever tends to produce anarchy, tends, of course, to produce a resort to monarchical government."

The articles in question had, it is true, been chiefly levelled at the Treasury department, but Washington accepted no immunity from attacks pointed at any department of his government; assuming that they were aimed directly at himself. "In condemning the administration of the government, they condemned me," said he, "for, if they thought these were measures pursued contrary to my sentiments, they must conceive me too careless to attend to them or too stupid to understand them."

He acknowledged, indeed, that he had signed many acts of which he did not approve in all their parts; but never had he put his hand to one which he did not think eligible, on the whole.

As to the bank which had been so much complained of, he observed that, until there was some infallible criterion of reason, a difference of opinion must be tolerated. He did not believe the discontents extended far from the seat of government. He had seen and spoken with many people in Maryland and Virginia in his late journey, and had found them contented and happy.

Jefferson's observations in reply tended, principally to iterate and enforce what he had already urged in his letter. The two great popular complaints were, he said, that the national debt was unnecessarily increased by the Assumption, and that it had furnished the means of corrupting both branches of the legislature. In both Houses there was a considerable squadron whose votes were devoted to the paper and stock-jobbing interest. On examining the votes of these men they would be found uniformly for every treasury measure, and as most of these measures had been carried by small majorities, they had been carried by these very votes. It was a cause of just uneasiness, therefore, when we saw a legislature legislating for their own interests in opposition to those of the people.

"Washington," observes Jefferson, "said not a word on the corruption of the legislature." He probably did not feel disposed to contend against what he may have considered jealous suspicions and deductions. But he took up the other point and defended the Assumption, agreeing, says Jefferson, that it had not increased the debt, *for that all of it was honest debt.*

He justified the excise law, too, as one of the best laws that could be passed, as nobody would pay the tax who did not choose to do it.

We give this conversation as noted down by Jefferson in his "Anas." It is one of the very few instances we have of Washington's informal discussions with the members of his cabinet, and it bears the stamp of that judgment, considerateness, delicacy, and good faith which enabled him to moderate and manage the wayward passions and impulses of able men.

Hamilton was equally strenuous with Jefferson in urging upon Washington the policy of a re-election, as it regarded the public good, and wrote to him fully on the subject. It was the opinion of every one, he alleged, with whom he had conversed, that the affairs of the national government were not yet firmly established; that its enemies, generally speaking, were as inveterate as ever; that their enmity had been sharpened by its success and all the resentments which flow from disappointed predictions and mortified vanity; that a general and strenuous effort was making in every State to place the administration of it in the hands of its enemies, as if they were its safest guardians; that the period of the next House of Representatives was likely to prove the crisis of its national character; that if Washington continued in office, nothing materially mischievous was to be apprehended; but, if he should quit, much was to be dreaded; that the same motives which had induced him to accept originally, ought to decide him to continue till matters had assumed a more determinate aspect; that, indeed, it would have been better as it regarded his own character, that he had never consented to come forward, than now to leave the business unfinished and in danger of being undone; that in the event of storms arising, there would be an imputation either of want of foresight or want of firmness; and, in fine, that on public and personal accounts, on patriotic and prudential considerations, the clear path to be pursued by him would be again to obey the voice of his country; which, it was not doubted, would be as earnest and as unanimous as ever.

In concluding his letter, Hamilton observes, "The sentiments I have delivered upon this occasion, I can truly say, proceed exclusively from an anxious concern for the public welfare and an affectionate personal attachment."

Mr. Edmund Randolph also, after a long letter on the "jeopardy of the Union," which seemed to him "at the eve of a crisis," adds: "The fuel which has been already gathered for combustion wants no addition. But how awfully might it be increased, were the violence, which is now suspended by a universal submission to your pretensions, let loose by your

resignation. Permit me, then, in the fervor of a dutiful and affectionate attachment to you, to beseech you to penetrate the consequence of a dereliction of the reins. The constitution would never have been adopted but from a knowledge that you had once sanctioned it, and an expectation that you would execute it. It is in a state of probation. The most inauspicious struggles are past, but the public deliberations need stability. You alone can give them stability. You suffered yourself to yield when the voice of your country summoned you to the administration. Should a civil war arise, you cannot stay at home. And how much easier will it be to disperse the factions, which are rushing to this catastrophe, than to subdue them after they shall appear in arms? It is the fixed opinion of the world, that you surrender nothing incomplete." *

Not the cabinet, merely, divided as it was in its political opinions, but all parties, however discordant in other points, concurred in a desire that Washington should continue in office—so truly was he regarded as the choice of the nation.

But though the cabinet was united in feeling on this one subject, in other respects its dissensions were increasing in virulence. Hamilton, aggrieved by the attacks made in Freneau's paper upon his funding and banking system, his duty on home-made spirits, and other points of his financial policy, and upon himself, by holding him up as a monarchist at heart, and considering these attacks as originating in the hostility of Freneau's patron, Mr. Jefferson, addressed a note signed T. L., to the editor of the Gazette of the United States, in which he observed that the editor of the National Gazette received a salary from government, adding the significant quere—whether this salary was paid him for translations or for publications, the design of which was to vilify those to whom the voice of the people had committed the administration of our public affairs, to oppose the measures of government, and, by false insinuations, to disturb the public peace? "In common life it is thought ungrateful for a man to bite the hand that puts bread in his mouth; but, if the man is hired to do it, the case is altered."

In another article, dated August 4th, Mr. Hamilton, under the signature of "An American," gave some particulars of the negotiations which ended in the establishment of the National Gazette, devoted to the interests of a certain party, of which Mr. Jefferson was the head. "An experiment," said he,

* Washington's Writings, x. 514.

"somewhat new in the history of political manœuvres in this country; a newspaper instituted by a public officer, and the editor of it regularly pensioned with the public money in the disposal of that officer. * * * * But, it may be asked—is it possible that Mr. Jefferson, the head of a principal department of the government, can be the patron of a paper, the evident object of which is to decry the government and its measures? If he disapproves of the government itself, and thinks it deserving of his opposition, can he reconcile it to his own personal dignity and the principles of probity, to hold an office under it, and employ the means of official influence in that opposition? If he disapproves of the leading measures which have been adopted in the course of his administration, can he reconcile it with the principles of delicacy and propriety, to hold a place in that administration, and at the same time to be instrumental in vilifying measures which have been adopted by majorities of both branches of the legislature, *and sanctioned by the chief magistrate of the Union?*"

This attack brought out an affidavit from Mr. Freneau, in which he declares that his coming to Philadelphia was his own voluntary act; that, as an editor of a newspaper, he had never been urged, advised, or influenced by Mr. Jefferson, and that not a single line of his Gazette was ever directly or indirectly written, dictated, or composed for it, by the Secretary of State.

Washington had noticed this growing feud with excessive pain, and at length found it necessary to interfere and attempt a reconciliation between the warring parties. In the course of a letter to Jefferson (Aug. 23d), on the subject of Indian hostilities, and the possibility of their being furnished by foreign agents to check, as far as possible, the rapid increase, extension, and consequence of the United States, "How unfortunate then," observes he, "and how much to be regretted that, while we are encompassed on all sides with armed enemies and insidious friends, internal dissension should be harrowing and tearing our vitals. The latter, to me, is the most serious, the most alarming and the most afflicting of the two; and without more charity for the opinions and acts of one another in governmental matters, or some more infallible criterion by which the truth of speculative opinions, before they have undergone the test of experience, are to be prejudged, than has yet fallen to the lot of fallibility, I believe it will be difficult, if not impracticable, to manage the reins of government, or to keep the parts of it together; for if, instead of laying our shoulders to the machine after measures are decided on, one pulls

this way and another that, before the utility of the thing is fairly tried, it must inevitably be torn asunder; and, in my opinion, the fairest prospect of happiness and prosperity that ever was presented to man, will be lost perhaps forever.

"My earnest wish and fondest hope, therefore, is, that instead of wounding suspicions and irritating charges, there may be liberal allowances, mutual forbearances, and temporizing yieldings on all sides. Under the exercise of these, matters will go on smoothly, and, if possible, more prosperously. Without them, everything must rub; the wheels of government will clog; our enemies will triumph, and, by throwing their weight into the disaffected scale, may accomplish the ruin of the goodly fabric we have been erecting."

Admonitions to the same purport were addressed by him to Hamilton. "Having premised these things," adds he, "I would fain hope that liberal allowances will be made for the political opinions of each other; and, instead of those wounding suspicions and irritating charges, with which some of our gazettes are so strongly impregnated, and which cannot fail, if persevered in, of pushing matters to extremity, and thereby tearing the machine asunder, that there may be mutual forbearance and temporizing yielding *on all sides*. Without these I do not see how the reins of government are to be managed, or how the Union of the States can be much longer preserved." * * * * * *

"I do not mean to apply this advice to any measures which are passed, or to any particular character. I have given it in the same *general* terms to other officers of the government. My earnest wish is, that balsam may be poured into *all* the wounds which have been given, to prevent them from gangrening, and from those fatal consequences, which the community may sustain if it is withheld."*

Hamilton was prompt and affectionate in his reply, expressing sincere regret at the circumstances which had given rise to the uneasy sensations experienced by Washington. "It is my most anxious wish," writes he, "as far as may depend upon me, to smooth the path of your administration, and to render it prosperous and happy. And, if any prospect shall open of healing or terminating the differences which exist, I shall most cheerfully embrace it; though I consider myself as the deeply injured party. The recommendation of such a spirit is worthy of the moderation and wisdom which dictated it."

He then frankly acknowledged that he had had "some in-

* Writings, x p. 284.

strumentality" in the retaliations which of late had fallen upon certain public characters.

"I considered myself compelled to this conduct," adds he, "by reasons public as well as personal, of the most cogent nature. I *know* I have been an object of uniform opposition from Mr. Jefferson, from the moment of his coming to the city of New York to enter upon his present office. I *know*, from the most authentic sources, that I have been the frequent subject of the most unkind whispers and insinuations from the same quarter. I have long seen a formed party in the legislature under his auspices, bent upon my subversion. I cannot doubt, from the evidence I possess, that the *National Gazette* was instituted by him for political purposes, and that one leading object of it has been to render me and all the measures connected with my department as odious as possible." "Nevertheless," proceeds he, "I can truly say, that, excepting explanations to confidential friends, I never directly or indirectly retaliated or countenanced retaliation till very lately. * * * * * * * * * *
But when I no longer doubted that there was a formed party deliberately bent upon the subversion of measures which in its consequences, would subvert the government; when I saw, that the undoing of the funding system in particular (which, whatever may be the original measures of that system, would prostrate the credit and honor of the nation, and bring the government into contempt with that description of men who are in every society the only firm supporters of government), was an avowed object of the party; and that all possible pains were taken to produce that effect, by rendering it odious to the body of the people, I considered it a duty to endeavor to resist the torrent, and, as an effectual means to this end, to draw aside the veil from the principal actors. To this strong impulse, to this decided conviction, I have yielded; and I think events will prove that I have judged rightly."

"Nevertheless, I pledge my hand to you, sir, that, if you shall hereafter form a plan to re-unite the members of your administration upon some steady principle of co-operation, I will faithfully concur in executing it during my continuance in office. And I will not, directly or indirectly, say or do a thing that shall endanger a feud."

Jefferson, too, in a letter of the same date, assured Washington that to no one had the dissensions of the cabinet given deeper concern than to himself—to no one equal mortification at being himself a part of them. His own grievances, which led to those dissensions, he traced back to the time when

Hamilton, in the spring of 1790, procured his influence to effect a change in the vote on Assumption. "When I embarked in the government," writes he, "it was with a determination to intermeddle not at all with the legislature, and as little as possible with my co-departments. The first and only instance of variance from the former part of my resolution, I was duped into by the Secretary of the Treasury, and made a tool for forwarding his schemes, not then sufficiently understood by me; and of all the errors of my political life, this has occasioned me the deepest regret." * * * "If it has been supposed that I have ever intrigued among the members of the legislature to defeat the plans of the Secretary of the Treasury, it is contrary to all truth. * * * That I have utterly, in my private conversations, disapproved of the system of the Secretary of the Treasury, I acknowledge and avow; and this was not merely a speculative difference. His system flowed from principles adverse to liberty, and was calculated to undermine and demolish the republic by creating an influence of his department over the members of the legislature."

In regard to Freneau's Gazette, Mr. Jefferson absolutely denied that he had set it up, but admitted that, on its first establishment, and subsequently from time to time, he had furnished the editor with the Leyden Gazette, requesting that he would always translate and publish the material intelligence contained in them. "But as to any other direction or indication," adds he, "of my wish how his press should be conducted, what sort of intelligence he should give, what essays encourage, I can protest, in the presence of Heaven, that I never did, by myself or any other, directly or indirectly, say a syllable, nor attempt any kind of influence. I can further protest, in the same awful presence, that I never did, by myself or any other, directly or indirectly, write, dictate, or procure any one sentence or sentiment to be inserted *in his or any other Gazette*, to which my name was not affixed, or that of my office. * * * * *

"Freneau's proposition to publish a paper having been about the time that the writings of PUBLICOLA and the DISCOURSES ON DAVILA had a good deal excited the public attention, I took it for granted, from Freneau's character, which had been marked as that of a good Whig, that he would give free place to pieces written against the aristocratical and monarchical principles these papers had inculcated. * *

"As to the merits or demerits of his paper, they certainly concern me not. He and Fenno [editor of the United States

Gazette] are rivals for the public favor; the one courts them by flattery, the other by censure; and I believe it will be admitted that the one has been as servile as the other severe. But is not the dignity and even decency of government committed, when one of its principal ministers enlists himself as an anonymous writer or paragraphist for either the one or the other of them?"

Mr. Jefferson considered himself particularly aggrieved by charges against him in Fenno's Gazette, which he ascribed to the pen of Mr. Hamilton, and intimated the possibility, that after his retirement from office, he might make an appeal to the country, should his own justification or the interests of the Republic require it, subscribing his name to whatever he might write, and using with freedom and truth the facts and names necessary to place the cause in its just form before that tribunal. "To a thorough disregard of the honors and emoluments of office, I join as great a value for the esteem of my countrymen; and conscious of having merited it by an integrity which cannot be reproached, and by an enthusiastic devotion to their rights and liberty, I will not suffer my retirement to be clouded by the slanders of a man, whose history, from the moment at which history can stoop to notice him, is a tissue of machinations against the liberty of the country which has not only received and given him bread, but heaped its honors on his head."

Washington's solicitude for harmony in his cabinet had been rendered more anxious by public disturbances in some parts of the country. The excise law on ardent spirits distilled within the United States, had, from the time of its enactment by Congress in 1791, met with opposition from the inhabitants of the Western counties of Pennsylvania. It had been modified and rendered less offensive within the present year; but the hostility to it had continued. Combinations were formed to defeat the execution of it, and the revenue officers were riotously opposed in the execution of their duties.

Determined to exert all the legal powers with which he was invested to check so daring and unwarrantable a spirit, Washington, on the 15th of September, issued a proclamation, warning all persons to desist from such unlawful combinations and proceedings, and requiring all courts, magistrates, and officers to bring the infractors of the law to justice; copies of which proclamation were sent to the governors of Pennsylvania and North and South Carolina.

On the 18th of October, Washington made one more effort

to allay the discord in his cabinet. Finding it impossible for the rival secretaries to concur in any system of politics, he urged them to accommodate their differences by mutual yieldings. "A measure of this sort," observed he, "would produce harmony and consequent good in our public councils, and the contrary will inevitably produce confusion and serious mischiefs; and all for what? Because mankind cannot think alike, but would adopt different means to attain the same end. For I will frankly and solemnly declare, that I believe the views of both to be pure and well meant, and that experience only will decide with respect to the salutariness of the measures which are the subjects of this dispute.

"Why, then, when some of the best citizens of the United States—men of discernment—uniform and tried patriots—who have no sinister views to promote, but are chaste in their ways of thinking and acting, are to be found, some on one side and some on the other of the questions which have caused these agitations—why should either of you be so tenacious of your opinions as to make no allowance for those of the other? * * * * * *

"I have a great, a sincere esteem and regard for you both; and ardently wish that some line could be marked out by which both of you could walk."

CHAPTER XXIX.

Washington Unanimously Re-elected—Opening of Session of Congress—Topics of the President's Speech—Abortive Attack upon the Secretary of the Treasury—Washington Installed for his Second Term.

It was after a long and painful conflict of feelings that Washington consented to be a candidate for a re-election. There was no opposition on the part of the public, and the vote for him in the Electoral College was unanimous. In a letter to a friend, he declared himself gratefully impressed by so distinguished and honorable a testimony of public approbation and confidence. In truth he had been apprehensive of being elected by but a meagre majority, which he acknowledged would have been a matter of chagrin.

George Clinton, of New York, was held up for the Vice-presidency, in opposition to John Adams; but the latter was re-elected by a majority of twenty-seven electoral votes.

But though gratified to find that the hearts of his countrymen were still with him, it was with no emotion of pleasure that Washington looked forward to another term of public duty, and a prolonged absence from the quiet retirement of Mount Vernon.

The session of Congress, which was to close his present term, opened on the fifth of November. The continuance of the Indian war formed a painful topic in the President's address. Efforts at pacification had as yet been unsuccessful: two brave officers, Colonel Hardin and Major Trueman, who had been sent to negotiate with the savages, had been severally murdered. Vigorous preparations were therefore making for an active prosecution of hostilities, in which Wayne was to take the field. Washington, with benevolent earnestness, dwelt upon the humane system of civilizing the tribes, by inculcating agricultural tastes and habits.

The factious and turbulent opposition which had been made in some parts of the country to the collection of duties on spirituous liquors distilled in the United States, was likewise adverted to by the President, and a determination expressed to assert and maintain the just authority of the laws; trusting in the "full co-operation of the other departments of government, and the zealous support of all good citizens."

In a part of the speech addressed to the House of Representatives, he expressed a strong hope that the state of the national finances was now sufficiently matured to admit of an arrangement for the redemption and discharge of the public debt. "No measure," said he, "can be more desirable, whether viewed with an eye to its intrinsic importance, or to the general sentiment and wish of the nation."

The address was well received by both houses, and a disposition expressed to concur with the President's views and wishes. The discussion of the subjects to which he had called their attention, soon produced vehement conflicts of opinion in the house, marking the growing virulence of parties. The Secretary of the Treasury, in reporting, at the request of the House, a plan for the annual reduction of so much of the national debt as the United States had a right to redeem, spoke of the expenses of the Indian war, and the necessity of additional internal taxes. The consideration of the report was parried or evaded, and a motion made to reduce the military establishment. This gave an opportunity for sternly criticising the mode in which the Indian war had been conducted; for discussing the comparative merits and cost of regular and militia forces, and for inveighing against standing armies, as

dangerous to liberty. These discussions, while they elicited much heat, led to no present result, and gave way to an inquiry into the conduct of the Secretary of the Treasury in regard to certain loans, which the President, in conformity to acts of Congress, had authorized him to make; but concerning the management of which he had not furnished detailed reports to the legislature.

The subject was opened by Mr. Giles, of Virginia, who moved in the House of Representatives a series of resolutions seeking information in the matter, and who followed his resolutions by a speech, charging the Secretary of the Treasury with official misconduct, and intimating that a large balance of public money had not been accounted for.

A report of the Secretary gave all the information desired; but the charges against him continued to be urged with great acrimony to the close of the session, when they were signally rejected, not more than sixteen members voting for any one of them.

The veneration inspired by the character of Washington, and the persuasion that he would never permit himself to be considered the head of a party, had hitherto shielded him from attack; a little circumstance, however, showed that the rancor of party was beginning to glance at him.

On his birth-day (Feb. 22) many of the members of Congress were desirous of waiting on him in testimony of respect as chief magistrate of the Union, and a motion was made to adjourn for half an hour for the purpose. It met with serious opposition as a species of homage—it was setting up an idol dangerous to liberty—it had a bias towards monarchy!

Washington, though he never courted popularity, was attentive to the signs of public opinion, and disposed to be guided by them when right. The time for entering upon his second term of Presidency was at hand. There had been much cavilling at the parade attending his first installation. Jefferson especially had pronounced it "not at all in character with the simplicity of the republican government, and looking, as if wishfully, to those of European Courts."

To guide him on the coming occasion, Washington called the heads of departments together, and desired they would consult with one another, and agree on any changes they might consider for the better, assuring them he would willingly conform to whatever they should advise.

They held such consultation, and ultimately gave their individual opinions in writing, with regard to the time, manner, and place of the President's taking the oath of office. As

they were divided in opinion, and gave no positive advice as to any change, no change was made. On the 4th of March, the oath was publicly administered to Washington by Mr. Justice Cushing, in the Senate Chamber, in presence of the heads of departments, foreign ministers, such members of the House of Representatives as were in town, and as many other spectators as could be accommodated.

CHAPTER XXX.

Gouverneur Morris Minister at the French Court—His Representations of the State of Affairs—Washington's Concern for Lafayette—Jefferson Annoyed at his Forebodings—Overthrow of the French Monarchy—Imprisonment of Lafayette—Jefferson Concerned, but not Discouraged at the Republican Massacres—Washington Shocked—His Letter to the Marchioness Lafayette.

Early in 1792, Gouverneur Morris had received the appointment of minister plenipotentiary to the French court. His diplomatic correspondence from Paris gave shocking accounts of the excesses attending the revolution. France, he represented as governed by Jacobin clubs. Lafayette, by endeavoring to check their excesses, had completely lost his authority. "Were he to appear just now in Paris, unattended by his army," writes Morris, "he would be torn to pieces." Washington received these accounts with deep concern. What was to be the fate of that distracted country—what was to be the fate of his friend!

Jefferson was impatient of these gloomy picturings; especially when he saw their effect upon Washington's mind. "The fact is," writes he, "that Gouverneur Morris, a high-flying monarchy man, shutting his eyes and his faith to every fact against his wishes, and believing every thing he desires to be true, has kept the President's mind constantly poisoned with his forebodings."

His forebodings, however, were soon verified. Lafayette addressed from his camp, a letter to the Legislative Assembly, formally denouncing the conduct of the Jacobin club, as violating the declaration of rights and the constitution.

His letter was of no avail. On the 20th of June bands from the Faubourg St. Antoine, armed with pikes, and headed by Santerre, marched to the Tuileries, insulted the king in the

presence of his family, obliging him to put on the *bonnet rouge*, the baleful cup of liberty of the revolution. Lafayette, still loyal to his sovereign, hastened to Paris, appeared at the bar of the Assembly, and demanded, in the name of the army, the punishment of those who had thus violated the constitution, by insulting in his palace, the chief of the executive power. His intervention proved of no avail, and he returned with a sad and foreboding heart to his army.

On the 9th of August, Paris was startled by the sound of the fatal tocsin at midnight. On the 10th the chateau of the Tuileries was attacked, and the Swiss guard who defended it, were massacred. The king and queen took refuge in the National Assembly, which body decreed the suspension of the king's authority.

It was at once the overthrow of the monarchy, the annihilation of the constitutional party, and the commencement of the reign of terror. Lafayette, who was the head of the constitutionalists, was involved in their downfall. The Jacobins denounced him in the National Assembly; his arrest was decreed, and emissaries were sent to carry the decree into effect. At first he thought of repairing at once to Paris and facing his accusers, but, on second thoughts, determined to bend before the storm and await the return of more propitious days.

Leaving everything in order in his army, which remained encamped at Sedan, he set off with a few trusty friends for the Netherlands, to seek an asylum in Holland or the United States, but, with his companions, was detained a prisoner at Rochefort, the first Austrian post.

"Thus his circle is completed," writes Morris. "He has spent his fortune on a revolution, and is now crushed by the wheel which he put in motion. He lasted longer than I expected."

Washington looked with a sadder eye on this catastrophe of Lafayette's high-hearted and gallant aspirations, and mourned over the adverse fortunes of his friend.

The reign of terror continued. "We have had one week of unchecked murders, in which some thousands have perished in this city," writes Morris to Jefferson, on the 10th of September. "It began with between two and three hundred of the clergy, who had been shot because they would not take the oaths prescribed by the law, and which they said, were contrary to their conscience." Thence *these executors of speedy justice* went on the *abbaye* where persons were confined who were at court on the 10th of August. These were

despatched also, and afterwards they visited the other prisons. "All those who were confined either on the accusation or suspicion of crimes, were destroyed."

The accounts of these massacres grieved Mr. Jefferson. They were shocking in themselves, and he feared they might bring great discredit upon the Jacobins of France, whom he considered republican patriots, bent on the establishment of a free constitution. They had acquiesced for a time, said he, in the experiment of retaining an hereditary executive, but finding, if pursued, it would ensure the re-establishment of a despotism, they considered it absolutely indispensable to expunge that office. "In the struggle which was necessary, many guilty persons fell without the forms of trial, and with them, some innocent. These I deplore as much as anybody, and shall deplore some of them to the day of my death. But I deplore them as I should have done, had they fallen in battle. It was necessary to use the arm of the people, a machine not quite so blind as balls and bombs, but blind to a certain degree. A few of their cordial friends met at their hands the fate of enemies. Bnt time and truth will rescue and embalm their memories, while their posterity will be enjoying that very liberty for which they would never have hesitated to offer up their lives. The liberty of the whole earth was depending on the issue of the contest, and was ever such a prize won with so little innocent blood? My own affections have been deeply wounded by some of the martyrs to this cause, but rather than it should have failed, I would have seen half the earth desolated; were there but an Adam and Eve left in every country, and left free it would be better than as it now is." *

Washington, who contemplated the French revolution with a less sanguine eye than Jefferson, was simply shocked at the atrocities which disgraced it, and at the dangers to be apprehended from an unrestrained populace. A letter which he received from Gouverneur Morris (dated October 23d), placed the condition of the unfortunate Louis XVI., the ancient friend and ally of America, in a light to awaken his benevolent sympathy. "You will have seen," writes Morris, "that the king is accused of high crimes and misdemeanors; but I verily believe that he wished sincerely for this nation, the enjoyment of the utmost degree of liberty, which their situation and circumstances will permit. He wished for a good constitution, but, unfortunately, he had not the means to obtain it,

* Letter to Mr. Short. Jefferson's Works, iii. 201.

or, if he had, he was thwarted by those about him. What may be his fate God only knows, but history informs us that the passage of dethroned monarchs is short from the prison to the grave.'

Nothing, however, in all the eventful tidings from France, gave Washington greater concern than the catastrophe of his friend Lafayette. His first thoughts prompted the consolation and assistance of the marchioness. In a letter to her, he writes: "If I had words that could convey to you an adequate idea of my feelings on the present situation of the Marquis Lafayette, this letter would appear to you in a different garb. The sole object in writing to you now, is to inform you that I have deposited in the hands of Mr. Nicholas Van Staphorst of Amsterdam, two thousand three hundred and ten guilders, Holland currency, equal to two hundred guineas, subject to your orders.

"This sum is, I am certain, the least I am indebted for services rendered me by the Marquis de Lafayette, of which I never yet have received the account. I could add much, but it is best, perhaps, that I should say little on this subject. Your goodness will supply my deficiency.

"The uncertainty of your situation, after all the inquiries I have made, has occasioned a delay in this address and remittance; and even now the measure adopted is more the effect of a desire to find where you are, than from any knowledge I have obtained of your residence."

Madame de Lafayette, in fact, was at that time a prisoner in France, in painful ignorance of her husband's fate. She had been commanded by the Jacobin committee to repair to Paris about the time of the massacres, but was subsequently permitted to reside at Chavaniac, under the surveillance of the municipality.

We will anticipate events by adding here, that some time afterwards, finding her husband was a prisoner in Austria, she obtained permission to leave France, and ultimately, with her two daughters, joined him in his prison at Olmutz. George Washington Lafayette, the son of the General, determined to seek an asylum in America.

In the mean time, the arms of revolutionary France were crowned with great success. "Towns fall before them without a blow," writes Gouverneur Morris, "and the declaration of rights produces an effect equal at least to the trumpets of Joshua." But Morris was war from drawing a favorable augury from this success. "We must observe the civil, moral, religious, and political institutions," said he. "These have a

steady and lasting effect, and these only. * * * Since I have been in this country, I have seen the worship of many idols, and but little of the true God. I have seen many of those idols broken, and some of them beaten to dust. I have seen the late constitution, in one short year, admired as a stupendous monument of human wisdom, and ridiculed as an egregious production of folly and vice. I wish much, very much, the happiness of this inconstant people. I love them. I feel grateful for their efforts in our cause, and I consider the establishment of a good constitution here as the principal means, under Divine Providence, of extending the blessings of freedom to the many millions of my fellow-men, who groan in bondage on the continent of Europe. But I do not greatly indulge the flattering illusions of hope, because I do not perceive that reformation of morals, without which, liberty is but an empty sound." *

CHAPTER XXXI.

Washington's Entrance upon his Second Term—Gloomy Auspices—Execution of Louis XVI.—France Declares War against England—Belligerent Excitement in America—Proclamation of Neutrality—French Mission to the United States—Genet Arrives in Charleston—His Reception in Philadelphia—Views of Jefferson and Hamilton—Washington's Dispassionate Opinion.

It was under gloomy auspices, a divided cabinet, an increasing exasperation of parties, a suspicion of monarchical tendencies, and a threatened abatement of popularity, that Washington entered upon his second term of presidency. It was a portentous period in the history of the world, for in a little while came news of that tragical event, the beheading of Louis XVI. It was an event deplored by many of the truest advocates of liberty in America, who, like Washington, remembered that unfortunate monarch as the friend of their country in her revolutionary struggle; but others, zealots in the cause of political reform, considered it with complacency, as sealing the downfall of the French monarchy and the establishment of a republic.

An event followed hard upon it to shake the quiet of the

* Life of Morris, ii. 248

world. Early in April intelligence was received that France had declared war against England, Popular excitement was now wound up to the highest pitch. What, it was asked, were Americans to do in such a juncture? Could they remain unconcerned spectators of a conflict between their ancient enemy and republican France? Should they fold their arms and look coldly on a war, begun, it is true, by France, but threatening the subversion of the republic, and re-establishment of a monarchical government?

Many, in the wild enthusiasm of the moment, would at once have precipitated the country into a war. Fortunately this belligerent impulse was not general, and was checked by the calm, controlling wisdom of Washington. He was at Mount Vernon when he received news of the war, and understood that American vessels were already designated, and some even fitting out to serve in it as privateers. He forthwith despatched a letter to Jefferson on the subject. "War having actually commenced between France and Great Britain," writes he, "it behooves the government of this country to use every means in its power to prevent the citizens thereof from embroiling us with either of those powers, by endeavoring to maintain a strict neutrality."

Hastening back to Philadelphia, he held a cabinet council on the 19th of April, to deliberate on the measures proper to be observed by the United States in the present crisis; and to determine upon a general plan of conduct for the Executive.

In this counsel it was unanimously determined that a proclamation should be issued by the President, "forbidding the citizens of the United States to take part in any hostilities on the seas, and warning them against carrying to the belligerents any articles deemed contraband according to the modern usages of nations, and forbidding all acts and proceedings inconsistent with the duties of a friendly nation towards those at war."

It was unanimously agreed also, that should the republic of France send a minister to the United States, he should be received.

No one at the present day questions the wisdom of Washington's proclamation of neutrality. It was our true policy to keep aloof from European war, in which our power would be inefficient, our loss certain. The measure, however, was at variance with the enthusiastic feelings and excited passions of a large proportion of the citizens. They treated it for a time with some forbearance, out of long-cherished reverence for

Washington's name; but his popularity, hitherto unlimited, was no proof against the inflamed state of public feeling. The proclamation was stigmatized as a royal edict; a daring assumption of power; an open manifestation of partiality for England and hostility to France.

Washington saw that a deadly blow was aimed at his influence and his administration, and that both were at hazard; but he was convinced that neutrality was the true national policy, and he resolved to maintain it, whatever might be his immediate loss of popular favor. His resolution was soon put to the test.

The French republic had recently appointed Edmond Charles Genet, or 'Citizen Genet,' as he was styled, minister to the United States. He was represented as a young man of good parts, very well educated, and of an ardent temper. He had served in the bureau of Foreign Affairs under the ministry of Vergennes, and been employed in various diplomatic situations until the overthrow of the monarchy, when he joined the popular party, became a political zealot, and member of the Jacobin club, and was rewarded with the mission to America.

A letter from Gouverneur Morris apprised Mr. Jefferson that the Executive Council had furnished Genet with three hundred blank commissions for privateers, to be given clandestinely to such persons as he might find in America inclined to take them. "They suppose," writes Morris, "that the avidity of some adventurers may lead them into measures which would involve altercations with Great Britain, and terminate finally in a war."

Genet's conduct proved the correctness of this information. He had landed at Charleston, South Carolina, from the French frigate the Ambuscade, on the 8th of April, a short time before the proclamation of neutrality, and was received with great rejoicing and extravagant demonstrations of respect. His landing at a port several hundred miles from the seat of government, was a singular move for a diplomat; but his object in so doing was soon evident. It is usual for a foreign minister to present his credentials to the government to which he comes, and be received by it in form before he presumes to enter upon the exercise of his functions. Citizen Genet, however, did not stop for these formalities. Confident in his nature, heated in his zeal, and flushed with the popular warmth of his reception, he could not pause to consider the proprieties of his mission and the delicate responsibilities involved in diplomacy. The contiguity of Charleston to the West Indies

made it a favorable port for fitting out privateers against the trade of these islands; and during Genet's short sojourn there he issued commissions for arming and equipping vessels of war for that purpose, and manning them with Americans.

In the latter part of April, Genet set out for the north by land. As he proceeded on his journey, the newspapers, teemed with accounts of the processions and addresses with which he was greeted, and the festivities which celebrated his arrival at each place. Jefferson, in a letter to Madison written from Philadelphia on the 5th of May, observes with exultation: "The war between France and England seems to be producing an effect not contemplated. All the old spirit of 1776, rekindling the newspapers from Boston to Charleston, proves this; and even the monocrat papers are obliged to publish the most furious philippics against England. A French frigate * took a British prize [the Grange] off the Capes of Delaware the other day, and sent her up here. Upon her coming into sight, thousands and thousands of the *yeomanry* of the city crowded and covered the wharves. Never was there such a crowd seen there; and when the British colors were seen reversed, and the French flying above them, they burst into peals of exultation. I wish we may be able to repress the spirit of the people within the limits of a fair neutrality. * * * We expect Genet daily."

A friend of Hamilton writes in a different vein. Speaking of Genet, he observes: "He has a good person, a fine ruddy complexion, quite active, and seems always in a bustle, more like a busy man than a man of business. A Frenchman in his manners, he announces himself in all companies as the minister of the republic, etc., talks freely of his commission, and, most Europeans, seems to have adopted mistaken notions of the penetration and knowledge of the people of the United States. His system, I think, is to laugh us into the war if he can."

On the 16th of May, Genet arrived at Philadelphia. His belligerent operations at Charleston had already been made a subject of complaint to the government by Mr. Hammond, the British minister; but they produced no abatement in the public enthusiasm. "It was suspected," writes Jefferson, "that there was not a clear mind in the President's counsellors to receive Genet. The citizens, however, determined to receive him. Arrangements were taken for meeting him at Gray's Ferry, in a great body. He escaped that, by arriving

* The Ambuscade.

in town with the letters which brought information that he was on the road." *

On the following day, various societies and a large body of citizens waited upon him with addresses, recalling with gratitude the aid given by France in the achievement of American independence, and extolling and rejoicing in the success of the arms of the French republic. On the same day, before Genet had presented his credentials and been acknowledged by the President, he was invited to a grand republican dinner, " at which," we are told, " the company united in singing the Marseilles Hymn. A deputation of French sailors presented themselves, and were received by the guests with the ' fraternal embrace.' The table was decorated with the ' tree of liberty,' and a red cap, called the cap of liberty, was placed on the head of the minister, and from his travelled in succession from head to head round the table." †

This enthusiasm of the multitude was regarded with indulgence, if not favor, by Jefferson, as being the effervescence of the true spirit of liberty ; but was deprecated by Hamilton as an infatuation that might " do us much harm, and could do France no good." A letter, written by him at the time, is worthy of full citation, as embodying the sentiments of that party of which he was the leader. " It cannot be without danger and inconvenience to our interests, to impress on the nations of Europe an idea that we are actuated by the same spirit which has for some time past fatally misguided the measures of those who conduct the affairs of France, and sullied a cause once glorious, and that might have been triumphant. The cause of France is compared with that of America during its late revolution. Would to Heaven that the comparison were just ! Would to Heaven we could discern, in the mirror of French affairs, the same decorum, the same gravity, the same order, the same dignity, the same solemnity, which distinguished the cause of the American Revolution ! Clouds and darkness would not then rest upon the issue as they now do. I own I do not like the comparison. When I contemplate the horrid and systematic massacre of the 2d and 3d of September ; when I observe that a Marat and a Robespierre, the notorious prompters of those bloody scenes, sit triumphantly in the convention, and take a conspicuous part in its measures—that an attempt to bring the assassins to justice has been obliged to be abandoned—when I see an unfortunate prince, whose reign was a continued demonstration of the

* Letter to Madison, Works iii. 562.
† Jay's Life, vol. i., p. 301.

goodness and benevolence of his heart, of his attachment to the people of whom he was the monarch, who, though educated in the lap of despotism, had given repeated proofs that he was not the enemy of liberty, brought precipitately and ignominiously to the block without any substantial proof of guilt, as yet disclosed—without even an authentic exhibition of motives, in decent regard to the opinions of mankind; when I find the doctrines of atheism openly advanced in the convention, and heard with loud applauses; when I see the sword of fanaticism extended to force a political creed upon citizens who were invited to submit to the arms of France as the harbingers of liberty; when I behold the hand of rapacity outstretched to prostrate and ravish the monuments of religious worship, erected by those citizens and their ancestors; when I perceive passion, tumult and violence usurping those seats, where reason and cool deliberation ought to preside, I acknowledge that I am glad to believe there is no real resemblance between what was the cause of America and what is the cause of France; that the difference is no less great than that between liberty and licentiousness. I regret whatever has a tendency to confound them, and I feel anxious, as an American, that the ebullitions of inconsiderate men among us may not tend to involve our reputation in the issue." *

Washington, from his elevated and responsible situation, endeavored to look beyond the popular excitement, and regard the affairs of France with a dispassionate and impartial eye, but he confessed that he saw in the turn they had lately taken the probability of a terrible confusion, to which he could predict no certain issue: a boundless ocean whence no land was to be seen. He feared less, he said, for the cause of liberty in France from the pressure of foreign enemies, than from the strifes and quarrels of those in whose hands the government was intrusted, who were ready to tear each other to pieces, and would more probably prove the worst foes the country had.

* Hamilton's Works, v. 566.

CHAPTER XXXII.

Genet Presents his Letter of Credence—His Diplomatic Speech—Washington's Conversation with Jefferson—Capture of the Ship Grange and other British Vessels—Question of Restitution—Dissatisfaction of Genet—Demands Release of two American Citizens—Washington's Sensitiveness to the Attacks of the Press—His Unshaken Determination.

On the 18th of May, Genet presented his letter of credence to the President; by whom, notwithstanding his late unwarrantable proceedings at Charleston, he was well received; Washington taking the occasion to express his sincere regard for the French nation.

Jefferson, who, as Secretary of State, was present, had all his warm sympathies in favor of France, roused by Genet's diplomatic speech. "It was impossible," writes he to Madison, "for anything to be more affectionate, more magnanimous, than the purport of Genet's mission. We wish you to do nothing,' said he, 'but what is for your own good, and we will do all in our power to promote it. Cherish your own peace and prosperity. You have expressed a willingness to enter into a more liberal commerce with us; I bring full powers to form such a treaty, and a preliminary decree of the National Convention to lay open our country and its colonies to you, for every purpose of utility, without your participating the burthens of maintaining and defending them. We see in you, the only person on earth who can love us sincerely, and merit to be so loved.' In short, he offers everything and asks nothing."

"Yet I know the offers will be opposed," adds Jefferson, "and suspect they will not be accepted. In short, my dear sir, it is impossible for you to conceive what is passing in our conclave; and it is evident that one or two, at least, under pretence of avoiding war on the one side, have no great antipathy to run foul of it on the other, and to make a part in the confederacy of princes against human liberty."

The 'one or two,' in the paragraph above cited, no doubt, imply Hamilton and Knox.

Washington again, in conversation, endeavored to counteract these suspicions which were swaying Jefferson's mind against his contemporaries. We give Jefferson's own account

of the conversation. "He (Washington) observed that, if anybody wanted to change the form of our government into a monarchy, he was sure it was only a few individuals, and that no man in the United States would set his face against it, more than himself; but, that this was not what he was afraid of; his fears were from another quarter; that *there was more danger of anarchy being introduced.*"

He then adverted to Freneau's paper and its partisan hostilities. He despised, he said, all personal attacks upon himself, but observed that there never had been an act of the government which that paper had not abused. "He was evidently sore and warm," adds Jefferson, "and I took his intention to be, that I should interpose in some way with Freneau; perhaps, withdraw his appointment of translating clerk in my office. But I will not do it."

It appears to us rather an ungracious determination on the part of Jefferson, to keep this barking cur in his employ, when he found him so annoying to the chief, whom he professed, and we believe with sincerity, to revere. Neither are his reasons for so doing satisfactory, savoring, as they do, of those strong political suspicions already noticed. "His (Freneau's) paper," observed he, "has saved our constitution, which was galloping fast into monarchy, and has been checked by no means so powerfully as by that paper. It is well and universally known, that it has been that paper which checked the career of the monocrats; the President, not sensible of the designs of the party, has not, with his usual good sense and *sang froid*, looked on the efforts and effects of this free press, and seen that, though some bad things have passed through it to the public, yet the good have preponderated immensely." *

Jefferson was mistaken. Washington had regarded the efforts and effects of this free press with his usual good sense; and the injurious influence it exercised in public affairs, was presently manifested in the transactions of the government with Genet. The acts of this diplomatic personage at Charleston, had not been the sole ground of the complaint preferred by the British minister. The capture of the British vessel, the Grange, by the frigate Ambuscade, formed a graver one. Occurring within our waters, it was a clear usurpation of national sovereignty, and a violation of neutral rights. The British minister demanded a restitution of the prize, and the cabinet were unanimously of opinion that restitution should

* Works, ix. 145.

be made; nor was there any difficulty with the French minister on that head; but restitution was likewise claimed of other vessels captured on the high seas, and brought into port by the privateers authorized by Genet. In regard to these there was a difference of sentiment in the cabinet. Hamilton and Knox were of opinion that the government should interpose to restore the prizes; it being the duty of a neutral nation to remedy any injury sustained by armaments fitted out in its ports. Jefferson and Randolph contended that the case should be left to the decision of the courts of justice. If the courts adjudged the commissions issued by Genet to be invalid, they would, of course, decide the captures made under them to be void, and the property to remain in the original owners; if, on the other hand, the legal right to the property had been transferred to the captors, they would so decide.

Seeing this difference of opinion in the cabinet, Washington reserved the point for further deliberation; but directed the Secretary of State to communicate to the ministers of France and Britain, the principles in which they concurred; these being considered as settled. Circular letters, also, were addressed to the Governors of several States, requiring their co-operation, with force, if necessary, to carry out the rules agreed upon.

Genet took umbrage at these decisions of the government, and expressed his dissatisfaction in a letter, complaining of them as violations of natural right, and subversive of the existing treaties between the two nations. His letters, though somewhat wanting in strict decorum of language, induced a review of the subject in the cabinet; and he was informed that no reason appeared for changing the system adopted. He was further informed that in the opinion of the executive, the vessels which had been illegally equipped, should depart from the ports of the United States.

Genet was not disposed to acquiesce in these decisions. He was aware of the grateful feelings of the nation to France: of the popular disposition to go all lengths short of war, in her favor; of the popular idea, that republican interests were identical on both sides of the Atlantic; that a royal triumph over republicanism in Europe, would be followed by a combination to destroy it in this country. He had heard the clamor among the populace, and uttered in Freneau's Gazette and other newspapers, against the policy of neutrality; the people, he thought, were with him, if Washington was not, and he believed the latter would not dare to risk his popularity in thwarting their enthusiasm. He persisted, therefore, in disregarding the decisions of the government, and spoke of

them as a departure from the obligations it owed to France; a cowardly abandonment of friends when danger menaced.

Another event added to the irritation of Genet. Two American citizens, whom he had engaged at Charleston, to cruise in the service of France, were arrested on board of the privateer, conducted to prison, and prosecutions commenced against them. The indignant feelings of Genet were vented in an extraordinary letter to the Secretary of State. When speaking of their arrest, "The crime laid to their charge," writes he—"the crime which my mind cannot conceive and which my pen almost refuses to state—is the serving of France, and defending with her children the common glorious cause of libety.

"Being ignorant of any positive law or treaty, which deprives Americans of this privilege, and authorizes officers of police arbitrarily to take mariners in the service of France from on board of their vessels, I call upon your intervention, sir, and that of the President of the United States, in order to obtain the immediate releasement of the above-mentioned officers, who have acquired by the sentiments animating them, and by the act of their engagement, anterior to any act to the the contrary, the right of French citizens, if they have lost that of American citizens."

The lofty and indignant tone of this letter had no effect in shaking the determination of government, or obtaining the release of the prisoners. Washington confesses, however, that he was very much harried and perplexed by the "disputes, memorials, and what not," with which he was pestered, by one or other of the powers at war. It was a sore trial of his equanimity, his impartiality, and his discrimination, and wore upon his spirits and his health. "The President is not well," writes Jefferson to Madison (June 9th); "little lingering fevers have been hanging about him for a week or ten days, and affected his looks most remarkably. He is also extremely affected by the attacks made and kept up on him, in the public papers. I think he feels these things more than any other person I ever yet met with. I am sincerely sorry to see them."

Jefferson's sorrow was hardly in accordance with the resolution expressed by him, to retain Freneau in his office, notwithstanding his incessant attacks upon the President and the measures of his government. Washington might well feel sensitive to these attacks, which Jefferson acknowledges were the more mischievous, from being planted on popular ground, on the universal love of the people to France and its cause. But he was not to be deterred by personal considerations,

from the strict line of his duty. He was aware that, in withstanding the public infatuation in regard to France, he was putting an unparalleled popularity at hazard; but he put it at hazard without hesitation; and, in so doing, set a magnanimous example for his successors in office to endeavor to follow.

CHAPTER XPXIII.

Washington called to Mount Vernon—The Case of the Little Sarah comes up in his absence—Governor Mifflin determined to prevent her departure—Rage of Genet—Jefferson urges detention of the Privateer until the President's return—Evasive assurance of Genet—Distrust of Hamilton and Knox—Washington returns to Philadelphia—A Cabinet Council—Its Determination communicated to Genet—The Vessel Sails in Defiance of it—Formation of the Democratic Society—The Recall of Genet determined on—The Ribald Lampoon—Washington's Outburst.

In the latter part of July, Washington was suddenly called to Mount Vernon by the death of Mr. Whiting, the manager of his estates. During his brief absence from the seat of government, occurred the case of the Little Sarah. This was a British merchant vessel which had been captured by a French privateer, and brought into Philadelphia, where she had been armed and equipped for privateering; manned with one hundred and twenty men, many of them Americans, and the name changed into that of *Le Petit Democrat.* This, of course, was in violation of Washington's decision, which had been communicated to Genet.

General Mifflin, now Governor of Pennsylvania, being informed, on the 6th of July, that the vessel was to sail the next day, sent his secretary, Mr. Dallas, at midnight to Genet, to persuade him to detain her until the President should arrive, intimating that otherwise force would be used to prevent her departure.

Genet flew into one of the transports of passion to which he was prone; contrasted the treatment experienced by him from the officers of government, with the attachment to his nation professed by the people at large; declared that the President was not the sovereign of the country, and had no right, without consulting Congress, to give such instructions as he had issued to the State Governors; threatened to appeal from his

decision to the people, and to repel force by force, should an attempt be made to seize the privateer.

Apprised of this menace, Governor Mifflin forthwith ordered out one hundred and twenty of the militia to take possession of the privateer, and communicated the circumstances of the case to the cabinet.

Mr. Jefferson now took the matter in hand, and on the 7th of July, in an interview with Genet, repeated the request that the privateer be detained until the arrival of the President. Genet, he writes, instantly took up the subject in a very high tone, and went into an immense field of declamation and complaint. Jefferson made a few efforts to be heard, but, finding them ineffectual, suffered the torrent of vituperation to pour on. He sat in silence, therefore, while Genet charged the government with having violated the treaties between the two nations; with having suffered its flag to be insulted and disregarded by the English; who stopped its vessels on the high seas, and took out of them whatever they suspected to be French property. He declared that he had been thwarted and opposed in everything he had to do with the government; so that he sometimes thought of packing up and going away, as he found he could not be useful to his nation in anything. He censured the executive for the measures it had taken without consulting Congress, and declared, that, on the President's return, he would certainly press him to convene that body.

He had by this time exhausted his passion and moderated his tone, and Jefferson took occasion to say a word. "I stopped him," writes he, "at the subject of calling Congress; explained our constitution to him as having divided the functions of government among three different authorities, the executive, legislative, and judiciary, each of which were supreme on all questions belonging to their department, and independent of the others; that all the questions which had arisen between him and us, belonged to the executive department, and, if Congress were sitting, could not be carried to them, nor would they take notice of them."

Genet asked with surprise, if Congress were not the sovereign.

"No," replied Jefferson. "They are sovereign only in making laws; the executive is the sovereign in executing them, and the judiciary in construing them, where they relate to that department."

"But at least," cried Genet, "Congress are bound to see that the treaties are observed." "No," rejoined Jefferson, "There are very few cases, indeed, arising out of treaties.

which they can take notice of. The President is to see that treaties are observed."

"If he decides against the treaty," demanded Genet, "to whom is a nation to appeal?" "The constitution," replied Jefferson, "has made the President the last appeal."

Genet, perfectly taken aback at finding his own ignorance in the matter, shrugged his shoulders, made a bow, and said, "he would not compliment Mr. Jefferson on such a constitution!"

He had now subsided into coolness and good humor, and the subject of the Little Sarah being resumed, Jefferson pressed her detention until the President's return; intimating that her previous departure would be considered a very serious offence.

Genet made no promise, but expressed himself very happy to be able to inform Mr. Jefferson that the vessel was not in a state of readiness; she had to change her position that day, he said, and fall down the river, somewhere about the lower end of the town, for the convenience of taking some things on board, and would not depart yet.

When Jefferson endeavored to extort an assurance that she would await the President's return, he evaded a direct committal, intimating however, by look and gesture, that she would not be gone before that time. "But let me beseech you," said he, "not to permit any attempt to put men on board of her. She is filled with high-spirited patriots, and they will unquestionably resist. And there is no occasion, for I tell you she will not be ready to depart for some time."

Jefferson was accordingly impressed with the belief that the privateer would remain in the river until the President should decide on her case, and, on communicating this conviction to the Governor, the latter ordered the militia to be dismissed.

Hamilton and Knox, on the other hand, were distrustful, and proposed the immediate erection of a battery on Mud Island, with guns mounted to fire at the vessel, and even to sink her, if she attempted to pass. Jefferson, however, refusing to concur in the measure, it was not adopted. The vessel, at that time, was at Gloucester Point, but soon fell down to Chester.

Washington arrived at Philadelphia on the 11th of July; when papers requiring "instant attention" were put into his hands. They related to the case of the Little Sarah, and were from Jefferson, who, being ill with fever, had retired to his seat in the country. Nothing could exceed the displeasure of Washington when he examined these papers.

In a letter written to Jefferson, on the spur of the moment, he puts these indignant queries: "What is to be done in the case of the Little Sarah, now at Chester? Is the minister of the French republic to set the acts of this government at defiance *with impunity?* And then threaten the executive with an appeal to the people! What must the world think of such conduct, and of the government of the United States in submitting to it?

"These are serious questions. Circumstances press for decision, and, as you have had time to consider them (upon me they come unexpectedly), I wish to know your opinion upon them, even before to-morrow, for the vessel may then be gone."

Mr. Jefferson, in a reply of the same date, informed the President of his having received assurance, that day, from Mr. Genet, that the vessel would not be gone before his (the President's) decision.

In consequence of this assurance of the French minister, no immediate measures of a coercive nature were taken with regard to the vessel; but, in a cabinet council held the next day, it was determined to detain in port all privateers which had been equipped within the United States by any of the belligerent powers.

No time was lost in communicating this determination to Genet; but, in defiance of it, the vessel sailed on her cruise.

It must have been a severe trial of Washington's spirit to see his authority thus braved and insulted, and to find that the people, notwithstanding the indignity thus offered to their chief magistrate, sided with the aggressors, and exulted in their open defiance of his neutral policy.

About this time a society was formed under the auspices of the French minister, and in imitation of the Jacobin clubs of Paris. It was called the Democratic Society, and soon gave rise to others throughout the Union; all taking the French side in the present questions. The term democrat, thenceforward, began to designate an ultra-republican.

Fresh mortifications awaited Washington, from the distempered state of public sentiment. The trial came on of Gideon Henfield, an American citizen, prosecuted under the advice of the Attorney General, for having enlisted, at Charleston, on board of a French privateer which had brought prizes into the port of Philadelphia. The populace took part with Henfield. He had enlisted before the proclamation of neutrality had been published, and even if he had enlisted at a later date, was he to be punished for engaging with their ancient

ally, France, in the cause of liberty against the royal despots of Europe? His acquittal exposed Washington to the obloquy of having attempted a measure which the laws would not justify. It showed him, moreover, the futility of attempts at punishment for infractions of the rules proclaimed for the preservation of neutrality; while the clamorous rejoicing by which the acquittal of Henfield had been celebrated, evinced the popular disposition to thwart that line of policy which he considered most calculated to promote the public good. Nothing however, could induce him to swerve from that policy. "I have consolation within," said he, "that no earthly effort can deprive me of, and that is, that neither ambitious nor interested motives have influenced my conduct. The arrows of malevolence, therefore, however barbed and well pointed, can never reach the most vulnerable part of me; though, whilst I am set up as a *mark* they will be continually aimed." *

Hitherto Washington had exercised great forbearance toward the French minister, notwithstanding the little respect shown by the latter to the rights of the United States; but the official communications of Genet were becoming too offensive and insulting to be longer tolerated. Meetings of the heads of departments and the Attorney General were held at the President's on the 1st and 2d of August, in which the whole of the official correspondence and conduct of Genet was passed in review; and it was agreed that his recall should be desired. Jefferson reccommended that the desire should be expressed with great delicacy; the others were for peremptory terms. Knox was for sending him off at once, but this proposition was generally scouted. In the end it was agreed that a letter should be written to Gouverneur Morris, giving a statement of the case, with accompanying documents, that he might lay the whole before the executive council of France, and explain the reason for desiring the recall of Mr. Genet.

It was proposed that a publication of the whole correspondence, and a statement of the proceedings, should be made by way of appeal to the people. This produced animated debates. Hamilton spoke with great warmth in favor of an appeal. Jefferson opposed it. "Genet," said he, "will appeal also; it will become a contest between the President and Genet. Anonymous writers will take it up, There will be the same difference of opinion in *public* as in our cabinet—

* Letter to Gov. Lee. Sparks, x. 359.

there will be the same difference in *Congress*, for it must be laid before them. It would work, therefore, very unpleasantly *at home*. How would it work *abroad?*"

Washington, already weary and impatient, under the incessant dissensions of his cabinet, was stung by the suggestion that he might be held up as in conflict with Genet, and subjected, as he had been, to the ribaldry of the press. At this unlucky moment Knox blundered forth with a specimen of the scandalous libels already in circulation; a pasquinade lately printed, called the Funeral of George Washington, wherein the President was represented as placed upon a guillotine, a horrible parody on the late decapitation of the French King. "The President," writes Jefferson, "now burst forth into one of those transports of passion beyond his control; inveighed against the personal abuse which had been bestowed upon him, and defied any man on earth to produce a single act of his since he had been in the government that had not been done on the purest motives.

"He had never repented but once the having slipped the moment of resigning his office, and that was every moment since. In the agony of his heart he declared that he had rather be in his grave than in his present situation; that he had rather be on his farm than to be made emperor of the world—and yet, said he, indignantly, they are charging me with wanting to be a king!

"All were silent during this burst of feeling—a pause ensued—it was difficult to resume the question. Washington, however, who had recovered his equanimity, put an end to the difficulty. There was no necessity, he said, for deciding the matter at present; the propositions agreed to, respecting the letter to Mr. Morris, might be put into a train of execution, and, perhaps, events would show whether the appeal would be necessary or not." *

* Jefferson's Works, ix. 164.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

Threatened Dissolution of the Cabinet—Action Between the Ambuscade and Boston—Triumphant Return of the Former to New York—A French Fleet Arrives same Day—Excitement of the People—Genet Arrives in the Midst of It—His Enthusiastic Reception—Is Informed by Jefferson of the Measures for his Recall—His Rage and Reply—Decline of his Popularity.

WASHINGTON had hitherto been annoyed and perplexed by having to manage a divided cabinet; he was now threatened with that cabinet's dissolution. Mr. Hamilton had informed him by letter, that private as well as public reasons had determined him to retire from office towards the close of the next session; probably with a view to give Congress an opportunity to examine into his conduct. Now came a letter from Mr. Jefferson, dated July 31st, in which he recalled the circumstances which had induced him to postpone for a while his original intention for retiring from office at the close of the first four years of the republic. These circumstances, he observed, had now ceased to such a degree as to leave him free to think again of a day on which to withdraw; "at the close, therefore, of the ensuing month of September, I shall beg leave to retire to scenes of greater tranquillity, from those for which I am every day more and more convinced that neither my talents, tone of mind, nor time of life fit me."

Washington was both grieved and embarrassed by this notification. Full of concern, he called upon Jefferson at his country residence near Philadelphia; pictured his deep distress at finding himself, in the present perplexing juncture of affairs, about to be deserted by those of his cabinet on whose counsel he had counted, and whose places he knew not where to find persons competent to supply; and, in his chagrin, again expressed his repentance that he himself had not resigned as he had once meditated.

The public mind, he went on to observe, was in an alarming state of ferment; political combinations of various kinds were forming; where all this would end he knew not. A new Congress was to assemble, more numerous than the last, perhaps of a different spirit; the first expressions of its sentiments would be important, and it would relieve him considerably if Jefferson would remain in office, if it were only until the end of the season.

Jefferson, in reply, pleaded an excessive repugnance to public life; and, what seems to have influenced him more sensibly, the actual uneasiness of his position. He was obliged, he said, to move in exactly the circle which he knew to bear him peculiar hatred; "the wealthy aristocrats, the merchants connected closely with England; the newly-created paper fortunes." Thus surrounded, his words were caught, multiplied, misconstrued, and even fabricated, and spread abroad to his injury.

Mr. Jefferson pleaded, moreover, that the opposition of views between Mr. Hamilton and himself was peculiarly unpleasant, and destructive of the necessary harmony. With regard to the republican party he was sure it had not a view which went to the frame of the government; he believed the next Congress would attempt nothing material but to render their own body independent; the manœuvres of Mr. Genet might produce some little embarrassment, but the republicans would abandon that functionary the moment they knew the nature of his conduct.

Washington replied, that he believed the views of the republican party to be perfectly pure: "but when men put a machine into motion," said he, "it is impossible for them to stop it exactly where they would choose, or to say where it will stop. The constitution we have is an excellent one, if we can keep it where it is."

He again adverted to Jefferson's constant suspicion that there was a party disposed to change the constitution into a monarchical form, declaring that there was not a man in the United States who would set his face more decidedly against such a change than himself.

"No rational man in the United States suspects you of any other disposition," cried Jefferson; "but there does not pass a week in which we cannot prove declarations dropping from the monarchical party, that our government is good for nothing; is a milk-and-water thing which cannot support itself; that we must knock it down and set up something with more energy."

"If that is the case," rejoined Washington, "it is a proof of their insanity, for the republican spirit of the Union is so manifest and so solid that it is astonishing how any one can expect to move it."

We have only Jefferson's account of this and other interesting interviews of a confidential nature which he had with the President, and we give them generally almost in his own words, through which, partial as they may have been, we discern Wash

ington's constant efforts to moderate the growing antipathies between the eminent men whom he had sought to assist him in conducting the government. He continued to have the highest opinion of Jefferson's abilities, his knowledge of foreign affairs, his thorough patriotism; and it was his earnest desire to retain him in his cabinet through the whole of the ensuing session of Congress; before the close of which he trusted the affairs of the country relating to foreign powers, Indian disturbances, and internal policy, would have taken a more decisive, and it was to be hoped agreeable form than they then had. A compromise was eventually made, according to which Jefferson was to be allowed a temporary absence in the autumn, and on his return was to continue in office until January.

In the mean time Genet had proceeded to New York, which very excitable city was just then in a great agitation. The frigate Ambuscade, while anchored in the harbor, had been challenged to single combat by the British frigate Boston, Captain Courtney, which was cruising off the Hook. The challenge was accepted; a severe action ensued; Courtney was killed; and the Boston, much damaged, was obliged to stand for Halifax. The Ambuscade returned triumphant to New York, and entered the port amid the enthusiastic cheers of the populace. On the same day, a French fleet of fifteen sail arrived from the Chesapeake and anchored in the Hudson river. The officers and crews were objects of unbounded favor with all who inclined to the French cause. Bompard, the commander of the Ambuscade, was the hero of the day. Tri-colored cockades, and tri-colored ribbons were to be seen on every side, and rude attempts to chant the Marseilles Hymn and the Carmagnole resounded through the streets.

In the midst of this excitement, the ringing of the bells and the firing of cannon announced that Citizen Genet was arrived at Powles Hook Ferry, directly opposite the city. There was an immediate assemblage of the republican party in the fields now called the Park. A committee was appointed to escort Genet into the city. He entered it amid the almost frantic cheerings of the populace. Addresses were made to him, expressing devoted attachment to the French republic, and abjuring all neutrality in regard to its heroic struggle. "The cause of France is the cause of America," cried the enthusiasts, "it is time to distinguish its friends from its foes." Genet looked round him. The tri-colored cockade figured in the hats of the shouting multitude; tri-colored ribbons fluttered from the dresses of females in the windows; the

French flag was hoisted on the top of the Tontine Coffee House (the City Exchange), surmounted by the cap of liberty. Can we wonder that what little discretion Genet possessed, was completely overborne by this tide of seeming popularity?

In the midst of his self-gratulation and complacency, however, he received a letter from Jefferson (Sept. 15th), acquainting him with the measures taken to procure his recall, and inclosing a copy of the letter written for that purpose to the American minister at Paris. It was added that, out of anxious regard lest the interests of France might suffer, the Executive would in the mean time, receive his (Mr. Genet's) communications in writing and admit the continuance of his functions so long as they should be restrained within the law as theretofore announced to him, and should be of the tenor usually observed towards independent nations, by the representative of a friendly power residing with them.

The letter of the Secretary of State threw Genet into a violent passion, and produced a reply (Sept. 18th), written while he was still in a great heat. In this he attributed his disfavor with the American government to the machinations of "those gentlemen who had so often been represented to him as aristocrats, partisans of monarchy, partisans of England and her constitution, and consequently enemies of the principles which all good Frenchmen had embraced with religious enthusiasm." "These persons," he said, "alarmed by the popularity which the zeal of the American people for the cause of France had shed upon her minister; alarmed also by his inflexible and incorruptible attachment to the severe maxims of democracy, were striving to ruin him in his own country, after having united all their efforts to calumniate him in the minds of their fellow-citizens."

"These people," observes he, "instead of a democratic ambassador, would prefer a minister of the ancient regime, very complaisant, very gentle, very disposed to pay court to people in office, to conform blindly to everything which flattered their views and projects; above all, to prefer to the sure and modest society of good farmers, simple citizens, and honest artisans, that of distinguished personages who speculate so patriotically in the public funds, in the lands, and the paper of government."

In his heat, Genet resented the part Mr. Jefferson had taken, notwithstanding their cordial intimacy, in the present matter, although this part had merely been the discharge of an official duty. "Whatever, Sir," writes Genet, "may be the result of

the exploit of which you have rendered yourself the generous instrument, after having made me believe that you were my friend, after having initiated me in the mysteries which have influenced my hatred against all those who aspire to absolute power, there is an act of justice which the American people, which the French people, which all free people are interested in demanding; it is, that a particular inquiry should be made, in the approaching Congress, into the motives which have induced the chief of the executive power of the United States to take upon himself to demand the recall of a public minister, whom the sovereign people of the United States had received fraternally and recognized, before the diplomatic forms had been fulfilled in respect to him at Philadelphia."

The wrongs of which Genet considered himself entitled to complain against the executive, commenced before his introduction to that functionary. It was the proclamation of neutrality which first grieved his spirit. "I was extremely wounded," writes he, "that the President of the United States should haste, before knowing what I had to transmit on the part of the French republic, to proclaim sentiments over which decency and friendship should at least have thrown a veil."

He was grieved, moreover, that on his first audience, the President had spoken only of the friendship of the United States for France, without uttering a word or expressing a single sentiment in regard to its revolution, although all the towns, all the villages from Charleston to Philadelphia, had made the air resound with their ardent voices for the French republic. And what further grieved his spirit was, to observe "that this first magistrate of a free people had decorated his saloon with certain medallions of Capet [meaning Louis XVI.] and his family, which served in Paris for rallying signs."

We forbear to cite further this angry and ill-judged letter. Unfortunately for Genet's ephemeral popularity, a rumor got abroad that he had expressed a determination to appeal from the President to the people. This at first was contradicted, but was ultimately established by a certificate of Chief Justice Jay and Mr. Rufus King, of the United States Senate, which was published in the papers.

The spirit of audacity thus manifested by a foreign minister shocked the national pride. Meetings were held in every part of the Union to express the public feeling in the matter. In these meetings the proclamation of neutrality and the system of measures flowing from it, were sustained, partly from a

conviction of their wisdom and justice, but more from an undiminished affection for the person and character of Washington; for many who did not espouse his views, were ready to support him in the exercise of his constitutional functions. The warm partisans of Genet, however, were the more vehement in his support from the temporary ascendency of the other party. They advocated his right to appeal from the President to the people. The President, they argued, was invested with no sanctity to make such an act criminal. In a republican country the people were the real sovereigns.

CHAPTER XXXV.

Neutrality Endangered by Great Britain—Her Ill-advised Measures—Detention of Vessels Bound for France—Impressment of American Seamen—Persistence in Holding the Western Posts—Congress Assembles in December—The President's Opening Speech—His Censure of Genet—The Vice-President's Allusion to it—The Administration in a Minority in the House—Proclamation of Neutrality Sustained—Jefferson's Report—Retires from the Cabinet—His Parting Rebuke to Genet—His Character of Washington.

WHILE the neutrality of the United States, so jealously guarded by Washington, was endangered by the intrigues of the French minister, it was put to imminent hazard by ill-advised measures of the British cabinet.

There was such a scarcity in France, in consequence of the failure of the crops, that a famine was apprehended. England, availing herself of her naval ascendency, determined to increase the distress of her rival by cutting off all her supplies from abroad. In June, 1793, therefore, her cruisers were instructed to detain all vessels bound to France with cargoes of corn, flour, or meal, take them into port, unload them, purchase the cargoes, make a proper allowance for the freight, and then release the vessels; or to allow the masters of them, on a stipulated security, to dispose of their cargoes in a port in amity with England. This measure gave umbrage to all parties in the United States, and brought out an earnest remonstrance from the government, as being a violation of the law of neutrals, and indefensible on and proper construction of the law of nations.

Another grievance which helped to swell the tide of resent-

ment against Great Britain, was the frequent impressment of American seamen, a wrong to which they were particularly exposed from national similarity.

To these may be added the persistence of Great Britain in holding the posts to the south of the lakes, which, according to treaty stipulations, ought to have been given up. Washington not did feel himself in a position to press our rights under the treaty, with the vigorous hand that some would urge; questions having risen in some of the State courts, to obstruct the fulfilment of our part of it, which regarded the payment of British debts contracted before the war.

The violent partisans of France thought nothing of these shortcomings on our own part; and would have had the forts seized at once; but Washington considered a scrupulous discharge of our own obligations the necessary preliminary, should so violent a measure be deemed advisable. His prudent and conscientious conduct in this particular, so in unison with the impartial justice which governed all his actions, was cited by partisan writers, as indicative of his preference of England to "our ancient ally."

The hostilities of the Indians north of the Ohio, by many attributed to British wiles, still continued. The attempts at an amiable negotiation had proved as fruitless as Washington had anticipated. The troops under Wayne had, therefore, taken the field to act offensively; but from the lateness of the season, had formed a winter camp near the site of the present city of Cincinnati, whence Wayne was to open his campaign in the ensuing spring.

Congress assembled on the 2d of December (1793), with various causes of exasperation at work; the intrigues of Genet and the aggressions of England, uniting to aggravate to a degree of infatuation the partiality for France, and render imminent the chance of a foreign war.

Washington, in his opening speech, after expressing his deep and respectful sense of the renewed testimony of public approbation manifested in his re-election, proceeded to state the measures he had taken, in consequence of the war in Europe, to protect the rights and interests of the United States, and maintain peaceful relations with the belligerent parties. Still he pressed upon Congress the necessity of placing the country in a condition of complete defence. "The United States," said he, "ought not to indulge a persuasion that, contrary to the order of human events, they will forever keep at a distance those painful appeals to arms with which the history of every nation abounds. There is a rank due to

the United States among nations, which will be withheld, if not absolutely lost, by the reputation of weakness. If we desire to avoid insult, we must be able to repel it; if we desire to secure peace—one of the most powerful instruments of our prosperity—it must be known that we are, at all times, ready for war." In the spirit of these remarks, he urged measures to increase the amount of arms and ammunition in the arsenals, and to improve the militia establishment.

One part of his speech conveyed an impressive admonition to the House of Representatives: "No pecuniary consideration is more urgent than the regular redemption and discharge of the public debt; in none can delay be more injurious, or an economy of time more valuable."

The necessity of augmenting the public revenue in a degree commensurate with the objects suggested, was likewise touched upon.

In concluding his speech, he endeavored to impress upon his hearers the magnitude of their task, the important interests confided to them, and the conscientiousness that should reign over their deliberations. "Without an unprejudiced coolness, the welfare of the government may be hazarded; without harmony, as far as consists with freedom of sentiment, its dignity may be lost. But, as the legislative proceedings of the United States will never, I trust, be reproached for the want of temper or of candor, so shall not the public happiness languish from the want of my strenuous and warmest co-operation."

In a message to both Houses, on the 5th of December, concerning foreign relations, Washington spoke feelingly with regard to those with the representative and executive bodies of France: "It is with extreme concern I have to inform you that the proceedings of the person whom they have unfortunately appointed their minister plenipotentiary here, have breathed nothing of the friendly spirit of the nation which sent him; their tendency, on the contrary, has been to involve us in war abroad, and discord and anarchy at home. So far as his acts, or those of his agents, have threatened our immediate commitment in the war, or flagrant insult to the authority of the laws, their effect has been counteracted by the ordinary cognizance of the laws, and by an exertion of the powers confided to me. Where their danger was not imminent, they have been borne with, from sentiments of regard for his nation; from a sense of their friendship towards us; from a conviction, that they would not suffer us to remain long exposed to the action of a person, who has so little re-

spected our mutual dispositions; and, I will add, from a reliance on the firmness of my fellow-citizens in their principles of peace and order."

John Adams, speaking on this passage of the message, says: "The President has given Genet a bolt of thunder." He questioned, however, whether Washington would be supported in it by the two Houses—"although he stands at present, as high in the admiration and confidence of the people as ever he did, I expect he will find many bitter and desperate enemies arise in consequence of his just judgment against Genet.*

In fact, the choice of speaker showed that there was a majority of ten against the administration, in the House of Representatives; yet it was manifest, from the affectionate answer on the 6th, of the two Houses, to Washington's speech, and the satisfaction expressed at his re-election, that he was not included in the opposition which, from this act, appeared to await his political system. The House did justice to the purity and patriotism of the motives which had prompted him again to obey the voice of his country, when called by it to the Presidential chair. "It is to virtues which have commanded long and universal reverence, and services from which have flowed great and lasting benefits, that the tribute of praise may be paid, without the reproach of flattery; and it is from the same sources that the fairest anticipations may be derived in favor of the public happiness."

Notwithstanding the popular ferment in favor of France, both Houses seem to have approved the course pursued by Washington in regard to that country; and as to his proclamation of neutrality, while the House approved of it in guarded terms, the Senate pronounced it a "measure well-timed and wise; manifesting a watchful solicitude for the welfare of the nation, and calculated to promote it."

Early in the session, Mr. Jefferson, in compliance with a requisition which the House of Representatives had made, Feb. 23d, 1791, furnished an able and comprehensive report of the state of trade of the United States with different countries; the nature and extent of exports and imports, and the amount of tonnage of the American shipping: specifying, also, the various restrictions and prohibitions by which our commerce was embarrassed, and, in some instances, almost ruined. "Two methods," he said, "presented themselves, by which these impediments might be removed, modified, or counteracted; friendly arrangement or countervailing legislation.

* Letter to Mrs. Adams. Life, vol. i., p. 460.

Friendly arrangements were preferable with all who would come into them, and we should carry into such arrangements all the liberality and spirit of accommodation which the nature of the case would admit. But," he adds, "should any nation continue its system of prohibitive duties and regulations, it behooves us to protect our citizens, their commerce, and navigation, by counter prohibitions, duties, and regulations." To effect this, he suggested a series of legislative measures of a retaliatory kind.*

With this able and elaborate report, Jefferson closed his labors as Secretary of State. His last act was a kind of parting gun to Mr. Genet. This restless functionary had, on the 20th of December, sent to him translations of the instructions given him by the executive council of France; desiring that the President would lay them officially before both Houses of Congress, and proposing to transmit successively, other papers to be laid before them in like manner.

Jefferson, on the 31st of December, informed Genet that he had laid his letter and its accompaniments before the President. "I have it in charge to observe," adds he, "that your functions as the missionary of a foreign nation here, are confined to the transactions of the affairs of your nation, with the Executive of the United States; that the communications which are to pass between the executive and legislative branches, cannot be a subject for your interference, and that the President must be left to judge for himself what matters his duty or the public good may require him to propose to the deliberations of Congress. I have, therefore, the honor of returning you the copies sent for distribution, and of being, with great respect, sir, your most obedient and most humble servant."

Such was Jefferson's dignified rebuke of the presumptuous meddling of Genet, and indeed his whole course of official proceedings with that minister, notwithstanding his personal intimacy with him and his strong French partialities, is worthy of the highest approbation. Genet, in fact, who had calculated on Jefferson's friendship, charged him openly with having a language official and a language confidential, but it certainly was creditable to him, as a public functionary in a place of high trust, that, in his official transactions, he would rise superior to individual prejudices and partialities, and consult only the dignity and interests of his country.

Washington had been especially sensible of the talents and

* See Jefferson's Works, vol. vii.

integrity displayed by Jefferson during the closing year of his secretaryship, and particularly throughout this French perplexity, and had recently made a last attempt, but an unsuccessful one, to pursuade him to remain in the cabinet. On the same day with his letter to Genet, Jefferson addressed one to Washington, reminding him of his having postponed his retirement from office until the end of the annual year. "That term being now arrived," writes he, "and my propensities to retirement becoming daily more and more irresistible, I now take the liberty of resigning the office into your hands. Be pleased to accept with it my sincere thanks for all the indulgences which you have been so good as to exercise towards me in the discharge of its duties. Conscious that my need of them has been great, I have still ever found them greater, without any other claim on my part than a firm pursuit of what has appeared to me to be right, and a thorough disdain of all means which were not as open and honorable as their object was pure. I carry into my retirement a lively sense of your goodness, and shall continue gratefully to remember it."

The following was Washington's reply: "Since it has been impossible to prevent you to forego any longer the indulgence of your desire for private life, the event, however anxious I am to avert it, must be submitted to.

"But I cannot suffer you to leave your station without assuring you, that the opinion which I had formed of your integrity and talents, and which dictated your original nomination, has been confirmed by the fullest experience, and that both have been eminently displayed in the discharge of your duty."

The place thus made vacant in the cabinet was filled by Mr. Edmond Randolph, whose office of Attorney General was conferred on Mr. William Bradford, of Pennsylvania.

No one seemed to throw off the toils of office with more delight than Jefferson: or to betake himself with more devotion to the simple occupations of rural life. It was his boast, in a letter to a friend written some time after his return to Monticello, that he had seen no newspaper since he had left Philadelphia, and he believed he should never take another newspaper of any sort. "I think it is Montaigne," writes he, "who has said, that ignorance is the softest pillow on which a man can rest his head. I am sure it is true as to everything political, and shall endeavor to estrange myself to everything of that character." Yet the very next sentence shows the lurking of the old party feud. "I indulge myself in one political topic only —that is, in declaring to my countrymen the shameless cor-

ruption of a portion of the representatives of the first and second Congresses, *and their implicit devotion to the treasury.*"*

We subjoin his comprehensive character of Washington, the result of long observation and cabinet experience, and written in after years, when there was no temptation to insincere eulogy:

"His integrity was most pure; his justice the most inflexible I have ever known; no motives of interest or consanguinity, of friendship or hatred, being able to bias his decision. He was, indeed, in every sense of the word, a wise, a good, and a great man."

CHAPTER XXXVI.

Debate on Jefferson's Report on Commercial Intercourse—A Naval Force Proposed for the Protection of Commerce against Piratical Cruisers—Further Instances of the Audacity of Genet—His Recall—Arrival of his Successor—Irritation Excited by British Captures of American Vessels—Preparations for Defence—Embargo—Intense Excitement at "British Spoliations"—Partisans of France in the Ascendant—A Chance for Accommodating Difficulties—Jefferson's Hopes of Reconciliation—The War Cry Uppermost—Washington Determines to Send a Special Envoy to the British Government—Jefferson's Letter to Tench Coxe.

PUBLIC affairs were becoming more and more complicated, and events in Europe were full of gloomy portent. "The news of this evening," writes John Adams to his wife, on the 9th of January, "is, that the queen of France is no more. When will savages be satisfied with blood? No prospect of peace in Europe, therefore none of internal harmony in America. We cannot well be in a more disagreeable situation than we are with all Europe, with all Indians, and with all Barbary rovers. Nearly one-half of the Continent is in constant opposition to the other, and the President's situation, which is highly responsible, is very distressing."

Adams speaks of having had two hours' conversation with Washington alone in his cabinet, but intimates that he could not reveal the purport of it, even by a hint; it had satisfied him, however, of Washington's earnest desire to do right;

* Letter to E. Randolph. Works, iv. 103.

his close application to discover it, and his deliberate and comprehensive view of our affairs with all the world. "The anti-federalists and the Frenchified zealots," adds Adams, "have nothing now to do that I can conceive of, but to ruin his character, destroy his peace, and injure his health. He supports all their attacks with firmness, and his health appears to be very good."*

The report of Mr. Jefferson on commercial intercourse, was soon taken up in the House in a committee of the whole. A series of resolutions based on it, and relating to the privileges and restrictions of the commerce of the United States, were troduced by Mr. Madison, and became the subject of a warm and acrimonious debate. The report upheld the policy of turning the course of trade from England to France, by discriminations in favor of the latter; and the resolutions were to the same purport. The idea was to oppose commercial resistence to commercial injury; to enforce a perfect commercial equality by retaliating impositions, assuming that the commercial system of Great Britain was hostile to the United States—a position strongly denied by some of the debaters.

Though the subject was, or might seem to be, of a purely commercial nature, it was inevitably mixed up with political considerations, according as a favorable inclination to England or France was apprehended. The debate waxed warm as it proceeded, with a strong infusion of bitterness. Fisher Ames stigmatized the resolutions as having *French* stamped upon the very face of them. Whereupon, Colonel Parker of Virginia, wished that there were a stamp on the forehead of every one to designate whether he were for France or England. For himself, he would not be silent and hear that nation abused, to whom America was indebted for her rank as a nation. There was a burst of applause in the gallery; but the indecorum was rebuked by the galleries being cleared.

The debate, which had commenced on the 13th of January, (1794,) was protracted to the 3d of February, when the question being taken on the first resolution, it was carried by a majority of only five, so nearly were parties divided. The further consideration of the remaining resolutions was postponed to March, when it was resumed, but, in consequence of the new complexion of affairs, was suspended without a decision.

The next legislative movement was also productive of a warm debate, though connected with a subject which appealed

* Life of John Adams, vol. i. p. 461.

to the sympathies of the whole nation. Algerine corsairs had captured eleven American merchant vessels, and upwards of one hundred prisoners, and the regency manifested a disposition for further outrages. A bill was introduced into Congress proposing a force of six frigates, to protect the commerce of the United States against the cruisers of this piratical power. The bill met with strenuous opposition. The force would require time to prepare it; and would then be insufficient. It might be laying the foundation of a large permanent navy and a great public debt. It would be cheaper to purchase the friendship of Algiers with money, as was done by other nations of superior maritime force, or to purchase the protection of those nations. It seems hardly credible at the present day, that such policy could have been urged before an American Congress, without provoking a burst of scorn and indignation; yet it was heard without any emotion of the kind; and, though the bill was eventually passed by both Houses, it was but by a small majority. It received the hearty assent of the President.

In the course of this session, fresh instances had come before the government of the mischievous activity and audacity of Genet; showing that, not content with compromising the neutrality of the United States at sea, he was attempting to endanger it by land. From documents received, it appeared that in November he had sent emissaries to Kentucky, to enroll American citizens in an expedition against New Orleans, and the Spanish possessions; furnishing them with blank commissions for the purpose.* It was an enterprise in which the adventurous people of that State were ready enough to embark, through enthusiasm for the French nation and impatience at the delay of Spain to open the navigation of the Mississippi. Another expedition was to proceed against the Floridas; men for the purpose to be enlisted at the South, to rendezvous in Georgia, and to be aided by a body of Indians and by a French fleet, should one arrive on the coast.

A proclamation from Governor Moultrie checked all such enlistments in South Carolina, but brought forth a letter from Genet to Mr. Jefferson, denying that he had endeavored to raise an armed force in that State for the service of the republic: "At the same time," adds he, "I am too frank to conceal from you that, authorized by the French nation to deliver brevets to such of your fellow-citizens who feel animated by a desire to serve the fairest of causes, I have accorded

* American State Papers, ii. 36.

them to several brave republicans of South Carolina, whose intention appeared to me to be, in expatriating themselves, to go among the tribes of independent Indians, ancient friends and allies of France, to inflict, if they could, in concert with them, the harm to Spaniards and Englishmen, which the governments of those two nations had the baseness to do for a long time to your fellow-citizens, under the name of these savages, the same as they have done recently under that of the Algerines."

Documents relating to these transactions were communicated to Congress by Washington, early in January. But, though the expedition set on foot in South Carolina had been checked, it was subsequently reported that the one in Kentucky against Louisiana, was still in progress and about to descend the Ohio.

These schemes showed such determined purpose, on the part of Genet, to undermine the peace of the United States, that Washington, without waiting a reply to the demand for his recall, resolved to keep no further terms with that headlong diplomat. The dignity, possibly the safety of the United States, depended upon immediate measures.

In a cabinet council it was determined to supersede Genet's diplomatic functions, deprive him of the consequent privileges, and arrest his person; a message to Congress, avowing such determination, was prepared, but at this critical juncture came despatches from Gouverneur Morris, announcing Genet's recall.

The French minister of foreign affairs had, in fact, reprobated the conduct of Genet as unauthorized by his instructions and deserving of punishment, and Mr. Fauchet, secretary of the executive council, was appointed to succeed him. Mr. Fauchet arrived in the United States in February.

About this time vigilance was required to guard against wrongs from an opposite quarter. We have noticed the orders issued by Great Britain to her cruisers in June, 1793, and the resentment thereby excited in the United States. On the 6th of the following month of November, she had given them additional instructions to detain all vessels laden with the produce of any colony belonging to France, or carrying supplies to any such colony, and to bring them, with their cargoes, to British ports, for adjudication in the British courts of admiralty.

Captures of American vessels were taking place in consequence of these orders, and heightening public irritation. They were considered indicative of determined hostility on

the part of Great Britain, and they produced measures in Congress preparatory to an apprehended state of war. An embargo was laid, prohibiting all trade from the United States to any foreign place for the space of thirty days, and vigorous preparations for defence were adopted with but little opposition.

On the 27th of March, resolutions were moved that all debts due to British subjects be sequestered and paid into the treasury, as a fund to indemnify citizens of the United States for depredations sustained from British cruisers, and that all intercourse with Great Britain be interdicted until she had made compensation for these injuries, and until she should make surrender of the Western posts.

The popular excitement was intense. Meetings were held on the subject of British spoliations. 'Peace or war' was the absorbing question. The partisans of France were now in the ascendant. It was scouted as pusillanimous any longer to hold terms with England. "No doubt," said they, "she despises the proclamation of neutrality, as an evidence of timidity; every motive of self-respect calls on the people of the United States to show a proper spirit."

It was suggested that those who were in favor of resisting British aggressions should mount the tri-colored cockade; and forthwith it was mounted by many; while a democratic society was formed to correspond with the one at Philadelphia, and aid in giving effect to these popular sentiments.

While the public mind was in this inflammable state, Washington received advices from Mr. Pinckney, the American minister in London, informing him that the British ministry had issued instructions to the commanders of armed vessels, revoking those of the 6th of November, 1793. Lord Grenville also, in conversation with Mr. Pinckney, had explained the real motives for that order, showing that, however oppressive in its execution, it had not been intended for the special vexation of American commerce.

Washington laid Pinckney's letter before Congress on the 4th of April. It had its effect on both parties; federalists saw in it a chance of accommodating difficulties, and, therefore, opposed all measures calculated to irritate; the other party did not press their belligerent propositions to any immediate decision, but showed no solicitude to avoid a rupture.

Jefferson, though reputed to be the head of the French party, avowed in a letter to Madison his hope that war would not result, but that justice would be obtained in a peaceable

way ; * and he repeats the hope in a subsequent letter. "My countrymen," writes he, "are groaning under the insults of Great Britain. I hope some means will turn up of reconciling our faith and honor with peace. I confess to you, I have seen enough of one war never to wish to see another." †

"'Tis as great an error," writes Hamilton, at the same time, "for a nation to overrate as to underrate itself. Presumption is as great a fault as timidity 'Tis our error to overrate ourselves and underrate Great Britain; we forget how little we can annoy, how much we may be annoyed." ‡

The war cry, however, is too obvious a means of popular excitement to be readily given up. Busy partisans saw that the feeling of the populace was belligerent, and every means were taken by the press and the democratic societies to exasperate this feeling; according to them the crisis called, not for moderation, but for decision, for energy Still, to adhere to a neutral position, would argue tameness—cowardice! Washington, however, was too morally brave to be clamored out of his wise moderation by such taunts. He resolved to prevent a war if possible, by an appeal to British justice, to be made through a special envoy, who should represent to the British government the injuries we had sustained from it in various ways, and should urge indemnification.

The measure was decried by the party favorable to France, as an undue advance to the British government; but they were still more hostile to it when it was rumored that Hamilton was to be chosen for the mission A member of the House of Representatives addressed a strong letter to the President, deprecating the mission, but especially the reputed choice of the envoy. James Monroe, also, at that time a member of the Senate, remonstrated against the nomination of Hamilton, as injurious to the public interest, and to the interest of Washington himself, and offered to explain his reasons to the latter in a private interview.

Washington declined the interview, but requested Mr. Monroe, if possessed of any facts which would disqualify Mr. Hamilton for the mission, to communicate them to him in writing.

"Colonel Hamilton and others have been mentioned," adds he, "but no one is yet absolutely decided upon in my mind. But as much will depend, among other things, upon the abilities of the person sent, and his knowledge of the affairs of

* Jefferson's Works, vol. iv. p. 102.
† Ib. vol. iv., p. 104. Letter to John Adams.
§ Hamilton's Works, iv. 528.

this country, and as I alone am responsible for a proper nomination, it certainly behooves me to name such a one as, in my judgment, combines the requisites for a mission so peculiarly interesting to the peace and happiness of this country."

Hamilton, however, aware of the "collateral obstacles" which existed with respect to himself, had resolved to advise Washington to drop him from the consideration and to fix upon another character; and recommended John Jay, the Chief Justice of the United States, as the man whom it would be advisable to send. "I think," writes he, "the business would have the best chance possible in his hands, and I flatter myself, that his mission would issue in a manner that would produce the most important good to the nation." *

Mr. Jay was the person ultimately chosen. Washington, in his message, thus nominating an additional envoy to Great Britain, expressed undiminished confidence in the minister actually in London. "But a mission like this," observes he, "while it corresponds with the solemnity of the occasion, will announce to the world a solicitude for a friendly adjustment of our complaints and a reluctance to hostility. Going immediately from the United States, such an envoy will carry with him a full knowledge of the existing temper and sensibility of our country, and will thus be taught to vindicate our rights with firmness, and to cultivate peace with sincerity."

The nomination was approved by a majority of ten Senators.

By this sudden and decisive measure Washington sought to stay the precipitate impulses of public passion; to give time to put the country into a complete state of defence, and to provide such other measures as might be necessary if negotiation, in a reasonable time, should prove unsuccessful. *

Notwithstanding the nomination of the envoy, the resolution to cut off intercourse with Great Britain passed the House of Representatives, and was only lost in the Senate by the casting vote of the Vice President, which was given, according to general belief, "not from a disinclination to the ulterior expedience of the measure, but from a desire," previously, "to try the effect of negotiation." ‡

While Washington was thus endeavoring to steer the vessel of State, amid the surges and blasts which were threatening on every side, Jefferson, who had hauled out of the

* Hamilton's Works, vol. iv. p. 531.
† Washington to Tobias Lear, Writings, x. 401.
* Letter to Edmund Randolph. Writings, x. 403.

storm, writes serenely from his retirement at Monticello, to his friend Tench Coxe at Paris:

"Your letters give a comfortable view of French affairs, and later events seem to confirm it. Over the foreign powers, I am convinced they will triumph completely, and I cannot but hope that that triumph, and the consequent disgrace of the invading tyrants, is destined, in order of events, to kindle the wrath of Europe against those who have dared to embroil them in such wickedness, and to bring, at length, kings, nobles, and priests, to the scaffolds which they have been so long deluging with human blood. I am still warm whenever I think of these scoundrels, though I do it as seldom as I can, preferring infinitely to contemplate the tranquil growth of my lucerne and potatoes. I have so completely withdrawn myself from these spectacles of usurpation and misrule, that I do not take a single newspaper, nor read one a month; and I feel myself infinitely the happier for it." *

CHAPTER XXXVII.

James Monroe Appointed Minister to France in Place of Gouverneur Morris recalled—His Reception—Pennsylvania Insurrection—Proclamation of Washington—Perseverance of the Insurgents—Second Proclamation—The Proceeds Against Them—General Morgan—Lawrence Lewis—Washington Arranges a Plan of Military Operations—Returns to Philadelphia leaving Lee in Command—Submission of the Insurgents—The President's Letter on the Subject to Jay, Minister at London.

The French Government having so promptly complied with the wishes of the American government in recalling citizen Genet, requested, as an act of reciprocity, the recall of Gouverneur Morris, whose political sympathies were considered highly aristocratical. The request was granted accordingly, but Washington, in a letter to Morris, notifying him of his being superseded, assured him of his own undiminished confidence and friendship.

James Monroe, who was appointed in his place, arrived at Paris in a moment of great reaction. Robespierre had terminated his bloody career on the scaffold, and the reign of terror was at end. The new minister from the United States

* Works, iv. 104.

was received in public by the Convention. The sentiments expressed by Monroe on delivering his credentials, were so completely in unison with the feelings of the moment, that the President of the Convention embraced him with emotion, and it was decreed that the American and French flags should be entwined and hung up in the hall of the Convention, in sign of the union and friendship of the two republics.

Chiming in with the popular impulse, Monroe presented the American flag to the Convention, on the part of his country. It was received with enthusiasm, and a decree was passed, that the national flag of France should be transmitted in return, to the government of the United States.

Washington, in the mean time, was becoming painfully aware that censorious eyes at home were keeping a watch upon his administration, and censorious tongues and pens were ready to cavil at every measure. "The affairs of this country cannot go wrong," writes he ironically to Gouverneur Morris; "there are *so many watchful guardians of them*, and such infallible guides, that no one is at a loss for a director at every turn.

This is almost the only instance of irony to be found in his usually plain, direct correspondence, and to us is mournfully suggestive of that soreness and weariness of heart with which he saw his conscientious policy misunderstood or misrepresented, and himself becoming an object of party hostility.

Within three weeks after the date of this letter, an insurrection broke out in the western part of Pennsylvania on account of the excise law. We have already mentioned the riotous opposition this law had experienced. Bills of indictment had been found against some of the rioters. The marshal, when on the way to serve the processes issued by the court, was fired upon by armed men, and narrowly escaped with his life. He was subsequently seized and compelled to renounce the exercise of his official duties. The house of General Nevil, inspector of the revenue, was assailed, but the assailants were repulsed. They assembled in greater numbers; the magistrates and militia officers shrank from interfering, lest it should provoke a general insurrection; a few regular soldiers were obtained from the garrison at Fort Pitt. There was a parley. The insurgents demanded that the inspector and his papers should be given up; and the soldiers march out of the house and ground their arms. The demand being refused, the house was attacked, the outhouses set on fire, and the garrison was compelled to surrender. The marshal and inspector finally escaped out of the country; descended

the Ohio, and, by a circuitous route, found their way to the seat of government; bringing a lamentable tale of their misadventures.

Washington deprecated the result of these outrageous proceedings. "If the laws are to be so trampled upon with impunity," said he, "and a minority, a small one too, is to dictate to the majority, there is an end put, at one stroke, to republican government."

It was intimated that the insurgent district could bring seven thousand men into the field. Delay would only swell the growing disaffection. On the 7th of August Washington issued a proclamation, warning the insurgents to disperse, and declaring that if tranquillity were not restored before the 1st of September, force would be employed to compel submission to the laws. To show that this was not an empty threat, he, on the same day, made a requisition on the governors of New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia, for militia to compose an army of twelve thousand men; afterwards augmented to fifteen thousand.

In a letter to the Governor of Virginia (Light-Horse Harry Lee), he says: "I consider this insurrection as the first formidable fruit of the Democratic Societies, brought forth, I believe, too prematurely for their own views, which may contribute to the annihilation of them.

"That these societies were instituted by the artful and designing members (many of their body, I have no doubt, mean well, but know little of the real plan), primarily to sow among the people the seeds of jealousy and distrust of the government, by destroying all confidence in the administration of it, and that these doctrines have been budding and blowing ever since, is not new to any one who is acquainted with the character of their leaders, and has been attentive to their manœuvres. I early gave it as my opinion to the confidential characters around me, that if these societies were not counteracted (not by prosecutions, the ready way to make them grow stronger), or did not fall into disesteem from the knowledge of their origin, and the views with which they had been instituted by their father, Genet, for purposes well known to the government, they would shake the government to its foundation."

The insurgents manifesting a disposition to persevere in their rebellious conduct, the President issued a second proclamation on the 25th of September, describing in forcible terms, the perverse and obstinate spirit with which the lenient propositions of government had been met, and declaring his

fixed purpose to reduce the refractory to obedience. Shortly after this he left Philadelphia for Carlisle, to join the army, then on its march to suppress the insurrection in the western part of Pennsylvania.

Just as Washington was leaving Philadelphia, a letter was put into his hands from Major-General Morgan. The proclamation had roused the spirit of that revolutionary veteran. He was on his way, he wrote, to join the expedition against the insurgents, having command of a division of the Virginia militia, of which General Lee was commander-in-chief.

Washington replied from Carlisle to his old companion in arms: "Although I regret the occasion which has called you into the field, I rejoice to hear you are there; and it is probable I may meet you at Fort Cumberland, whither I shall proceed as soon as I see the troops at this rendezvous in condition to advance. At that place, or at Bedford, my ulterior resolution must be taken, either to advance with the troops into the insurgent counties of this State, or to return to Philadelphia for the purpose of meeting Congress the 3d of next month.

"Imperious circumstances alone can justify my absence from the seat of government, whilst Congress are in session; but if these, from the disposition of the people in the refractory counties and the state of the information I expect to receive at the advanced posts, should appear to exist, the less must yield to the greater duties of my office, and I shall cross the mountains with the troops; if not, I shall place the command of the combined force under the orders of Governor Lee of Virginia, and repair to the seat of government."

We will here note that Lawrence Lewis, a son of Washington's sister, Mrs. Fielding Lewis, having caught the spirit of arms, accompanied Morgan as aide-de-camp, on this expedition. The prompt zeal with which he volunteered into the service of his country was, doubtless, highly satisfactory to his uncle, with whom, it will be seen, he was a great favorite.

On the 9th of October Washington writes from Carlisle to the Secretary of State: "The insurgents are alarmed, but not yet brought to their proper senses. Every means is devised by them and their friends and associates, to induce a belief that there is no necessity for troops crossing the mountains; although we have information, at the same time, that part of the people there are obliged to embody themselves to repel the insults of another part."

On the 10th, the Pennsylvania troops set out from Carlisle for their rendezvous at Bedford, and Washington proceeded to

Williamsport, thence to go on to Fort Cumberland, the rendezvous of the Virginia and Maryland troops. He arrived at the latter place on the 16th, of October, and found a respectable force assembled from those States, and learnt that fifteen hundred more from Virginia were at hand. All accounts agreed that the insurgents were greatly alarmed at the serious appearance of things. "I believe," writes Washington, "the eyes of all the well-disposed people of this country will soon be opened, and that they will clearly see the tendency, if not the design, of the leader of these self-created societies. As far as I have heard them spoken of, it is with strong reprobation."

At Bedford he arranged matters and settled a plan of military operations. The Governors of Virginia, Maryland, and Pennsylvania, were at the head of the troops of their respective States, but Governor Lee was to have the general command. This done, Washington prepared to shape his course for Philadelphia—"but not," says he indignantly, "because the impertinence of Mr. Bache, or his correspondent, has undertaken to pronounce that I cannot, constitutionally, command the army, whilst Congress is in session."

In a letter to Governor Lee, on leaving him in command, he conveyed to the army the very high sense he entertained "of the enlightened and patriotic zeal for the constitution and the laws which had led them cheerfully to quit their families, homes, and the comforts of private life, to undertake, and thus far to perform, a long and fatiguing march, and to encounter and endure the hardships and privations of a military life."

"No citizen of the United States," observes he, "can ever be engaged in a service more important to their country. It is nothing less than to consolidate and to preserve the blessings of that revolution which, at much expense of blood and treasure, constituted us a free and independent nation."

His parting admonition is—"that every officer and soldier will constantly bear in mind, that he comes to support the laws, and that it would be peculiarly unbecoming in him to be, in any way, the infractor of them; that the essential principles of a free government confine the province of the military when called forth on such occasions, to these two objects: first, to combat and subdue all who may be found in arms in opposition to the national will and authority; secondly, to aid and support the civil magistrates in bringing offenders to justice. The dispensation of this justice belongs to the civil magistrates; and let it ever be our pride and our glory to leave the sacred deposit there inviolate."

Washington pushed on for Philadelphia, through deep roads and a three days' rain, and arrived there about the last of October. Governor Lee marched with troops in two divisions, amounting to fifteen thousand men, into the western counties of Pennsylvania. This great military array extinguished at once the kindling elements of a civil war, "by making resistance desperate." At the approach of so overwhelming a force the insurgents laid down their arms, and gave assurance of submission, and craved the clemency of government. It was extended to them. A few were tried for treason, but were not convicted; but as some spirit of discontent was still manifest, Major-General Morgan was stationed with a detachment for the winter, in the disaffected region.

The paternal care with which Washington watched, at all times, over the welfare of the country, was manifested in a letter to General Hamilton, who had remained with the army. "Press the Governors to be pointed in ordering the officers under their respective commands to march back with their respective corps; and to see that the inhabitants meet with no disgraceful insults or injuries from them."

It must have been a proud satisfaction to Washington to have put down, without an effusion of blood, an insurrection which, at one time, threatened such serious consequences. In a letter to Mr. Jay, who had recently gone minister to England, he writes: "The insurrection in the western counties of this State will be represented differently, according to the wishes of some and the prejudices of others, who may exhibit it as an evidence of what has been predicted, 'that we are unable to govern ourselves.' Under this view of the subject, I am happy in giving it to you as the general opinion, that this event, having happened at the time it did, was fortunate, although it will be attended with considerable expense."

After expressing his opinion that the 'self-created societies' who were laboring to effect some revolution in the government, were the fomenters of these western disturbances, he adds: "It has afforded an occasion for the people of this country to show their abhorrence of the result and their attachment to the constitution and the laws; for I believe that five times the number of militia that was required, would have come forward, if it had been necessary, in support of them.

"The spirit which blazed out on this occasion, as soon as the object was fully understood and the lenient measures of the government were made known to the people, deserves to be communicated. There are instances of general officers going at the head of a single troop, and of light companies; of

field officers, when they came to the place of rendezvous, and found no command for them in that grade, turning into the ranks and proceeding as private soldiers, under their own captains; and of numbers possessing the first fortunes in the country, standing in the ranks as private men, and marching day by day, with their knapsacks and haversacks at their backs, sleeping on straw with a single blanket in a soldier's tent, during the frosty nights which we have had, by way of example to others. Nay, more, many young Quakers, of the first families, character, and property, not discouraged by the elders, have turned into the ranks and marched with the troops.

"These things have terrified the insurgents, who had no conception that such a spirit prevailed; but while the thunder only rumbled at a distance, were boasting of their strength and wishing for and threatening the militia by turns; intimating that the arms they should take from them would soon become a magazine in their heads."

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

Washington's Denunciation of Self-created Societies--Not Relished by Congress—Campaign of General Wayne—Hamilton Reports a Plan for the Redemption of the Public Debt—And Retires from his Post as Secretary of the Treasury—Is Succeeded by Oliver Wolcott—Resignation of Knox—Succeeded by Timothy Pickering—Close of the Session.

In his speech on the opening of Congress (November 19th), Washington, in adverting to the insurrection in Western Pennsylvania, did not hesitate to denounce "certain self-created societies" as "fomenters of it." After detailing its commencement and progress, he observes: While there is cause to lament that occurrences of this nature should have disgraced the name or interrupted the tranquillity of any part of our community, or should have diverted to a new application any portion of the public resources, there are not wanting real and substantial consolations for the misfortune. It has demonstrated, that our prosperity rests on solid foundations; by furnishing an additional proof that my fellow-citizens understand the true principles of government and liberty; that they feel their inseparable union; that, notwithstanding all the de-

vices which have been used to sway them from their interest and duty, they are now as ready to maintain the authority of the laws against licentious invasions, as they were to defend their rights against usurpation. It has been a spectacle, displaying to the highest advantage the value of republican government, to behold the most and least wealthy of our citizens standing in the same ranks as private soldiers; pre-eminently distinguished by being the army of the constitution; undeterred by a march of three hundred miles over rugged mountains, by the approach of an inclement season, or by any other discouragement. Nor ought I to omit to acknowledge the efficacious and patriotic cooperation which I have experienced from the chief magistrates of the States to which my requisitions have been addressed.

"To every description, indeed, of citizens, let praise be given; but let them persevere in their affectionate vigilance over that precious depository of American happiness, the constitution of the United States. Let them cherish it, too, for the sake of those who, from every clime, are daily seeking a dwelling in our land. And when, in the calm moments of reflection, they shall have retraced the origin and progress of the insurrection, let them determine whether it has not been fomented by combinations of men, who, careless of consequences, and disregarding the unerring truth, that those who arouse cannot always appease, a civil convulsion, have disseminated from ignorance or perversion of facts, suspicions, jealousies, and accusations of the whole government."

This denunciation of the "self-created societies" was a bold step, by which he was sure to incur their resentment. It was not relished by some members of the Senate, but the majority gave it their approval. In the House, where the opposition party was most powerful, this passage of the President's speech gave rise to much altercation, and finally, the majority showed their disapprobation by passing it over in silence in the address voted in reply.

The "self-created societies," however, which had sprung up in various parts of the Union, had received their death-blow; they soon became odious in the public eye, and gradually disappeared; following the fate of the Jacobin clubs in France.

It was with great satisfaction that Washington had been able to announce favorable intelligence of the campaign of General Wayne against the hostile Indians west of the Ohio. That brave commander had conducted it with a judgment and prudence little compatible with the hare-brained appellation he had acquired by his rash exploits during the Revolution.

Leaving his winter encampment on the Ohio, in the spring (of 1794), he had advanced cautiously into the wild country west of it; skirmishing with bands of lurking savages, as he advanced, and establishing posts to keep up communication and secure the transmission of supplies. It was not until the 8th of August that he arrived at the junction of the rivers Au Glaize and Miami in a fertile and populous region, where the Western Indians had their most important villages. Here he threw up some works, which he named Fort Defiance. Being strengthened by eleven hundred mounted volunteers from Kentucky, his force exceeded that of the savage warriors who had collected to oppose him, which scarcely amounted to two thousand men. These, however, were strongly encamped in the vicinity of Fort Miami, a British post, about thirty miles distant, and far within the limits of the United States, and seemed prepared to give battle, expecting, possibly to be aided by the British garrison. Wayne's men were eager for a fight, but he, remembering the instructions of government, restrained his fighting propensities. In a letter to his old comrade Knox, secretary of war, he writes, "Though now prepared to strike, I have thought proper to make the enemy a last overture of peace, nor am I without hopes that they will listen to it."

His overture was ineffectual; or rather the reply he received was such as to leave him in doubt of the intentions of the enemy. He advanced, therefore, with the precautions he had hitherto observed, hoping to be met in the course of his march by deputies on peaceful missions.

On the 20th, being arrived near to the enemy's position, his advanced guard was fired upon by an ambush of the enemy concealed in a thicket, and was compelled to retreat. The general now ordered an attack of horse and foot upon the enemy's position; the Indians were roused from their lair with the point of the bayonet; driven, fighting for more than two miles, through thick woods, and pursued with great slaughter until within gunshot of the British fort. "We remained," writes the general, "three days and nights on the banks of the Miami, in front of the field of battle, during which time all the houses and corn were consumed, or otherwise destroyed, for a considerable distance both above and below Fort Miami; and we were within pistol-shot of the garrison of that place, who were compelled to remain quiet spectators of this general devastation and conflagration."

It was trusted that this decisive battle, and the wide ravages of villages and fields of corn with which it was succeeded, would bring the Indians to their senses, and compel them to solicit the peace which they had so repeatedly rejected.

In his official address to Congress, Washington had urged the adoption of some definite plan for the redemption of the public debt. A plan was reported by Mr. Hamilton, 20th January, 1795, which he had digested and prepared on the basis of the actual revenues, for the further support of public credit. The report embraced a comprehensive view of the system which he had pursued, and made some recommendations, which after much debate were adopted.

So closed Mr. Hamilton's labors as Secretary of the Treasury. He had long meditated a retirement from his post, the pay of which was inadequate to the support of his family, but had postponed it, first, on account of the accusations brought against him in the second Congress, and of which he awaited the investigation; secondly, in consequence of events which rendered the prospect of a continuance of peace precarious. But these reasons no longer operating, he gave notice, on his return from the Western country, that on the last day of the ensuing month of January he should give in his resignation. He did so, and received the following note from Washington on the subject: "After so long an experience of your public services, I am naturally led, at this moment of your departure from office (which it has always been my wish to prevent), to review them. In every relation which you have borne to me, I have found that my confidence in your talents, exertions, and integrity has been well placed. I the more freely render this testimony of my approbation, because I speak from opportunities of information which cannot deceive me, and which furnish satisfactory proof of your title to public regard.

"My most earnest wishes for your happiness will attend you in your retirement, and you may assure yourself of the sincere esteem, regard, and friendship, of, dear sir, your affectionate," etc.*

Hamilton's reply manifests his sense of the kindness of this letter. "As often as I may recall the vexations I have endured," writes he, "your approbation will be a great and precious consolation. It was not without a struggle that I yielded to the very urgent motives which impelled me to relinquish a station in which I could hope to be in any degree instrumental in promoting the success of an administration under your direction. * * Whatever may be my destination hereafter, I entreat you to be persuaded (not the less from my having been sparing in professions) that I shall never cease

* Writings, xi. 16.

to render a just tribute to those eminent and excellent qualities, which have been already productive of so many blessings to your country; that you will always have my fervent wishes for your public and personal felicity, and that it will be my pride to cultivate a continuance of that esteem, regard, and friendship, of which you do me the honor to assure me. With true respect and affectionate attachment, I have the honor to be," etc.*

Hamilton was succeeded in office by Oliver Wolcott, of Connecticut, a man of judgment and ability, who had served as comptroller, and was familiar with the duties of the office.

Knox likewise had given in his resignation at the close of the month of December. "After having served my country nearly twenty years," writes he to Washington, "the greatest portion of which under your immediate auspices, it is with extreme reluctance that I find myself constrained to withdraw from so honorable a station. But the natural and powerful claims of a numerous family will no longer permit me to neglect their essential interests. In whatever situation I shall be, I shall recollect your confidence and kindness, with all the fervor and purity of affection of which a grateful heart is susceptible."

"I cannot suffer you," replies Washington, "to close your public service, without uniting with the satisfaction which must arise in your own mind from a conscious rectitude, my most perfect persuasion that you have deserved well of your country.

"My personal knowledge of your exertions, whilst it authorizes me to hold this language, justifies the sincere friendship which I have ever borne for you, and which will accompany you in every situation of life; being, with affectionate regard, always yours," etc.

There was always a kindly warmth in Washington's expressions towards the buoyant General Knox. Knox was succeeded in the war department by Colonel Timothy Pickering, at that time Postmaster-General.

The session of Congress closed on the 3d of March, 1795.

* Writings, xi. 16.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

Washington's Anxiety about the Progress of the Negotiation with England—Jay's Treaty Arrives for Ratification—Predisposition to Condemn—Return of Jay—Adet Succeeds Fauchet as Minister from France—The Treaty Laid Before the Senate—Ratified with a Qualification—A Novel Question—Popular Discontent—Abstract of the Treaty Published—Violent Opposition to it—Washington Resolved to Ratify—His Resolution Suspended—Goes to Mount Vernon—Reply to an Address from Boston—Increasing Clamor.

WASHINGTON had watched the progress of the mission of Mr. Jay to England, with an anxious eye. He was aware that he had exposed his popularity to imminent hazard, by making an advance toward a negotiation with that power; but what was of still greater moment with him, he was aware that the peace and happiness of his country were at stake on the result of that mission. It was, moreover, a mission of great delicacy, from the many intricate and difficult points to be discussed, and the various and mutual grounds of complaint to be adjusted.

Mr. Jay, in a letter dated August 5th, 1794, had informed him confidentially, that the ministry were prepared to settle the matters in dispute upon just and liberal terms; still, what those terms, which they conceived to be just and liberal, might prove when they came to be closely discussed, no one could prognosticate.

Washington hardly permitted himself to hope for the complete success of the mission. To 'give and take,' he presumed would be the result. In the mean time there were so many hot heads and impetuous spirits at home to be managed and restrained, that he was anxious the negotiation might assume a decisive form and be brought to a speedy close. He was perplexed too, by what, under existing circumstances, appeared piratical conduct, on the part of Bermudian privateers persisting in capturing American vessels.

At length, on the 7th of March, 1795, four days after the close of the session of Congress, a treaty arrived which had been negotiated by Mr. Jay, and signed by the ministers of the two nations on the 19th of November, and was sent out for ratification.

In a letter to Washington, which accompanied the treaty,

Mr. Jay wrote: "To do more was impossible. I ought not to conceal from you that the confidence reposed in your personal character was visible and useful throughout the negotiation."

Washington immediately made the treaty a close study; some of the provisions were perfectly satisfactory; of others, he did not approve; on the whole, he considered it a matter, to use his own expression, of 'give and take,' and believing the advantages to outweigh the objections, and that, as Mr. Jay alleged, it was the best treaty attainable, he made up his mind to ratify it, should it be approved by the Senate.

As a system of predetermined hostility to the treaty, however, was already manifested, and efforts were made to awaken popular jealousy concerning it, Washington kept its provisions secret, that the public mind might not be preoccupied on the subject. In the course of a few days, however, enough leaked out to be seized upon by the opposition press to excite public distrust, though not enough to convey a distinct idea of the merits of the instrument. In fact, the people were predisposed to condemn, because vexed that any overtures had been made towards a negotiation, such overtures having been stigmatized as cowardly and degrading. If it had been necessary to send a minister to England, said they, it should have been to make a downright demand of reparation for wrongs inflicted on our commerce, and the immediate surrender of the Western posts.

In the meantime Jay arrived on the 28th of May, and found that during his absence in Europe he had been elected governor of the State of New York; an honorable election, the result of no effort nor intrigue, but of the public sense entertained by his native State, of his pure and exalted merit. He, in consequence, resigned the office of Chief Justice of the United States.

In the course of this month arrived Mr. Adet, who had been appointed by the French government to succeed Mr. Fauchet as minister to the United States. He brought with him the colors of France which the Convention had instructed him to present as a testimonial of friendship, in return for the American flag which had been presented by Mr. Monroe. The presentation of the colors was postponed by him for the present

The Senate was convened by Washington on the 8th of June, and the treaty of Mr. Jay was laid before it, with its accompanying documents. The session was with closed doors, discussions were long and arduous, and the treaty underwent a

scrutinizing examination. The twelfth article met with especial objections.

This article provided for a direct trade between the United States and the British West India Islands, in American vessels not exceeding seventy tons burden, conveying the produce of the States or of the Islands; but it prohibited the exportation of molasses, sugar, coffee, cocoa, or cotton, in American vessels, either from the United States or the Islands, to any part of the world. Under this article it was a restricted intercourse, but Mr. Jay considered the admission even of small vessels, to the trade of these Islands, an important advantage to the commerce of the United States. He had not sufficiently adverted to the fact that, among the prohibited articles, cotton was also a product of the Southern States. Its cultivation had been but recently introduced there; so that when he sailed for Europe hardly sufficient had been raised for domestic consumption, and at the time of signing the treaty very little, if any, had been exported. Still it was now becoming an important staple of the South, and hence the objection of the Senate to this article of the treaty. On the 24th of June two-thirds of the Senate, the constitutional majority, voted for the ratification of the treaty, stipulating, however, that an article be added suspending so much of the twelfth article as respected the West India trade, and that the President be requested to open, without delay, further negotiation on this head.

Here was a novel case to be determined. Could the Senate be considered to have ratified the treaty before the insertion of this new article? Was the act complete and final, so as to render it unnecessary to refer it back to that body? Could the President put his final seal upon an act before it was complete? After much reflection, Washington was satisfied of the propriety of ratifying the treaty with the qualification imposed by the Senate.

In the mean time the popular discontent which had been excited concerning the treaty was daily increasing. The secrecy which had been maintained with regard to its provisions was wrested into a cause of offence. Republics should have no secrets. The Senate should not have deliberated on the treaty with closed doors.

Such was the irritable condition of the public mind when, on the 29th of June, a senator of the United States (Mr. Mason of Virginia) sent an abstract of the treaty to be published in a leading opposition paper in Philadelphia.

The whole country was immediately in a blaze. Beside

the opposition party, a portion of the Cabinet was against the ratification. Of course it received but a faltering support, while the attack upon it was vehement and sustained. The assailants seemed determined to carry their point by storm. Meetings to oppose the ratification were held in Boston, New York, Philadelphia, Baltimore, and Charleston. The smaller towns throughout the Union followed their example. In New York, a copy of the treaty was burnt before the governor's house. In Philadelphia, it was suspended on a pole, carried about the streets, and finally burnt in front of the British minister's house, amid the shoutings of the populace. The whole country seemed determined, by prompt and clamorous manifestations of dissatisfaction, to make Washington give way.

He saw their purpose; he was aware of the odious points of view on which the treaty might justly be placed; his own opinion was not particularly favorable to it; but he was convinced that it was better to ratify it, in the manner the Senate had advised, and with the reservation already mentioned, than to suffer matters to remain in their present unsettled and precarious state.

Before he could act upon this conviction a new difficulty arose to suspend his resolution. News came that the order of the British government of the 8th of June, 1793, for the seizure of provisions in vessels going to French ports, was renewed. Washington instantly directed that a strong memorial should be drawn up against this order; as it seemed to favor a construction of the treaty which he was determined to resist. While this memorial was in course of preparation, he was called off to Mount Vernon. On his way thither, though little was said to him on the subject of the treaty, he found, he says, from indirect discourses, that endeavors were making to place it in all the odious points of view of which it was susceptible, and in some which it would not admit.

The proceedings and resolves of town meetings, also, savoring as he thought of party prejudice, were forwarded to him by express, and added to his disquiet. "Party disputes are now carried to such a length," writes he, "and truth is so enveloped in mist and false representation that it is extremely difficult to know through what channel to seek it. This difficulty, to one who is of no party, and whose sole wish is to pursue with undeviating steps a path, which would lead this country to respectability, wealth, and happiness, is exceedingly to be lamented. But such, for wise purposes it is presumed, is the turbulence of human passions in party dis-

putes, when victory more than *truth* is the palm contended for, that 'the post of honor is a *private station*.'" *

The opposition made to the treaty from meetings in different parts of the Union, gave him the most serious uneasiness, from the effect it might have on the relations with France and England. His reply (July 28th) to an address from the selectmen of Boston, contains the spirit of his replies to other addresses of the kind, and shows the principles which influenced him in regard to the treaty:

"In every act of my administration," said he, "I have sought the happiness of my fellow-citizens. My system for the attainment of this object has uniformly been to overlook all personal, local, and partial considerations; to contemplate the United States as one great whole; to confide that sudden impressions, when erroneous, would yield to candid reflection; and to consult only the substantial and permanent interests of our country.

"Nor have I departed from this line of conduct, on the occasion which has produced the resolutions contained in your letter.

"Without a predilection for my own judgment I have weighed with attention, every argument which has at any time been brought into view. But the constitution is the guide which I never can abandon. It has assigned to the President the power of making treaties with the advice and consent of the Senate. It was, doubtless, supposed that these two branches of government would combine, without passion, and with the best means of information, those facts and principles upon which the success of our foreign relations will always depend; that they ought not to substitute for their own conviction, the opinions of others, or to seek truth through any channel but that of a temperate and well-informed investigation.

"Under this persuasion, I have resolved on the manner of executing the duty before me. To the high responsibility of it, I freely submit, and you, gentlemen, are at liberty to make these sentiments known as the grounds of my procedure. While I feel the most lively gratitude for the many instances of approbation from my country, I can no otherwise deserve it, than by obeying the dictates of my conscience." †

The violence of the opposition increased. Washington perceived that the prejudices against the treaty were more extensive than was generally imagined. "How should it be otherwise," said he, "when no stone has been left unturned

* Writings, xi. 40.

† Writings, Sparks, xi. 2.

that could impress on the minds of the people the most arrant misrepresentation of facts ; that their rights have not only been *neglected* but absolutely *sold* ; that there are no reciprocal advantages in the treaty ; that the benefits are all on the side of Great Britain ; and what seems to have more weight with them than all the rest, and to have been most pressed, that the treaty is made with the design to oppress the French, in open violation of our treaty with that nation ; and contrary, too, to every principle of gratitude and sound policy."

Never, during his administration, had he seen a crisis, in his judgment, so pregnant with interesting events, nor one from which, whether viewed on one side or the other, more was to be apprehended.

If the treaty were ratified, the partisans of the French, "or rather," said he, "of war and confusion" would excite them to hostility ; if not ratified, there was no foreseeing the consequences as it respected Great Britain. It was a crisis, he said, that most eminently called upon the administration to be wise and temperate, as well as firm. The public clamor continued, and induced a reiterated examination of the subject ; but did not shake his purpose. "*There is but one straight course,*" said he," "*and that is to seek truth and pursue it steadily.*" *

CHAPTER XL.

Washington Recalled to the Seat of Government—Conduct of Randolph Brought in Question—Treaty signed—Resignation of Randolph—His correspondence with Washington—Unlimited disclosure permitted—Appearance of his Vindication—Pickering Transferred to the Department of State—M'Henry appointed Secretary of War—Arrival of George Washington Lafayette.

The difficult and intricate questions pressing upon the attention of government left Washington little mood to enjoy the retirement of Mount Vernon, being constantly in doubt whether his presence in Philadelphia were not necessary. In his letters to Randolph, he requested to be kept continually advised on this head. "While I am in office I shall never suffer private convenience to interfere with what I conceive to be my official duty." "I do not require more than a day's notice to repair to the seat of government."

* See Letter to Edmund Randolph. Writings, xi. pp. 45-51.

His promptness was soon put to the test. Early in August came a mysterious letter, dated July 31, from Mr. Pickering, the secretary of war.

"On the subject of the treaty," writes Pickering, "I confess I feel extreme solicitude, and for a *special reason* which can be communicated to you only in person. I entreat, therefore, that you will return with all convenient speed to the seat of government. In the meanwhile, for the reason above referred to, I pray you to decide on no important political measure, in whatever form it may be presented to you. Mr. Wolcott and I (Mr. Bradford concurring) waited on Mr. Randolph, and urged his writing to request your return. He wrote in our presence, but we concluded a letter from one of us also expedient. With the utmost sincerity I subscribe myself yours and my country's friend. This letter is for your own eye alone."

The receipt of this enigmatical letter induced Washington to cut short his sojourn at Mount Vernon, and hasten to Philadelphia. He arrived there on the 11th of August; and on the same day received a solution of the mystery. A despatch written by Fauchet, the French minister, to his government in the preceding month of November, was placed in Washington's hands with a translation of it made by Mr. Pickering. The despatch had been found on board of a French privateer, captured by a British frigate, and had been transmitted to the ministry. Lord Grenville, finding it contained passages relating to the intercourse of Mr. Randolph, the American secretary of state, with Mr. Fauchet, had sent it to Mr. Hammond, the British minister in Philadelphia. He had put it into the hands of Mr. Wolcott, the secretary of the treasury, who had shown it to the secretary of war and attorney-general; and the contents had been considered so extraordinary as to call forth the mysterious letter entreating the prompt return of Washington.

The following passages in Fauchet's intercepted despatch related to the Western insurrection and the proclamation of Washington:

"Two or three days before the proclamation was published, and of course before the cabinet had resolved on its measures, the secretary of state came to my house. All his countenance was grief. He requested of me a private conversation. It was all over, he said to me; a civil war is about to ravage our unhappy country. Four men, by their talents, their influence, and their energy, may save it. But, debtors of English merchants, they will be deprived of their liberty, if they take the

smallest step. Could you lend them instantaneously funds to shelter them from English prosecution? This inquiry astonished me much. It was impossible for me to make a satisfactory answer. You know my want of power and deficiency in pecuniary means." * * * "Thus, with some thousands of dollars, the Republic could have decided on civil war or peace. *Thus the consciences of the pretended patriots of America have already their price.*"—"What will be the old age of this government, if it is thus already decrepit?"

The perusal of the letter gave Washington deep perplexity and concern. He revolved the matter in his mind in silence.

The predominant object of his thoughts recently had been to put a stop to the public agitation on the subject of the treaty; and he postponed any new question of difficulty until decided measures had laid the other at rest. On the next day, therefore, (12th), he brought before the cabinet the question of immediate ratification. All the members were in favor of it excepting Mr. Randolph; he had favored it before the news of the British provision order, but now pronounced it unadvisable, until that order were revoked, and there should be an end of the war between France and England. This led to further discussion, and it was finally agreed to ratify the treaty immediately; but to accompany the ratification with a strong memorial against the provision order. The ratification was signed by Washington on the 18th of August.

His conduct towards Randolph, in the interim, had been as usual, but now that the despatch of public business no longer demanded the entire attention of the cabinet, he proceeded to clear up the doubts occasioned by the intercepted despatch. Accordingly, on the following day, as Randolph entered the cabinet, Washington, who was conversing with Pickering and Wolcott, rose and handed to him the letter of Fauchet, asking an explanation of the questionable parts.

Randolph appears to have been less agitated by the production of the letter, than hurt that the inquiry concerning it had not first been made of him in private. He postponed making any specific reply, until he should have time to examine the letter at his leisure; and observed on retiring, that, after the treatment he had experienced, he could not think of remaining in office a moment longer.

In a letter to the President the same day he writes: "Your confidence in me, sir, has been unlimited, and I can truly affirm unabused. My sensations, then, cannot be concealed, when I find that confidence so suddenly withdrawn, without a word or distant hint being previously dropped to me. This,

sir, as I mentioned in your room, is a situation in which I cannot hold my present office, and therefore I hereby resign it.

"It will not, however, be concluded from hence that I mean to relinquish the inquiry. No, sir; very far from it. I will also meet any inquiry; and to prepare for it, if I learn there is a chance of overtaking Mr. Fauchet before he sails, I will go to him immediately.

"I have to beg the favor of you to permit me to be furnished with a copy of the letter, and I will prepare an answer to it; which I perceive that I cannot do as I wish, merely upon the few hasty memoranda which I took with my pencil.

"I am satisfied, sir, that you will acknowledge one piece of justice to be due on the occasion: which is, that, until an inquiry can be made, the affair shall continue in secrecy under your injunction. For, after pledging myself for a more specific investigation of all the suggestions, I here most solemnly deny that any overture came from me, which was to produce money to me or any others for me; and that in any manner, directly or indirectly, was a shilling ever received by me; nor was it ever contemplated by me, that one shilling should be applied by Mr. Fauchet to any purpose relative to the insurrection."

Washington, in a reply on the following day, in which he accepted his resignation, observes: "Whilst you are in pursuit of means to remove the strong suspicions arising from this letter, no disclosure of its contents will be made by me; and I will enjoin the same on the public officers who are acquainted with the purport of it, unless something will appear to render an explanation necessary on the part of the government, and of which I will be the judge."

And on a subsequent occasion he writes: "No man would rejoice more than I to find that the suspicions which have resulted from the intercepted letter were unequivocally and honorably removed."

Mr. Fauchet, in the mean time, having learnt previous to embarkation, that his despatch had been intercepted, wrote a declaration, denying that Mr. Randolph had ever indicated a willingness to receive money for personal objects, and affirming that he had had no intention to say anything in his letter to his government, to the disadvantage of Mr. Randolph's character.*

Mr. Randolph now set to work to prepare a pamphlet in explanation of his conduct, intimating to his friends, that in the

*Sparks' Writings of Washington, xi. 90.

course of his vindication, he would bring things to view which would affect Washington more than anything which had yet appeared.*

While thus occupied he addressed several notes to Washington, requiring information on various points, and received concise answers to all his queries.

On the occasion, where he had required a particular paper, he published in the Gazette an extract from his note to Washington; as if fearing the request might be denied, lest the paper in question should lay open many confidential and delicate matters.

In reply, Washington writes: "That you may have no cause to complain of the withholding of any paper, however private and confidential, which you shall think necessary in a case of so serious a nature, I have directed that you should have the inspection of my letter of the 22d of July, agreeably to your request, and you are at full liberty to publish, without reserve, *any* and *every* private and confidential letter I ever wrote to you; nay, more, every word I ever uttered to you or in your hearing, from whence you can derive any advantage in your vindication. I grant this permission, inasmuch as the extract alluded to manifestly tends to impress on the public an opinion, that something was passed between us, which you should disclose with reluctance, from motives of delicacy with respect to me. * * * That public will judge, when it comes to see your vindication, how far and how proper it has been for you to publish private and confidential communications which oftentimes have been written in a hurry, and sometimes without even copies being taken; and it will, I hope, appreciate my motives, even if it should condemn my prudence, in allowing you the unlimited license herein contained."

The merit of this unlimited license will be properly understood when it is known that, at this time, Washington was becoming more and more the object of the malignant attacks of the press. The ratification of the treaty had opened the vials of party wrath against him. "His military and political character," we are told, "was attacked with equal violence, and it was averred that he was totally destitute of merit, either as a soldier or a statesman. He was charged with having violated the constitution, in negotiating a treaty without the previous advice of the Senate, that he had embraced within that treaty subjects belonging exclusively to the legislature,

* Writings, xi. 89.

for which an impeachment was publicly suggested. Nay more, it was asserted that he had drawn from the treasury, for his private use, more than the salary annexed to his office." *

This last charge, so incompatible with the whole character and conduct of Washington, was fully refuted by the late Secretary of the Treasury, who explained that the President never himself touched any part of the compensation attached to his office, but that the whole was received and disbursed by the gentleman who superintended the expenses of his household. That the expenses at some times exceeded, and at other times fell short of the quarter's allowance; but that the aggregate fell within the allowance for the year.

At this time the General Assembly of Maryland made a unanimous resolution to the following effect: that "observing with deep concern, a series of efforts, by indirect insinuation or open invective, to detach from the first magistrate of the Union, the well-earned confidence of his fellow-citizens; they think it their duty to declare, and they do hereby declare their unabated reliance on the *integrity*, *judgment*, and *patriotism* of the President of the United State."

In a reply to the Governor of Maryland, Washington observed: "At any time the expression of such a sentiment would have been considered as highly honorable and flattering. At the present, when the voice of malignancy is so high-toned, and no attempts are left unessayed to destroy all confidence in the constituted authorities of this country, it is peculiarly grateful to my sensibility." * * *

"I have long since resolved, for the present time at least, to let my calumniators proceed without any notice being taken of their invectives by myself, or by any others, with my participation or knowledge. Their views, I dare say, are readily perceived by all the enlightened and well-disposed part of the community; and by the records of my administration, and not by the voice of faction, I expect to be acquitted or condemned hereafter."

The vindication which Mr. Randolph had been preparing, appeared in December. In this, he gave a narrative of the principal events relating to the case, his correspondence with the President, and the whole of the French minister's letter. He endeavored to explain those parts of the letter which had brought the purity of his conduct in question; but, as has been observed, "he had a difficult task to perform, as he was obliged to prove a negative, and to explain vague expressions

* See Marshall's Washington, vol. ii. p. 370.

and insinuations connected with his name in Fauchet's letter." *

Fauchet himself furnished the best vindication in his certificate above mentioned; but it is difficult to reconcile his certificate with the language of his official letter to his government. We are rather inclined to attribute to misconceptions and hasty inferences of the French minister, the construction put by him in his letter, on the conversation he had held with Mr. Randolph.

The latter injured his cause by the embittered feelings manifested in his vindication, and the asperity with which he spoke of Washington there and elsewhere. He deeply regretted it in after life, and in a letter to the Hon. Bushrod Washington, written in 1810, he says: "I do not retain the the smallest degree of that feeling which roused me fifteen years ago, against some individuals. * * * If I could now present myself before your venerated uncle, it would be my pride to confess my contrition, that I suffered my irritation, let the cause be what it might, to use some of those expressions respecting him, which, at this moment of indifference to the ideas of the world, I wish to recall, as being inconsistent with my subsequent conviction. My life, will, I hope, be sufficiently extended for the recording of my sincere opinion of his virtues and merit, in a style which is not the result of a mind merely debilitated by misfortune, but of that Christian philosophy on which alone I depend for inward tranquillity." †

After a considerable interval from the resignation of Randolph, Colonel Pickering was transferred to the Department of State, and Mr. James McHenry was appointed Secretary of War. The office of Attorney-General becoming vacant by the death of Mr. Brandford, was offered to Mr. Charles Lee of Virginia, and accepted by him on the last day of November.

During the late agitations, George Washington Lafayette, the son of the General, had arrived at Boston under the name of Motier, accompanied by his tutor, M. Frestel, and had written to Washington apprising him of his arrival. It was an embarrassing moment to Washington. The letter excited his deepest sensibility, bringing with it recollections of Lafayette's merits, services, and sufferings, and of their past friendship, and he resolved to become "father, friend, protector, and supporter" to his son. But he must proceed with caution; on account of his own official character as Executive of the United States, and of the position of Lafayette in

* Note of Mr. Sparks. Washington's Writings, xi. 90.
† Marshall's Life of Washington, 2d edition, vol. ii. note xx.

regard to the French government. Caution, also, was necessary, not to endanger the situation of the young man himself, and of his mother and friends whom he had left behind. Philadelphia would not be an advisable residence for him at present, until it was seen what opinions would be excited by his arrival; as Washington would for some time be absent from the seat of government, while all the foreign functionaries were residing there, particularly those of his own nation. Washington suggested, therefore, that he should enter for the present as a student at the University in Cambridge, Massachusetts, and engaged to pay all the expenses for the residence there of himself and his tutor. These and other suggestions were made in a private and confidential letter to Mr. George Cabot of Boston, Senator of the United States, whose kind services he enlisted in the matter.

It was subseqnently thought best that young Lafayette should proceed to New York, and remain in retirement, at the country house of a friend in its vicinity, pursuing his studies with his tutor, until Washington should direct otherwise.

CHAPTER XLI.

Meeting of Congress—Washington's Official Summary of the Events of the Year—Cordial Response of the Senate—Partial Demur of the House—Washington's Position and Feelings with Regard to England, as Shown by Himself—Mr. Adet Presents the Colors of France—The Treaty Returned—Proceedings Thereupon—Thomas Pinckney Resigns as Minister at London—Rufus King Appointed in his Place—Washington's view of the Political Campaign—Jefferson's Fears of an Attempt to sow Dissension between him and Washington—Mr. Monroe Recalled and C. C. Pinckney Appointed in his Stead—Resentful Policy of France.

In his speech at the opening of the session of Congress in December, Washington presented a cheerful summary of the events of the year. "I trust I do not deceive myself," said he, "while I indulge the persuasion, that I have never met you at any period when, more than at present, the situation of our public affairs has afforded just cause for mutual congratulation, and for inviting you to join with me in profound gratitude to the Author of all good, for the numerous and extraordinary blessings we enjoy."

And first he announced that a treaty had been concluded

provisionally, by General Wayne, with the Indians northwest of the Ohio, by which the termination of the long, expensive, and distressing war with those tribes was placed at the option of the United States. "In the adjustment of the terms," said he, "the satisfaction of the Indians was deemed an object worthy no less of the policy than of the liberality of the United States, as the necessary basis of durable tranquillity. This object, it is believed, has been fully attained. The articles agreed upon will immediately be laid before the Senate, for their consideration." *

A letter from the Emperor of Morocco, recognizing a treaty which had been made with his deceased father, insured the continuance of peace with that power.

The terms of a treaty with the Dey and regency of Algiers had been adjusted in a manner to authorize the expectation of a speedy peace in that quarter, and the liberation of a number of American citizens from a long and grievous captivity.

A speedy and satisfactory conclusion was anticipated of a negotiation with the court of Madrid, "which would lay the foundation of lasting harmony with a power whose friendship," said Washington, "we have uniformly and sincerely desired to cherish."

Adverting to the treaty with Great Britain and its conditional ratification, the result on the part of his Britannic Majesty was yet unknown, but when ascertained, would immediately be placed before Congress.

"In regard to internal affairs, every part of the Union gave indications of rapid and various improvement. With burthens so light as scarcely to be perceived; with resources fully adequate to present exigencies; with governments founded on the genuine principles of rational liberty; and with mild and wholesome laws, was it too much to say that our country exhibited a spectacle of national happiness never surpassed, if ever before equalled?"

In regard to the late insurrection: "The misled," observes he, "have abandoned their errors, and pay the respect to our constitution and laws which is due from good citizens to the public authorities. These circumstances have induced me to pardon generally the offenders here referred to, and to extend

* These preliminary articles were confirmed by a definitive treaty concluded on the 7th of August. Wayne received high testimonials of approbation both from Congress and the President, and made a kind of triumphal entry into Philadelphia amid the enthusiastic acclamation of the people.

forgiveness to those who had been adjudged to capital punishment."

After recommending several objects to the attention of both Houses, he concludes by advising temperate discussion and mutual forbearance wherever there was a difference of opinion; advice sage and salutary on all occasions, but particularly called for by the excited temper of the times.

There was, as usual, a cordial answer from the Senate; but, in the present House of Representatives, as in the last one, the opposition were in the majority. In the response reported by a committee, one clause expressing undiminished confidence in the chief magistrate was demurred to; some members affirmed, that, with them, it had been considerably diminished by a late transaction. After a warm altercation, to avoid a direct vote, the response was recommitted, and the clause objected to modified. The following is the form adopted: "In contemplating that spectacle of national happiness which our country exhibits, and of which you, sir, have been pleased to make an interesting summary, permit us to acknowledge and declare the very great share which your zealous and faithful services have contributed to it, and to express the affectionate attachment which we feel for your character."

The feelings and position of Washington with regard to England at this juncture, may be judged from a letter dated December 22d, to Gouverneur Morris, then in London, and who was in occasional communication with Lord Grenville. Washington gives a detail of the various causes of complaint against the British government which were rankling in the minds of the American people, and which Morris was to mention, unofficially, should he converse with Lord Grenville on the subject. "I give you these details," writes he, "as evidences of the impolitic conduct of the British government towards these United States; that it may be seen how difficult it has been for the Executive, under such an accumulation of irritating circumstances, to maintain the ground of neutrality which had been taken; and at a time when the remembrance of the aid we had received from France in the Revolution was fresh in every mind, and while the partisans of that country were continually contrasting the affection of *that* people with the unfriendly disposition of the *British government*. And that, too, while *their own* sufferings, during the war with the latter, had not been forgotten.

"It is well known that peace has been (to borrow a modern phrase) the order of the day with me, since the disturbances in Europe first commenced. My policy has been, and will

continue to be, while I have the honor to remain in the administration, to maintain friendly terms with, but be independent of, all the nations of the earth; to share in the broils of none; to fulfil our own engagements; to supply the wants and be carriers for them all. * * * Nothing short of self-respect, and that justice which is essential to a national character, ought to involve us in war.

* * * * * * *

"By a firm adherence to these principles, and to the neutral policy which has been adopted, I have brought on myself a torrent of abuse in the factious papers of this country, and from the enmity of the discontented of all descriptions. But having no sinister objects in view, I shall not be diverted from my course by these, nor any attempts which are, or shall be, made to withdraw the confidence of my constituents from me. I have nothing to ask; and, discharging my duty, I have nothing to fear from invective. The acts of my administration will appear when I am no more, and the intelligent and candid part of mankind will not condemn my conduct without recurring to them.

The first day of January, being "a day of general joy and congratulation," had been appointed by Washington to receive the colors of France, sent out by the Committee of Safety. On that day they were presented by Mr. Adet, with an address, representing, in glowing language, the position of France, "struggling not only for her own liberty, but for that of the human race. Assimilated to or rather identified with free people by the form of her government, she saw in them only friends and brothers. Long accustomed to regard the American people as her most faithful allies, she sought to draw closer the ties already formed in the fields of America, under the auspices of victory, over the ruins of tyranny."

Washington received the colors with lively sensibility and a brief reply, expressive of the deep solicitude and high admiration produced by the events of the French struggle, and his joy that the interesting revolutionary movements of so many years had issued in the formation of a constitution designed to give permanency to the great object contended for.

In February the treaty with Great Britain, as modified by the advice of the Senate, came back ratified by the king of Great Britain, and on the last of the month a proclamation was issued by the President, declaring it to be the supreme law of the land.

The opposition in the House of Representatives were of-

fended that Washington should issue this proclamation before the sense of that body had been taken on the subject, and denied the power of the President and Senate to complete a treaty without its sanction. They were bent on defeating it by refusing to pass the laws necessary to carry it into effect; and, as a preliminary, passed a resolution requesting the President to lay before the House the instruction to Mr. Jay, and the correspondence and other documents relative to the treaty.

Washington, believing that these papers could not be constitutionally demanded, resolved, he said, from the first moment, and from the fullest conviction of his mind, to *resist the principle*, which was evidently intended to be established by the call of the House; he only deliberated on the manner in which this could be done with the least bad consequences.

After mature deliberation and with the assistance of the heads of departments and the Attorney-General, he prepared and sent in to the House an answer to their request. In this he dwelt upon the necessity of caution and secrecy in foreign negotiations, as one cogent reason for vesting the power of making treaties in the President, with the advice and consent of the Senate, the principle on which that body was formed, confining it to a small number of members.

To admit a right in the House of Representatives to demand and have all the papers respecting a foreign negotiation would, he observed, be to establish a dangerous precedent.

"It did not occur to him," he added, "that the inspection of the papers called for, could be relative to any purpose under the cognizance of the House of Representatives, except that of an impeachment, which the resolution had not expressed. He had no disposition to withhold any information which the duty of his station would permit, or the public good should require to be disclosed; and, in fact, all the papers affecting the negotiation with Great Britain had been laid before the Senate, when the treaty itself had been communicated, for their consideration and advice."

After various further remarks, he concludes: "As, therefore, it is perfectly clear to my understanding that the assent of the House of Representatives is not necessary to the validity of a treaty; as the treaty with Great Britain exhibits itself in all the objects requring legislative provision; and on these, the papers called for can throw no light; and as it is essential to the due administration of the government, that the boundaries fixed by the constitution between the different departments should be observed, a just regard to the constitution

and to the duty of my office, under all the circumstances of this case, forbid a compliance with your request."

A resolution to make provision for carrying the treaty into effect, gave rise to an animated and protracted debate. Meanwhile, the whole country became agitated on the subject; meetings were held throughout the United States, and it soon became apparent that the popular feeling was with the minority in the House of Representatives, who favored the making of the necessary appropriations. The public will prevailed, and, on the last day of April, the resolution was passed, though by a close vote of fifty-one to forty-eight.

For some months past, Mr. Thomas Pinckney had been solicitous to be relieved from his post of Minister Plenipotentiary at London, but the doubtful issue of the above dispute, and the difficulty of finding a fit substitute for him, had caused delay in the matter; for, as Mr. Hamilton observed: "The importance, to our security and commerce, of a good understanding with Great Britain, rendered it very important that a man able, and not disagreeable to that government, should be there." Such a man at length presented in Mr. Rufus King, of New York. He had vindicated the treaty with his pen in part of a series of papers signed Camillus; he had defended it by his manly and brilliant eloquence in the Senate; he was now about to quit his seat in that body. Hamilton, who knew him well, struck off his character admirably in a letter to the President. "Mr. King," writes he, "is a remarkably well-informed man, a very judicious one, a man of address, a man of fortune and economy, whose situation affords just ground of confidence; a man of unimpeachable probity where he is known, a firm friend of the government, a supporter of the measures of the President; a man who cannot but feel that he has strong pretensions to confidence and trust."

Mr. King was nominated to the Senate on the 19th of May, and his nomination was confirmed. On the 1st of June, this session of Congress terminated.

On the 12th of that month Washington, in a letter to Colonel Humphrey, then in Portugal, speaks of the recent political campaign: "The gazettes will give you a pretty good idea of the state of politics and parties in this country, and will show you, at the same time, if Bache's Aurora is among them, in what manner I am attacked for persevering steadily in measures which, to me, appear necessary to preserve us, during the conflicts of belligerent powers, in a state of tranquillity. But these attacks, unjust and unpleasant as they are, will occasion no change in my conduct, nor will they produce

any other effect in my mind than to increase the solicitude which long since has taken fast hold of my heart, to enjoy, in the shades of retirement, the consolation of believing that I have rendered to my country every service to which my abilities were competent—not from pecuniary or ambitious motives, nor from a desire to provide for any men, further than their intrinsic merit entitled them, and surely not with a view of bringing my own relations into office. Malignity, therefore, may dart its shafts, but no earthly power can deprive me of the satisfaction of knowing that I have not, in the whole course of my administration, committed an intentional error."

On the same day (June 12th) Jefferson, writing from his retirement at Monticello, to Mr. Monroe in Paris, showed himself sensitive to the influence of Washington's great popularity in countervailing party schemes. "Congress have risen," writes he. "You will have seen by their proceedings the truth of what I always observed to you, that one man outweighs them all in the influence over the people, who have supported his judgment against their own and that of their representatives. Republicanism must lie on its oars, resign the vessel to its pilot, and themselves to what course he thinks best for them."

In Bache's Aurora of June 9th, an anonymous article had appeared, disclosing queries propounded by Washington, in strict confidence, to the members of the cabinet in 1793, as to the conduct to be observed in reference to England and France. As soon as Jefferson saw this article he wrote to Washington (June 19th), disclaiming his having had any concern in that breach of official trust. "I have formerly mentioned to you," observes he, "that from a very early period of my life, I had laid it down as a rule of conduct never to write a word for the public papers. From this I have never departed in a single instance."

Jefferson further intimates a suspicion that a third party had been endeavoring to sow tares between him and Washington, by representing him (Jefferson) as still engaged in the bustle of politics, and in turbulence and intrigue against the government.

This drew forth a noble reply from Washington. "If I had entertained any suspicions before," writes he, "that the queries, which have been published in Bache's paper, proceeded from you, the assurances you have given me of the contrary, would have removed them; but the truth is, I harbored none.

"As you have mentioned the subject yourself, it would not be frank, candid, or friendly to conceal, that your conduct has

been represented as derogating from that opinion I had conceived you entertained of me; that to your particular friends and connections you have described, and they have denounced me as a person under a dangerous influence; and that, if I would listen more to some other opinions, all would be well. My answer invariably has been, that I had never discovered anything in the conduct of Mr. Jefferson to raise suspicions in my mind of his insincerity; that, if he would retrace my public conduct while he was in the administration, abundant proofs would occur to him, that truth and right decisions were the sole object of my pursnit; that there were as many instances within his own knowledge of my having decided *against* as in *favor* of the opinions of the person evidently alluded to; and moreover, that I was no believer in the infallibility of the politics or measures of any man living. In short, that I was no party man myself, and the first wish of my heart was, if parties did exist, to reconcile them.

"To this I may add, and very truly, that, until within the last year or two, I had no conception that parties would or even could, go the length I have been witness to; nor did I believe until lately, that it was within the bounds of probability, hardly within those of possibility, that, while I was using my utmost exertions to establish a national character of our own, independent, as far as our obligations and justice would permit, of every nation of the earth, and wished, by steering a steady course, to preserve this country from the horrors of a desolating war, I should be accused of being the enemy of one nation, and subject to the influence of another; and, to prove it, that every act of my administration would be tortured, and the grossest and most insidious misrepresentations of them be made, by giving one side only of a subject, and that, too, in such exaggerated and indecent terms as could scarcely be applied to a Nero, a notorious defaulter, or even to a common pickpocket. But enough of this; I have already gone further in the expression of my feelings than I intended."

Shortly after the recess of Congress another change was made in the foreign diplomacy. Mr. Monroe, when sent envoy to France, had been especially instructed to explain the views and conduct of the United States in forming the treaty with England; and had been amply furnished with documents for the purpose. From his own letters, however, it appeared that he had omitted to use them. Whether this rose, from undue attachment to France, from mistaken notions of American interests, or from real dislike to the treaty, the result

was the very evil he had been instructed to prevent. The French government misconceived the views and conduct of the United States, suspected their policy in regard to Great Britain, and when aware that the House of Representatives would execute the treaty made by Jay, became bitter in their resentment. Symptoms of this appeared in the capture of an American merchantman by a French privateer. Under these circumstances it was deemed expedient by Washington and his cabinet, to recall Mr. Monroe, and appoint another American citizen in his stead.

The person chosen was Charles Cotesworth Pinckney of South Carolina, elder brother of the late minister to London. Immediately after this appointment, which took place in July, despatches were received from Mr. Monroe, communicating complaints which had been addressed to him, against the American government by M. De La Croix, French minister of exterior relations, and his reply to the same. His reply, though it failed to change the policy of the French Directory, was deemed able and satisfactory by the Executive. Somewhat later came a letter from Mr. Monroe, written on the 24th, by which it appeared that the long and confidential letter written by Washington on December 22d, and cited in a previous page of this chapter, had, by some chance, got into the hands of the French Directory, and "produced an ill effect."

In a reply to Monroe, dated August 25th, Washington acknowledged the authenticity of the letter, "but I deny," added he, "that there is anything contained in it that the French government could take exception to, unless the expression of an ardent wish, that the United States might remain at peace with all the world, taking no part in the disputes of any part of it, should have produced this effect. I also give it as my opinion, that the sentiments of the mass of citizens of this country were in unison with mine."

And in conclusion, he observes; "My conduct in public and private life, as it relates to the important struggle in which the latter nation [France] is engaged, has been uniform from the commencement of it, and may be summed up in a few words. I have always wished well to the French revolution; that I have always given it as my decided opinion, that no nation had a right to intermeddle in the internal concerns of another; that every one had a right to form and adopt whatever government they liked best to live under themselves; and that, if this country could, consistently with its engagements, maintain a strict neutrality, and thereby preserve

peace, it was bound to do so by motives of policy, interest, and every other consideration, that ought to actuate a people situated as we are, already deeply in debt, and in a convalescent state from the struggle we have been engaged in ourselves.

"On these principles I have steadily and uniformly proceeded, bidding defiance to calumnies calculated to sow the seeds of distrust in the French nation, and to excite their belief of an influence possessed by Great Britain in the councils of this country, than which nothing is more unfounded and injurious." *

Still the resentful policy of the French continued, and, in October, they issued an *arret* ordering the seizure of British property found on board of American vessels, and of provisions bound for England—a direct violation of their treaty with the United States.

CHAPTER XLII.

Washington's Farewell Address—Meets the Two Houses of Congress for the Last Time—His Speech—Replies of the Senate and House—Mr. Giles—Andrew Jackson—Offensive Publication of the French Minister—John Adams Declared President—Washington's Letter to Knox on the Eve of his Retirement—The Spurious Letters—His Farewell Dinner—John Adams takes the Oath of Office—Greetings of Washington at the Close of the Ceremony.

THE period for the presidential election was drawing near, and great anxiety began to be felt that Washington would consent to stand for a third term. No one, it was agreed, had greater claim to the enjoyment of retirement, in consideration of public services rendered; but it was thought the affairs of the country would be in a very precarious condition should he retire before the wars of Europe were brought to a close.

Washington, however, had made up his mind irrevocably on the subject, and resolved to announce, in a farewell address, his intention of retiring. Such an instrument, it will be recollected, had been prepared for him from his own notes, by Mr. Madison, when he had thought of retiring at the end of his first term. As he was no longer in confidential intimacy

* For the entire letter see Washington's Writings, xi. 164.

with Mr. Madison, he turned to Mr. Hamilton as his adviser and coadjutor, and appears to have consulted him on the subject early in the present year, for, in a letter dated New York, May 10th, Hamilton writes: "When last in Philadelphia, you mentioned to me your wish that I should *re-dress* a certain paper which you had prepared. As it is important that a thing of this kind should be done with great care and much at leisure, touched and retouched, I submit a wish that, as soon as you have given it the body you mean to have, it may be sent to me."

The paper was accordingly sent on the 15th of May, in its rough state, altered in one part since Hamilton had seen it. "If you should think it best to throw the *whole* into a different form," writes Washington, "let me request, notwithstanding, that my draft may be returned to me (along with ours) with such amendments and corrections as to render it as perfect as the formation is susceptible of; curtailed if too verbose, and relieved of all tautology not necessary to enforce the ideas in the original or quoted part. My wish is, that the whole may appear in a plain style; and be handed to the public in an honest unaffected, simple garb."

We forbear to go into the vexed question concerning this address; how much of it is founded on Washington's original "notes and heads of topics;" how much was elaborated by Madison, and how much is due to Hamilton's recasting and revision. The whole came under the supervision of Washington; and the instrument, as submitted to the press, was in his handwriting, with many ultimate corrections and alterations. Washington had no pride of authorship; his object always was to effect the purpose in hand, and for that he occasionally invoked assistance, to ensure a plain and clear exposition of his thoughts and intentions. The address certainly breathes his spirit throughout, is in perfect accordance with his words and actions, and "in an honest, unaffected, simple garb," embodies the system of policy on which he had acted throughout his administration. It was published in September, in a Philadelphia paper called the Daily Advertiser.*

The publication of the address produced a great sensation. Several of the State legislatures ordered it to be put on their journals. "The President's declining to be again elected," writes the elder Wolcott, "constitutes a most important epoch in our national affairs. The country meet the event with reluctance, but they do not feel that they can make any claim

* The reader will find the entire Address in the Appendix to this volume.

for the further services of a man who has conducted their armies through a successful war; has so largely contributed to establish a national government; has so long presided over our councils and directed the public administration, and in the most advantageous manner settled all national differences, and who can leave the administration where nothing but our folly and internal discord can render the country otherwise than happy."

The address acted as a notice, to hush the acrimonious abuse of him which the opposition was pouring forth under the idea that he would be a candidate for a renomination. "It will serve as a signal, like the dropping of a hat, for the party racers to start," writes Fisher Ames, "and I expect a great deal of noise, whipping and spurring."

Congress formed a quorum on the 5th day of December, the first day of the session which succeeded the publication of the Farewell Address. On the 7th, Washington met the two Houses of Congress for the last time.

In his speech he recommended an institution for the improvment of agriculture, a military academy, a national university, and a gradual increase of the navy. The disputes with France were made the subject of the following remarks: "While in our external relations some serious inconveniences and embarrassments have been overcome and others lessened, it is with much pain and deep regret I mention that circumstances of a very unwelcome nature have lately occurred. Our trade has suffered and is suffering extensive injuries in the West Indies from the cruisers and agents of the French Republic; and communications have been received from its minister here, which indicate the danger of a further disturbance of our commerce by its authority; and which are in other respects far from agreeable. It has been my constant, sincere, and earnest wish, in conformity with that of our nation, to maintain cordial harmony and a perfectly friendly understanding with that Republic. This wish remains unabated; and I shall persevere in the endeavor to fulfil it to the utmost extent of what shall be consistent with a just and indispensable regard to the rights and honor of our country; nor will I easily cease to cherish the expectation, that a spirit of justice, candor and friendship, on the part of the Republic, will eventually ensure success.

"In pursuing this course, however, I cannot forget what is due to the character of our government and nation; or to a full and entire confidence in the good sense, patriotism, self-respect, and fortitude of my countrymen."

In concluding his address he observes, "The situation in which I now stand for the last time in the midst of the representatives of the people of the United States, naturally recalls the period when the administration of the present form of government commenced, and I cannot omit the occasion to congratulate you and my country on the success of the experiment, nor to repeat my fervent supplications to the Supreme Ruler of the universe and Sovereign Arbiter of nations, that his providential care may be still extended to the United States; that the virtue and happiness of the people may be preserved, and that the government which they have instituted for the protection of their liberties may be perpetual."

The Senate, in their reply to the address, after concurring in its views of the national prosperity, as resulting from the excellence of the constitutional system and the wisdom of the legislative provisions, added, that they would be deficient in gratitude and justice did they not attribute a great portion of these advantages to the virtue, firmness and talents of his administration, conspicuously displayed in the most trying times, and on the most critical occasions.

Recalling his arduous services, civil and military, as well during the struggles of the revolution as in the convulsive period of a later date, their warmest affections and anxious regards would accompany him in his approaching retirement.

"The most effectual consolation that can offer for the loss we are about to sustain, arises from the animating reflection, that the influence of your example will extend to your successors, and the United States thus continue to enjoy an able, upright, and energetic administration."

The reply of the House, after premising attention to the various subjects recommended to their consideration in the address, concluded by a warm expression of gratitude and admiration, inspired by the virtues and the services of the President, by his wisdom, firmness, moderation, and magnanimity; and testifying to the deep regret with which they contemplated his intended retirement from office.

"May you long enjoy that liberty which is so dear to you, and to which your name will ever be so dear," added they. "May your own virtue and a nation's prayers obtain the happiest sunshine for the decline of your days, and the choicest of future blessings. For our country's sake, and for the sake of republican liberty, it is our earnest wish that your example may be the guide of your successors; and thus, after being the ornament and safeguard of the present age, become the patrimony of our descendants."

Objections, however, were made to some parts of the reply by Mr. Giles, of Virginia. He was for expunging such parts as eulogized the present administration, spoke of the wisdom and firmness of Washington, and regretted his retiring from office. He disapproved, he said, of the measures of the administration with respect to foreign relations: he believed its want of wisdom and firmness had conducted the nation to a crisis-threatening greater calamity than any that had before occurred. He did not regret the President's retiring from office. He believed the government of the United States was founded on the broad basis of the people, that they were competent to their own government, and the remaining of no man in office was necessary to the success of that government. The people would truly be in a calamitous situation, if one man were essential to the existence of the government. He was convinced that the United States produces a thousand citizens capable of filling the presidential chair, and he would trust to the discernment of the people for a proper choice. Though the voice of all America should declare the President's retiring as a calamity, he could not join in the declaration, because he did not conceive it a misfortune. He hoped the President would be happy in his retirement, and he hoped he would retire.*

Twelve members voted for expunging those parts of the reply to which Mr. Giles had objected. Among the names of these members we find that of Andrew Jackson, a young man, twenty-nine years of age, as yet unknown to fame, and who had recently taken his seat as delegate from the newly admitted State of Tennessee. The vote in favor of the whole reply, however, was overwhelming.

The reverence and affection expressed for him in both Houses of Congress, and their regret at his intended retirement, were in unison with testimonials from various State legislatures and other public bodies, which were continually arriving since the publication of his Farewell Address.

During the actual session of Congress, Washington endeavored to prevent the misunderstandings, which were in danger of being augmented between the United States and the French Government. In the preceding month of November, Mr. Adet, the French minister, had addressed a letter to the Secretary of State, recapitulating the complaints against the government of the United States made by his predecessors and himself, denouncing the *insidious* proclamation of neu-

* See Mr. Giles' speech, as reported in the Aurora newspaper.

trality and the wrongs growing out of it, and using language calculated to inflame the partisans of France: a copy of which letter had been sent to the press for publication. One of the immediate objects he had in view in timing the publication, was supposed by Washington to be to produce an effect on the presidential election; his ultimate object, to establish such an influence in the country as to sway the government and control its measures. Early in January, 1797, therefore, Washington requested Mr. Pickering, the Secretary of State, to address a letter to Mr. Pinckney, United States minister to France, stating all the complaints alleged by the French minister against the government, examining and reviewing the same, and accompanying the statement with a collection of letters and papers relating to the transactions therein adverted to.

"From a desire," writes he, "that the statements be full, fair, calm, and argumentative, without asperity or anything more irritating in the comments that the narration of facts, which expose unfounded charges and assertions, does itself produce, I have wished that the letter to Mr. Pinckney may be revised over and over again. Much depends upon it, as it relates to ourselves and in the eye of the world, whatever may be the effect, as it respects the governing powers of France."

The letter to Mr. Pinckney, with its accompanying documents, was laid before Congress on the 19th of January, (1797,) to be transmitted to that minister. "The immediate object of his mission," says Washington in a special message, "was to make that government such explanations of the principles and conduct of our own, as by manifesting our good faith, might remove all jealousy and discontent, and maintain that harmony and good understanting with the French Republic, which it has been my constant solicitude to preserve. A government which required only a knowledge of the *truth* to justify its measures, could but be anxious to have this fully and frankly displayed."

In the month of February the votes taken at the recent election were opened and counted in Congress; when Mr. Adams, having the highest number, was declared President, and Mr. Jefferson, having the next number, Vice President; their term of four years to commence on the 4th of March next ensuing.

Washington now began to count the days and hours that intervened between him and his retirement. On the day preceding it, he writes to his old fellow-soldier and political

coadjutor, Henry Knox: "To the wearied traveller, who sees a resting-place, and is bending his body to lean thereon, I now compare myself; but to be suffered to do this in peace, is too much to be endured by some. To misrepresent my motives, to reprobate my politics, and to weaken the confidence which has been reposed in my administration, are objects which cannot be relinquished by those who will be satisfied with nothing short of a change in our political system. The consolation, however, which results from conscious rectitude, and the approving voice of my country, unequivocally expressed by its representatives, deprive their sting of its poison, and place in the same point of view, both the weakness and malignity of their efforts.

"Although the prospect of retirement is most grateful to my soul, and I have not a wish to mix again in the great world, or to partake in its politics, yet I am not without my regrets at parting with (perhaps never more to meet) the few intimates whom I love, and among these, be assured, you are one. * * * The remainder of my life, which in the course of nature cannot be long, will be occupied in rural amusements; and though I shall seclude myself as much as possible from the noisy and bustling world, none would, more than myself, be regaled by the company of those I esteem, at Mount Vernon; more than twenty miles from which, after I arrive there, it is not likely that I shall ever be."

On the morning of the 3d of March, the last day of his official career, Washington addressed a letter to the Secretary of State on the subject of the spurious letters, heretofore mentioned,* first published by the British in 1776, and subsequently republished during his administration, by some of his political enemies. He had suffered every attack on his executive conduct to pass unnoticed while he remained in public life, but conceived it a justice due to his character solemnly to pronounce those letters a base forgery, and he desired that the present letter might be "deposited in the office of the Department of State, as a testimony to the truth to the present generation and to posterity."

On the same day he gave a kind of farewell dinner to the foreign ministers and their wives, Mr. and Mrs. Adams, Mr. Jefferson, and other conspicuous personages of both sexes. "During the dinner much hilarity prevailed," says Bishop White, who was present. When the cloth was removed Washington filled his glass: "Ladies and gentlemen," said he,

* Life of Washington, l. iii., 8vo. p. 360, 361.

"this is the last time I shall drink your health as a public man; I do it with sincerity, wishing you all possible happiness."

The gayety of the company was checked in an instant; all felt the importance of this leave-taking; Mrs. Liston, the wife of the British minister, was so much affected that tears streamed down her cheeks.

On the 4th of March, an immense crowd had gathered about Congress Hall. At eleven o'clock, Mr. Jefferson took the oath as Vice President in the presence of the Senate; and proceeded with that body to the Chamber of the House of Representatives, which was densely crowded, many ladies occupying chairs ceded to them by members.

After a time, Washington entered amidst enthusiastic cheers and acclamations, and the waving of handkerchiefs. Mr. Adams soon followed and was likewise well received, but not with like enthusiasm. Having taken the oath of office, Mr. Adams, in his inaugural address, spoke of his predecessor as one "who, by a long course of great actions, regulated by prudence, justice, temperance, and fortitude, had merited the gratitude of his fellow-citizens, commanded the highest praises of foreign nations, and secured immortal glory with posterity.

At the close of the ceremony, as Washington moved toward the door to retire, there was a rush from the gallery to the corridor that threatened the loss of life or limb, so eager were the throng to catch a last look of one who had so long been the object of public veneration. When Washington was in the street he waved his hat in return for the cheers of the multitude, his countenance radiant with benignity, his gray hairs streaming in the wind. The crowd followed him to his door; there, turning round, his countenance assumed a grave and almost melancholy expression, his eyes were bathed in tears, his emotions were too great for utterance, and only by gestures could he indicate his thanks and convey his farewell blessing.†

In the evening a splendid banquet was given to him by the principal inhabitants of Philadelphia in the Amphitheatre which was decorated with emblematical paintings. All the heads of departments, the foreign ministers, several officers of the late army, and various persons of note, were present. Among the paintings, one represented the home of his heart, the home to which he was about to hasten—Mount Vernon.

† From personal recollections of William A. Duer, late President of Columbia College.

CHAPTER XLIII.

Washington at Mount Vernon—Influx of Strange Faces—Lawrence Lewis—Miss Nelly Custis—Washington's Counsel in Love Matters—A Romantic Episode—Return of George Washington Lafayette.

His official career being terminated, Washington set off for Mount Vernon accompanied by Mrs. Washington, her grand-daughter Miss Nelly Custis, and George Washington Lafayette, with his preceptors.

Of the enthusiastic devotion manifested towards him wherever he passed, he takes the following brief and characteristic notice: "The attentions we met with on our journey were very flattering, and to some, whose minds are differently formed from mine, would have been highly relished; but I avoided, in every instance where I had any previous notice of the intention, and could, by earnest entreaties, prevail, all parade and escorts."

He is at length at Mount Vernon, that haven of repose to which he had so often turned a wishful eye, throughout his agitated and anxious life, and where he trusted to pass quietly and serenely the remainder of his days. He finds himself, however, "in the situation of a new beginner; almost everything about him required considerable repairs, and a house is immediately to be built for the reception and safe keeping of his military, civil, and private papers." "In a word," writes he, "I am already surrounded by joiners, masons, and painters, and such is my anxiety to be out of their hands, that I have scarcely a room to put a friend into, or to sit in myself, without the music of hammers and the odoriferous scent of paint."

Still he is at Mount Vernon, and as the spring opens the rural beauties of the country exert their sweetening influence. In a letter to his friend Oliver Wolcott, who, as Secretary of the Treasury, was still acting on "the great theatre," he adverts but briefly to public affairs. "For myself," adds he, exultingly, "having turned aside from the broad walks of political into the narrow paths of private life, I shall leave it with those whose duty it is to consider subjects of this sort, and, as every good citizen ought to do, conform to whatsoever the ruling powers shall decide. To make and sell a little flour annually, to repair houses going fast to ruin, to build

one for the security of my papers of a public nature, and to amuse myself in agricultural and rural pursuits, will constitute employment for the few years I have to remain on this terrestrial globe. If, also, I could now and then meet the friends I esteem, it would fill the measure and add zest to my enjoyments; but, if ever this happens, it must be under my own vine and fig-tree, as I do not think it probable that I shall go beyond twenty miles from them."

And again, to another friend he indulges in pleasant anticipations: "Retired from noise myself and the responsibility attached to public employment, my hours will glide smoothly on. My best wishes, however, for the prosperity of our country will always have the first place in my thoughts; while to repair buildings and to cultivate my farms, which require close attention, will occupy the few years, perhaps days, I may be a sojourner here, as I am now in the sixty-fifth year of my peregrination through life." *

A letter to his friend James McHenry, Secretary of War, furnishes a picture of his every-day life. "I am indebted to you," writes he, "for several unacknowledged letters; but never mind that; go on as if you had answers. You are at the source of information, and can find many things to relate, while I have nothing to say that could either inform or amuse a Secretary of War in Philadelphia. I might tell him that I begin my diurnal course with the sun; that, if my hirelings are not in their places at that time, I send them messages of sorrow for their indisposition; that, having put these wheels in motion, I examine the state of things further; that the more they are probed the deeper I find the wounds which my buildings have sustained, by an absence and neglect of eight years; that, by the time I have accomplished these matters, breakfast (a little after seven o'clock, about the time I presume you are taking leave of Mrs. McHenry) is ready; that, this being over, I mount my horse and ride round my farms, which employs me until it is time to dress for dinner, at which I rarely miss seeing strange faces, come, as they say, out of respect to me. Pray, would not the word curiosity answer as well? And how different this from having a few social friends at a cheerful board! The usual time of sitting at table, a walk, and tea bring me within the dawn of candle light; previous to which, if not prevented by company, I resolve that, as soon as the glimmering taper supplies the place of the great luminary, I will retire to my writing table

* Letter to Wm. Heath. Writings. xi. 199.

and acknowledge the letters I have received; but when the lights are brought I feel tired and disinclined to engage in this work, conceiving that the next night will do as well. The next night comes, and with it the same cause for postponement, and so on. Having given you the history of a day, it will serve for a year, and, I am persuaded, you will not require a second edition of it. But it may strike you that in this detail no mention is made of any portion of time allotted for reading. The remark would be just, for I have not looked into a book since I came home; nor shall I be able to do it until I have discharged my workmen; probably not before the nights grow longer, when possibly I may be looking in Doomsday Book."

In his solitary rides about Mount Vernon and its woodlands, fond and melancholy thoughts would occasionally sadden the landscape as his mind reverted to past times and early associates. In a letter to Mrs. S. Fairfax, now in England, he writes; "It is a matter of sore regret when I cast my eyes toward Belvoir, which I often do, to reflect that the former inhabitants of it, with whom we lived in such harmony and friendship, no longer reside there, and the ruins only can be viewed as the mementoes of former pleasures."

The influx of strange faces alluded to in the letter to Mr. McHenry, soon became overwhelming, and Washington felt the necessity of having some one at hand to relieve him from a part of the self-imposed duties of Virginia hospitality.

With this view he bethought him of his nephew, Lawrence Lewis, the same who had gained favor with him by volunteering in the Western expedition, and accompanying General Knox as aide-de-camp. He accordingly addressed a letter to him in which he writes: "Whenever it is convenient to you to make this place your home, I shall be glad to see you. * * * As both your aunts and I are in the decline of life, and regular in our habits, especially in our hours of rising and going to bed, I require some person (fit and proper) to ease me of the trouble of entertaining company, particularly of nights, as it is my inclination to retire, (and unless prevented by very particular company, I always do retire,) either to bed or to my study soon after candle light. In taking those duties (which hospitality obliges one to bestow on company) off my hands, it would render me a very acceptable service." *

In consequence of this invitation, Lawrence thenceforward

* MS. Letter.

became an occasional inmate at Mount Vernon. The place at this time possessed attractions for gay as well as grave, and was often enlivened by young company. One great attraction was Miss Nelly Custis, Mrs. Washington's grand-daughter, who, with her brother George W. P. Custis, had been adopted by the General at their father's death, when they were quite children, and brought up by him with the most affectionate care. He was fond of children, especially girls; as to boys, with all his spirit of command, he found them at times somewhat ungovernable. I can govern men, would he say, but I cannot govern boys. Miss Nelly had grown up under the special eye of her grandmother, to whom she was devotedly attached, and who was particular in enforcing her observance of all her lessons, as well as instructing her in the arts of housekeeping. She was a great favorite with the General; whom, as we have before observed, she delighted with her gay whims and sprightly sallies, often overcoming his habitual gravity, and surprising him into a hearty laugh.

She was now maturing into a lovely and attractive woman, and the attention she received began to awaken some solicitude in the General's mind. This is evinced in a half-sportive letter of advice written to her during a temporary absence from Mount Vernon, when she was about to make her first appearance at a ball at Georgetown. It is curious as a specimen of Washington's counsel in love matters. It would appear that Miss Nelly, to allay his solicitude, had already, in her correspondence, professed "a perfect apathy toward the youth of the present day, and a determination never to give herself a moment's uneasiness on account of any of them." Washington doubted the firmness and constancy of her resolves. "Men and women," writes he, "feel the same inclination towards each other *now* that they always have done, and which they will continue to do, until there is a new order of things; and you, as others have done, may find that the passions of your sex are easier raised than allayed. Do not, therefore, boast to soon, nor too strongly of your insensibility. * * * Love is said to be an involuntary passion, and it is, therefore contended that it cannot be resisted. This is true in part only, for like all things else, when nourished and supplied plentifully with aliment, it is rapid in its progress; but let these be withdrawn, and it may be stifled in its birth, or much stinted in its growth. * * * Although we cannot avoid *first* impressions, we may assuredly place them under guard. * * * When the fire is beginning to kindle and your heart growing warm, propound these questions to it. Who is this

invader? Have I a competent knowledge of him? Is he a man of good character? A man of sense? For, be assured, a sensible woman can never be happy with a fool. What has been his walk in life? * * * Is his fortune sufficient to maintain me in the manner I have been accustomed to live, and as my sisters do live? And is he one to whom my friends can have no reasonable objection? If all these interrogatories can be satisfactorily answered, there will remain but one more to be asked; that, however, is an important one. Have I sufficient ground to conclude that his affections are engaged by me? Without this the heart of sensibility will struggle against a passion that is not reciprocated." *

The sage counsels of Washington, and the susceptible feelings of Miss Nelly, were soon brought to the test by the residence of Lawrence Lewis at Mount Vernon. A strong attachment for her grew up on his part, or perhaps already existed, and was strengthened by daily intercourse. It was favorably viewed by his uncle. Whether it was fully reciprocated was uncertain. A formidable rival to Lewis appeared in the person of young Carroll of Carrollton, who had just returned from Europe, adorned with the graces of foreign travel, and whose suit was countenanced by Mrs. Washington. These were among the poetic days of Mount Vernon, when its halls echoed to the tread of lovers. They were halcyon days with Miss Nelly, as she herself declared, in after years, to a lady, from whom we have the story: "I was young and romantic then," said she, "and fond of wandering alone by moonlight in the woods of Mount Vernon. Grandmamma thought it wrong and unsafe, and scolded and coaxed me into a promise that I would not wander in the woods again *unaccompanied.* But I was missing one evening, and was brought home from the interdicted woods to the drawing-room, where the General was walking up and down with his hands behind him, as was his wont. Grandmamma, seated in her great arm-chair, opened a severe reproof."

Poor Miss Nelly was reminded of her promise, and taxed with her delinquency. She knew that she had done wrong—admitted her fault, and essayed no excuse; but, when there was a slight pause, moved to retire from the room. She was just shutting the door when she overheard the General attempting, in a low voice, to intercede in her behalf. "My dear," observed he, "I would say more—perhaps she was not alone."

* MS. Letter.

His intercession stopped Miss Nelly in her retreat. She reopened the door and advanced up to the General with a firm step. "Sir," said she, "you brought me up to speak the truth, and when I told Grandmamma I was alone, I hope you believed *I was alone.*"

The General made one of his most magnanimous bows. "My child," replied he, "I beg your pardon."

We will anticipate dates, and observe that the romantic episode of Miss Nelly Custis terminated to the General's satisfaction; she became the happy wife of Lawrence Lewis, as will be recorded in a future page.

Early in the autumn, Washington had been relieved from his constant solicitude about the fortunes of Lafayette. Letters received by George W. Lafayette from friends in Hamburg, informed the youth that his father and family had been liberated from Olmutz and were on their way to Paris, with the intention of embarking for America. George was disposed to sail for France immediately, eager to embrace his parents and sisters in the first moments of their release. Washington urged him to defer his departure until he should receive letters from the prisoners themselves, lest they should cross the ocean in different directions at the same time, and pass each other, which would be a great shock to both parties. George however, was not to be persuaded, and "I could not withhold my assent," writes Washington, "to the gratification of his wishes, to fly to the arms of those whom he holds most dear."

George and his tutor, Mr. Frestel, sailed from New York on the 26th of October. Washington writes from Mount Vernon to Lafayette: "This letter, I hope and expect, will be presented to you by your son, who is highly deserving of such parents as you and your amiable lady.

"He can relate, much better than I can describe, my participation in your sufferings, my solicitude for your relief, the measures I adopted, though ineffectual, to facilitate your liberation from an unjust and cruel imprisonment, and the joy I experienced at the news of its accomplishment. I shall hasten, therefore, to congratulate you, and be assured that no one can do it with more cordiality, with more sincerity, or with greater affection on the restoration of that liberty which every act of your life entitles you to the enjoyment of; and I hope I may add, to the uninterrupted possession of your estates, and the confidence of your country."

The account which George W. Lafayette had received of the liberation of the prisoners of Olmutz was premature. It

did not take place until the 19th of September, nor was it until in the following month of February that the happy meeting took place between George and his family, whom he found residing in the chateau of a relative in Holstein.

CHAPTER XLIV.

Parting Address of the French Directory to Mr. Monroe—The new American Minister Ordered to Leave the Republic—Congress Convened—Measures of Defence Recommended—Washington's Concern—Appointment of Three Envoys Extraordinary—Doubts their Success—Hears of an Old Companion in Arms—The Three Ministers and Talleyrand—Their Degrading Treatment—Threatened War with France—Washington Appointed Commander-in-chief—Arranges for Three Major Generals—Knox Aggrieved.

WASHINGTON had been but a few months at Mount Vernon, when he received intelligence that his successor in office had issued a proclamation for a special session of Congress. He was not long in doubt as to its object. The French government had declared, on the recall of Mr. Monroe, that it would not receive any new minister plenipotentiary from the United States until that power should have redressed the grievances of which the republic had complained. When Mr. Monroe had his audience of leave, Mr. Barras, the president of the Directory, addressed him in terms complimentary to himself, but insulting to his country. "The French Republic hopes," said he, "that the successors of Columbus, of Raleigh, and of Penn, ever proud of their liberty, will never forget that they owe it to France. * * * In their wisdom, they will weigh the magnanimous benevolence of the French people with the artful caresses of perfidious designers, who meditate to draw them back to their ancient slavery. Assure, Mr. Minister, the good American people that, like them, we adore liberty; that they will always have our esteem, and that they will find in the French people the republican generosity which knows how to accord peace, as it knows how to make its sovereignty respected.

"As to you, Mr. Minister Plenipotentiary, you have fought for the principles, you have known the true interests of your country. Depart with our regrets. We give up, in you, a representative of America, and we retain the remembrance of the citizen whose personal qualities honor that title"

A few days afterwards, when Mr. Charles Cotesworth Pinckney presented himself as successor to Mr. Monroe, the Directory refused to receive him, and followed up the indignity by ordering him to leave the territories of the republic. Its next step was to declare applicable to American ships the rules in regard to neutrals, contained in the treaty which Washington had signed with England.

It was in view of these facts and of the captures of American vessels by French cruisers, that President Adams had issued a proclamation to convene Congress on the 15th of May. In his opening speech, he adverted especially to what had fallen from Mr. Barras in Monroe's audience of leave. "The speech of the President," said he, "discloses sentiments more alarming than the refusal of a minister, because more dangerous to our independence and union; and, at the same time, studiously marked with indignities towards the government of the United States. It evinces a disposition to separate the people from their government; to persuade them that they have different affections, principles, and interests from those of their fellow-citizens, whom they themselves have chosen to manage their common concerns, and thus to produce divisions fatal to our peace. Such attempts ought to be repelled with a decision which shall convince France and the world, that we are not a degraded people, humiliated under a colonial spirit of fear, and sense of inferiority, fitted to be the miserable instrument of foreign influence, and regardless of national honor, character, and interest."

Still he announced his intention to institute a fresh attempt by negotiation, to effect an amicable adjustment of differences, on terms compatible with the rights, duties, interests, and honor of the nation, but in the mean time he recommended to Congress to provide effectual measures of defence.

Though personally retired from public life, Washington was too sincere a patriot to be indifferent to public affairs, and felt acutely the unfriendly acts of the French Government, so repugnant to our rights and dignity. "The President's speech," writes he, "will, I conceive, draw forth, mediately or immediately an expression of the public mind; and as it is the right of the people that this should be carried into effect, their sentiments ought to be unequivocally known, that the principles on which the government has acted, and, which, from the President's speech, are likely to be continued, may either be changed, or the opposition that is endeavoring to embarrass every measure of the executive, may meet effectual discountenance. Things cannot and ought not to remain any

longer in their present disagreeable state. Nor, should the idea that the government and the people have different views, be suffered any longer to prevail at home or abroad; for it is not only injurious to us, but disgraceful also, that a government constituted as ours is, should be administered contrary to their interest, if the fact be so." *

In pursuance of the policy announced by Mr. Adams, three envoys extraordinary were appointed to the French republic, viz: Charles Cotesworth Pinckney, John Marshall, and Elbridge Gerry; the two former federalists, the latter a democrat. The object of their mission, according to the President, was "to dissipate umbrages, remove prejudices, rectify errors, and adjust all differences by a treaty between the two powers."

Washington doubted an adjustment of the differences. "Candor," said he, "is not a more conspicuous trait in the character of governments than it is of individuals. It is hardly to be expected, then, that the Directory of France will acknowledge its errors and tread back its steps immediately. This would announce at once, that there has been precipitancy and injustice in the measures they have pursued; or that they were incapable of judging, and had been deceived by false appearances."

About this time he received a pamphlet on the "Military and Political Situation of France." It was sent to him by the author, General Dumas, who, in the time of our revolution, had been an officer in the army of the Count de Rochambeau. "Your Excellency," writes Dumas, "will observe in it (the pamphlet) the effect of your lessons." Then speaking of his old military chief: "General Rochambeau," adds he, "is still at his country seat near Vendome. He enjoys there tolerably good health considering his great age, and reckons, as well as his military family, amongst his most dear and glorious remembrances, that of the time we had the honor to serve under your command."

Some time had elapsed since Washington had heard of his old companion in arms, who had experienced some of the melodramatic vicissitudes of the French revolution. After the arrest of the king he had taken anew the oath of the constitution, and commanded the army of the north, having again received the baton of field-marshal. Thwarted in his plans by the minister of war, he had resigned and retired to his estate near Vendome; but, during the time of terror had been arrested, conducted to Paris, thrown into the conciergerie,

* Letter to Thomas Pinckney. Writings, xi. 202.

and condemned to death. When the car came to convey a number of the victims to the guillotine, he was about to mount it, but the executioner seeing it full, thrust him back. "Stand back, old marshal," cried he, roughly, "your turn will come by and by." (Retire toi, vieux maréchal, ton tour viendra plus tard.) A sudden change in political affairs saved his life, and enabled him to return to his home near Vendome, where he now resided."

In a reply to Dumas, which Washington forwarded by the minister plenipotentiary about to depart for France, he sent his cordial remembrances to de Rochambeau.*

The three ministers met in Paris on the 4th of October, (1797,) but were approached by Talleyrand and his agents in a manner which demonstrated that the avenue to justice could only be opened by gold. Their official report† reveals the whole of this dishonorable intrigue. It states that Mr. Pinckney received a visit from Mr. Bellarni, the secret agent of Mr. Talleyrand, who assured him that Citizen Tallyrand had the highest esteem for America and the citizens of the United States, and was most anxious for the reconciliation with France. With that view some of the most offensive passages in the speech of President Adams (in May 1797) must be expunged, and a douceur of two hundred and fifty thousand dollars put at the disposal of Mr. Talleyrand for the use of the Directory, and a large loan made by America to France.

On the 20th of October, the same subject was resumed in the apartments of the plenipotentiary, and on this occasion, beside the secret agent, an intimate friend of Talleyrand was present. The expunging of the passages in the President's speech was again insisted on, and it was added that, after that, money was the principal object. "We must have money —a great deal of money!" were his words.

At a third conference, October 21st, the sum was fixed at 32,000,000 francs (6,400,000 dollars), as a loan secured on the *Dutch contributions*, and 250,000 dollars in the form of a *douceur* to the Directory.

At a subsequent meeting, October 27th, the same secret

* The worthy de Rochambeau survived the storms of the Revolution. In 1803 he was presented to Napoleon, who, pointing to Berthier and other generals who had once served under his orders, said: "Marshal, behold your scholars." "The scholars have surpassed their master," replied the modest veteran.

In the following year he received the cross of grand officer of the legion of honor, and a marshal's pension. He died full of years and honors, in 1807.

† American State Papers vols. iii. and iv.

agent said, "Gentlemen, you mistake the point, *you say nothing of the money you are to give—you make no offer of money—on that point you are not explicit.* "We are explicit enough," replied the American envoys. "We will not give you one farthing; and before coming here, we should have thought such an offer as you now propose, would have been regarded as a mortal insult."

On this indignant reply, the wily agent intimated that if they would only pay, by way of fees, just as they would to a lawyer, who should plead their cause, the sum required for the private use of the Directory, they might remain at Paris until they should receive further orders from America as to the loan required for government.*

Being inaccessible to any such disgraceful and degrading propositions, the envoys remained several months in Paris unaccredited, and finally returned at separate times, without an official discussion of the object of their mission.†

During the residence of the envoys in Paris, the Directory, believing the *people* of the United States would not sustain their government in a war against France, proceeded to enact a law subjecting to capture and condemnation neutral vessels and their cargoes, if any portion of the latter was of British fabric or produce, although the entire property might belong to neutrals. As the United States were at the time the great neutral carriers of the world, this iniquitous decree struck at a vital point in their maritime power.‡

When this act and the degrading treatment of the American envoys became known, the spirit of the nation was aroused, and war with France seemed inevitable.

The crisis was at once brought to Washington's own door. "You ought to be aware," writes Hamilton to him, May 19th, "that in the event of an open rupture with France, the public voice will again call you to command the armies of your country; and though all who are attached to you will, from attachment as well as public considerations, deplore an occasion which should once more tear you from that repose to which you have so good a right, yet it is the opinion of all those with whom I converse, that you will be compelled to make the sacrifice. All your past labors may demand, to give them efficacy, this farther, this very great sacrifice."

* See Life of Talleyrand, by the Rev. Charles K. McHarg, pp. 161, 162.

† Marshall left France April 16th, 1798; Gerry on the 26th of July. Pinckney, detained by the illness of his daughter, did not arrive in the United States until early in October.

‡ McHarg's Life of Talleyrand, 160.

The government was resolved upon vigorous measures, Congress, on the 28th of May, authorized Mr. Adams to enlist ten thousand men as a provisional army, to be called by him into actual service, in case of hostilities.

Adams was perplexed by the belligerent duties thus suddenly devolved upon him. How should he proceed in forming an army? Should he call on all the old generals who had figured in the revolution, or appoint a young set? Military tactics were changed, and a new kind of enemy was to be met. "If the French come here," said he, "we will have to march with a quick step and attack, for in that way only they are said to be vulnerable."

These and other questions he propounded to Washington by letter, on the 22d of June. "I must tax you sometimes for advice," writes he. "We must have your name, if you will in any case permit us to use it. There will be more efficacy in it than in many an army."

And McHenry, the Secretary of War, writes, about the same time: "You see how the storm thickens, and that our vessel will soon require its ancient pilot. Will you—may we flatter ourselves, that, in a crisis so awful and important, you will—accept the command of all our armies? I hope you will, because you alone can unite all hearts and hands, if it is possible that they can be united."

In a reply to the President's letter, Washington writes, on the 4th of July: "At the epoch of my retirement, an invasion of these States by any European power, or even the probability of such an event happening in my days, was so far from being contemplated by me, that I had no conception that that or any other occurrence would arise in so short a period, which could turn my eyes from the shade of Mount Vernon. * * * In case of *actual invasion*, by a formidable force, I certainly should not intrench myself under the cover of age and retirement, if my services should be required by my country to assist in repelling it."

And in his reply of the same date, to the Secretary of War, he writes: "I see, as you do, that clouds are gathering, and that a storm may ensue; and I find, too, from a variety of hints, that my quiet, under these circumstances, does not promise to be of long continuance.

* * * * * * *

"As my whole life has been dedicated to my country in one shape or another, for the poor remains of it, it is not an object to contend for ease and quiet, when all that is valuable is at stake, further than to be satisfied that the sacrifice I should make of these, is acceptable and desired by my country."

Before these letters were despatched he had already been nominated to the Senate (July 3d) commander-in-chief of all the armies raised or to be raised. His nomination was unanimously confirmed on the following day, and it was determined that the Secretary of War should be the bearer of the commission to Mount Vernon, accompanied by a letter from the President. "The reasons and motives," writes Mr. Adams in his instructions to the Secretary, "which prevailed with me to venture upon such a step as the nomination of this great and illustrious character, whose voluntary resignation alone occasioned my introduction to the office I now hold, were too numerous to be detailed in this letter, and are too obvious and important to escape the observation of any part of America or Europe. But as it is a movement of great delicacy, it will require all your address to communicate the subject in a manner that shall be unoffensive to his feelings and consistent with all the respect that is due from me to him.

"If the General should decline the appointment, all the world will be silent and respectfully assent. If he should accept it, all the world, except the enemies of this country, will rejoice."

Mr. McHenry was instructed to consult Washington upon the organization of the army, and upon everything relating to it. He was the bearer also of a letter from Hamilton. "I use the liberty," writes he, "which my attachment to you and to the public authorizes, to offer you my opinion, that you should not decline the appointment. It is evident that the public satisfaction at it is lively and universal. It is not to be doubted that the circumstances will give an additional spring to the public mind, will tend much to unite, and will facilitate the measures which the conjuncture requires."

It was with a heavy heart that Washington found his dream of repose once more interrupted; but his strong fidelity to duty would not permit him to hesitate. He accepted the commission, however, with the condition that he should not be called into the field until the army was in a situation to require his presence; or it should become indispensable by the urgency of circumstances.

"In making this reservation," added he, in his letter to the President, "I beg it to be understood that I do not mean to withhold any assistance to arrange and organize the army, which you may think I can afford. I take the liberty, also, to mention that I must decline having my acceptance considered as drawing after it any immediate charge upon the public; or that I can receive any emoluments annexed to

the appointment before entering into a situation to incur expense."

He made another reservation, through the Secretary of War, but did not think proper to embody it in his public letter of acceptance, as that would be communicated to the Senate, which was, that the principal officers in the line and of the staff, should be such as he could place confidence in.

As to the question which had perplexed Mr. Adams whether, in forming the army, to call on all the old generals or appoint a new set, Washington's idea was that, as the armies about to be raised were commencing *de novo*, the President had the right to make officers of citizens or soldiers at his discretion, availing himself of the best aid the country afforded. That no officer of the old army, disbanded fourteen years before, could *expect*, much less *claim*, an appointment on any other ground than superior experience, brilliant exploits, and general celebrity founded on merit.

It was with such views that, in the arrangments made by him with the Secretary of War, the three Major-Generals stood, Hamilton, who was to be Inspector-General, Charles Cotesworth Pinckney (not yet returned from Europe), and Knox: in which order he wished their commissions to be dated. The appointment of Hamilton as second in command was desired by the public, on account of his distinguished ability, energy, and fidelity. Pickering, in recommending it, writes: The enemy whom we are now preparing to encounter, veterans in arms, led by able and active officers, and accustomed to victory, must be met by the best blood, talents, energy, and experience, that our country can produce." Washington, speaking of him to the President, says: "Although Colonel Hamilton has never acted in the character of a general officer, yet, his opportunities as the principal and most confidential aid of the commander-in-chief, afforded him the means of viewing everything on a larger scale than those whose attention was confined to divisions or brigades, who know nothing of the correspondences of the commander-in-chief, or of the various orders to, or transactions with, the general staff of the army. These advantages, and his having served with usefulness in the old Congress, in the general convention, and having filled one of the most important departments of government, with acknowledged abilities and integrity, have placed him on high ground, and made him a conspicuous character in the United States and in Europe. * * * * *

"By some he is considered an ambitious man, and, therefore, a dangerous one. That he is ambitious, I shall readily grant,

but it is of that laudable kind which prompts a man to excel in whatever he takes in hand. He is enterprising, quick in his perceptions, and his judgment intuitively great—qualities essential to a military character."

Charles Cotesworth Pinckney was placed next in rank, not solely on account of his military qualifications, which were great, but of his popularity and influence in the Southern States, where his connections were numerous and powerful; it being apprehended that, if the French intended an invasion in force, their operations would commence south of Maryland; in which case it would be all-important to embark General Pinckney and his connections heartily in the active scenes that would follow.

By this arrangement Hamilton and Pinckney took precedence of Knox, an officer whom Washington declared he loved and esteemed; but he trusted the exigencies of the case would reconcile the latter to the position assigned to him. "Viewing things in this light," writes he to Knox, July 16th, "I would fain hope, as we are forming an army anew, which army, if needful at all, is to fight for everything which ought to be dear and sacred to freemen, that former rank will be forgotten, and, among the fit and chosen characters, the only contention will be who shall be foremost in zeal at this crisis to serve his country, in whatever situation circumstances may place him."

The reply of Knox, written in the glow of the moment, bespoke how deeply his warm impulsive feelings were wounded. "I yesterday received your favor," writes he, "which I opened with all the delightful sensations of affection, which I always before experienced upon the receipt of your letters. But I found, on its perusal, a striking instance of that vicissitude of human affairs and friendships, which you so justly describe. I read it with astonishment, which, however, subsided in the reflection that few men know themselves, and therefore, that for more than twenty years I have been acting under a perfect delusion. Conscious myself of entertaining for you a sincere, active, and invariable friendship, I easily believed it was reciprocal. Nay more, I flattered myself with your esteem and respect in a military point of view. But I find that others, greatly my juniors in rank, have been, upon a scale of comparison, preferred before me. Of this, perhaps, the world may also concur with you that I have no just reason to complain. But every intelligent and just principle of society required, either that I should have been previously consulted in an arrangement, in which my feelings and happiness have been so

much wounded, or that I should not have been dragged forth to public view at all, to make the comparison so conspicuously odious."

After continuing in an expostulatory vein, followed by his own views of the probable course of invasion, he adds, toward the close of his letter,—"I have received no other notification of an appointment than what the newspapers announce. When it shall please the Secretary of War to give me the information, I shall endeavor to make him a suitable answer. At present, I do not perceive how it can possibly be to any other purport than in the negative."

In conclusion, he writes: "In whatever situation I shall be, I shall always remember with pleasure and gratitude, the friendship and confidence with which you have heretofore honored me.

I am, with the highest attachment, etc."

Washington was pained in the extreme at the view taken by General Knox of the arrangement, and at the wound which it had evidently given to his feelings and his pride. In a letter to the President (25th Sept.), he writes: "With respect to General Knox, I can say with truth there is no man in the United States with whom I have been in habits of greater intimacy, no one whom I have loved more sincerely, nor any for whom I have had a greater friendship. But esteem, love, and friendship can have no influence on my mind, when I conceive that the subjugation of our government and independence are the objects aimed at by the enemies of our peace, and when possibly our all is at stake."

In reply to Knox, Washington, although he thought the reasons assigned in his previous letter ought to have been sufficiently explanatory of his motives; went into long details of the circumstances under which the military appointments had been made, and the important considerations which dictated them; and showing that it was impossible for him to consult Knox previously to the nomination of the general officers.

"I do not know," writes he, "that these explanations will afford you any satisfaction or produce any change in your determination, but it was just to myself to make them. If there has been any management in the business, it has been concealed from me. I have had no agency therein, nor have I conceived a thought on the subject that has not been disclosed to you with the utmost sincerity and frankness of heart. And now, notwithstanding the insinuations, which are implied in your letter, of the vicissitudes of friendship and the inconstancy of mine, I will pronounce with decision, that it ever

has been, and, notwithstanding the unkindness of the charge, ever will be, for aught I know to the contrary, warm and sincere."

The genial heart of Knox was somewhat soothed and mollified by the "welcome and much esteemed letter of Washington, in which," said he, "I recognize fully all the substantial friendship and kindness which I have invariably experienced from you." Still he was tenacious of the point of precedence and unwilling to serve in a capacity which would compromise his pride. "If an invasion shall take place," writes he, "I shall deeply regret all circumstances which would insuperably bar my having an active command in the field. But if such a measure should be my destiny, I shall frequently petition to serve as one of your aides-de-camp, which, with permission, I shall do with all the cordial devotion and affection of which my soul is capable."

On the 18th of October Washington learnt through the Gazettes of the safe arrival of General Pinckney at New York, and was anxious lest there should be a second part of the difficulty created by General Knox. On the 21st he writes again to Knox, reiterating his wish to have him in the augmented corps a major-general.

"We shall have either *no war*, or a *severe contest* with France; in either case, if you will allow me to express my opinion, this is the most eligible time for you to come forward. In the first case, to assist with your counsel and aid in making judicious provisions and arrangements to avert it; in the other case, to share in the glory of defending your country, and, by making all secondary objects yield to that great and primary object, display a mind superior to embarrassing punctilios at so critical a moment as the present.

"After having expressed these sentiments with the frankness of undisguised friendship, it is hardly necessary to add, that, if you should finally decline the appointment of Major-General, there is none to whom I would give a more decided preference as an aide-de-camp, the offer of which is highly flattering, honorable, and grateful to my feelings, and for which I entertain a high sense. But, my dear General Knox, and here again I repeat to you, in the language of candor and friendship, examine well your own mind upon this subject. Do not unite yourself to the suite of a man, whom you may consider as the primary cause of what you call a degradation, with unpleasant sensations. This, while it is gnawing upon you, would, if I should come to the knowledge of it, make me unhappy; as my first wish would be that my military family,

and the whole army, should consider themselves a band of brothers, willing and ready to die for each other."

Before Knox could have received this letter, he had on the 23d of October, written to the Secretary of War, declining to serve under Hamilton and Pinckney, on the principle that "no officer can consent to his own degradation by serving in an inferior station." General Pinckney, on the contrary, cheerfully accepted his appointment, although placed under Hamilton, who had been of inferior rank to him in the last war. It was with the greatest pleasure he had seen that officer's name at the head of the list of major-generals, and applauded the discernment which had placed him there. He regretted that General Knox had declined his appointment, and that his feelings should be hurt by being outranked. "If the authority," adds he, "which appointed me to the rank of second major in the army, will review the arrangement, and place General Knox before me, I will neither quit the service nor be dissatisfied." *

CHAPTER XLV.

Washington Taxed Anew with the Cares of Office—Correspondence with Lafayette—A Marriage at Mount Vernon—Appointment of a Minister to the French Republic—Washington's Surprise—His Activity on his Estate—Political Anxieties—Concern about the Army.

Early in November (1798) Washington left his retirement and repaired to Philadelphia, at the earnest request of the Secretary of War, to meet that public functionary and Major-Generals Hamilton and Pinckney, and make arrangements respecting the forces about to be raised. The Secretary had prepared a series of questions for their consideration, and others were suggested by Washington, all bearing upon the organization of the provisional army. Upon these Washington and the two Major-Generals were closely engaged for nearly five weeks, at great inconvenience and in a most inclement season. The result of their deliberations was reduced to form, and communicated to the Secretary in two letters drafted by Hamilton, and signed by the commander-in-chief. Not the least irksome of Washington's task, in his present

* Letter to the Secretary of War.

position, was to wade through volumes of applications and recommendations for military appointments; a task which he performed with extreme assiduity, anxious to avoid the influence of favor or prejudice, and sensitively alive to the evil of improper selections.

As it was a part of the plan on which he had accepted the command of the army to decline the occupations of the office until circumstances should require his presence in the field; and as the season and weather rendered him impatient to leave Philadelphia, he gave the Secretary of War his views and plans for the charge and direction of military affairs, and then set out once more for Mount Vernon. The cares and concerns of office, however, followed him to his retreat. "It is not the time nor the attention only," writes he, "which the public duties I am engaged in require, but their bringing upon me applicants, recommenders of applicants, and seekers of information, none of whom, perhaps, are my acquaintances, with their servants and horses to aid in the consumption of my forage, and what to me is more valuable, my time, that I most regard; for a man in the country, nine miles from any house of entertainment, is differently situated from one in a city, where none of these inconveniences are felt."

In a letter, recently received from Lafayette, the latter spoke feelingly of the pleasure he experienced in conversing incessantly with his son George about Mount Vernon, its dear and venerated inhabitants, of the tender obligations, so profoundly felt, which he and his son had contracted towards him who had become a father to both.

In the conclusion of his letter, Lafayette writes that, from the information he had received, he was fully persuaded that the French Directory desired to be at peace with the United States. "The aristocratical party," adds he, "whose hatred of America dates from the commencement of the European revolution, and the English government, which, since the Declaration of Independence, have forgotten and forgiven nothing, will rejoice, I know, at the prospect of a rupture between two nations heretofore united in the cause of liberty, and will endeavor, by all the means in their power, to precipitate us into a war. * * * * But you are there, my dear General, independent of all parties, venerated by all, and if, as I hope, your information lead you to judge favorably of the disposition of the French government, your influence ought to prevent the breach from widening, and should insure a noble and durable reconciliation."

In his reply, Dec. 25th, Washington says: "You have ex-

pressed a wish worthy of the benevolence of your heart, that I would exert all my endeavors to avert the calamitous effects of rupture between our countries. Believe me, my dear friend, that no man can deprecate an event of this sort more than I should. * * * You add, in another place, that the Executive Directory are disposed to an accommodation of all differences. If they are sincere in this declaration, let them evidence it by actions; for words, unaccompanied therewith, will not be much regarded now. I would pledge myself that the government and people of the United States will meet them heart and hand at a fair negotiation; having no wish more ardent than to live in peace with all the world, provided they are suffered to remain undisturbed in their just rights."

"Of the politics of Europe," adds he, in another part of his letter, "I shall express no opinion, nor make any inquiry who is right or who is wrong. I wish well to all nations and to all men. My politics are plain and simple. I think every nation has a right to establish that form of government under which it conceives it may live most happy; provided it infringes no right, or is not dangerous to others; and that no governments ought to interfere with the internal concerns of another, except for the security of what is due to themselves."

Washington's national pride, however, had been deeply wounded by the indignities inflicted on his country by the French, and he doubted the propriety of entering into any fresh negotiations with them, unless overtures should be made on their part. As to any symptoms of an accommodation they might at present evince, he ascribed them to the military measures adopted by the United States, and thought those measures ought not to be relaxed.

We have spoken in a preceding chapter of a love affair growing up at Mount Vernon between Washington's nephew, Lawrence Lewis, and Miss Nelly Custis. The parties had since become engaged, to the General's great satisfaction, and their nuptials were celebrated at Mount Vernon on his birthday, the 22d of February (1799). Lawrence had recently received the commission of major of cavalry in the new army which was forming; and Washington made arrangements for settling the newly married couple near him on a part of Mount Vernon lands, which he had designated in his will to be bequeathed to Miss Nelly.

As the year opened, Washington continued to correspond with the Secretary of War and General Hamilton on the affairs of the provisional army. The recruiting business went on slowly, with interruptions, and there was delay in furnish-

ing commissions to the officers who had been appointed. Washington, who was not in the secrets of the cabinet, was at a loss to account for this apparent torpor. "If the augmented force," writes he to Hamilton, "was not intended as an *in terrorem* measure, the delay in recruiting it is unaccountable, and baffles all conjecture on reasonable grounds."

The fact was, that the military measures taken in America had really produced an effect on French policy. Efforts had been made by M. Talleyrand, through unofficial persons, to induce an amicable overture on the part of the United States At length that wily minister had written to the French Secretary of Legation at the Hague, M. Pichon, intimating that whatever plenipotentiary the United States might send to France to put an end to the existing differences between the two countries, would be undoubtedly received with the respect due to the representative of a free, independent, and powerful nation. M. Pichon communicated a copy of this letter to Mr. William Vans Murray, the American minister in Holland, who forthwith transmitted it to his government. Mr. Adams caught at the chance for an extrication from his belligerent difficulties, and laid this letter before the Senate on the 18th of February, at the same time nominating Mr. Murray to be minister plenipotentiary to the French Republic.

Washington expressed his extreme surprise when the news of this unexpected event reached him. "But far, very far indeed," writes he, "was that surprise short of what I experienced the next day, when, by a very intelligent gentleman immediately from Philadelphia, I was informed that there had been no *direct* overture from the government of France to that of the United States for a negotiation; on the contrary, that M. Talleyrand was playing the same loose and roundabout game he had attempted the year before with our envoys; and which, as in that case, might mean anything or nothing, as would subserve his purposes best."

Before the Senate decided on the nomination of Mr. Murray, two other persons were associated with him in the mission, namely, Oliver Ellsworth and Patrick Henry. The three envoys being confirmed, Mr. Murray was instructed by letter to inform the French Minister of Foreign Affairs of the fact, but to apprise him that his associate envoys would not embark for Europe until the Directory had given assurance, through their Minister for Foreign Affairs, that those envoys would be received in proper form and treated with on terms of equality. Mr. Murray was directed at the same time to have no further informal communications with any French agent.

Mr. Henry declined to accept his appointment on account of ill health, and Mr. William Richardson Davie was ultimately substituted for him.

Throughout succeeding months, Washington continued to superintend from a distance the concerns of the army, as his ample and minute correspondence manifests; and he was at the same time earnestly endeavoring to bring the affairs of his rural domain into order. A sixteen years' absence from home, with short intervals, had, he said, deranged them considerably, so that it required all the time he could spare from the usual avocations of life to bring them into tune again. It was a period of incessant activity and toil, therefore, both mental and bodily. He was for hours in his study occupied with his pen, and for hours on horseback, riding the rounds of his extensive estate, visiting the various farms, and superintending and directing the works in operation. All this he did with unfailing vigor, though now in his sixty-seventh year.

Occasional reports of the sanguinary conflict that was going on in Europe would reach him in the quiet groves of Mount Vernon, and awaken his solicitude. "A more destructive sword," said he, "was never drawn, at least in modern times, than this war has produced. It is time to sheathe it and give peace to mankind." *

Amid this strife and turmoil of the nations, he felt redoubled anxiety about the success of the mission to France. The great successes of the allies combined against that power; the changes in the Directory, and the rapidity with which everything seemed verging towards a restoration of the monarchy, induced some members of the cabinet to advise a suspension of the mission; but Mr. Adams was not to be convinced or persuaded. Having furnished the commissioners with their instructions, he gave his final order for their departure, and they sailed in a frigate from Rhode Island on the 3d of November.

A private letter written by Washington shortly afterwards to the Secretary of War, bespeaks his apprehensions: "I have for some time past viewed the political concerns of the United States with an anxious and painful eye. They appear to me to be moving by hasty strides to a crisis; but in what it will result, that Being, who sees, foresees, and directs all things, alone can tell. The vessel is afloat, or very nearly so, and considering myself as a passenger only, I shall trust to the mariners (whose duty it is to watch) to steer it into a safe port."

* Letter to William Vans Murray.

His latest concern about the army was to give instructions for *hutting* the troops according to an idea originally suggested by Hamilton, and adopted in the revolutionary war. "Although I had determined to take no charge of any military operations," writes he, "unless the troops should be called into the field, yet, under the present circumstances, and considering that the advanced season of the year will admit of no delay in providing winter quarters for the troops, I have willingly given my aid in that business, and shall never decline any assistance in my power, *when necessary*, to promote the good of the service." *

CHAPTER XLVI.

Washington Digests a Plan for the Management of his Estate—His Views in Regard to a Military Academy—Letter to Hamilton—His Last Hours—The Funeral—The Will—Its Provisions in Regard to His Slaves—Proceedings of Congress on his Death—Conclusion.

Winter had now set in, with occasional wind and rain and frost, yet Washington still kept up his active round of in-door and out-door avocations, as his diary records. He was in full health and vigor, dined out occasionally, and had frequent guests at Mount Vernon, and, as usual, was part of every day in the saddle, going the rounds of his estates, and, in his military phraseology, "visiting the outposts."

He had recently walked with his favorite nephew about the grounds, showing the improvements he intended to make, and had especially pointed out the spot where he purposed building a new family vault; the old one being damaged by the roots of trees which had overgrown it and caused it to leak. "This change," said he, "I shall make the first of all, for I may require it before the rest."

"When I parted from him," adds the nephew, "he stood on the steps of the front door, where he took leave of myself and another. * * * * It was a bright frosty morning; he had taken his usual ride, and the clear healthy flush on his cheek, and his sprightly manner, brought the remark from both of us that we had never seen the General look so well. I have sometimes thought him decidedly the handsomest man I ever

* Washington's Writings, xi. 462.

saw; and when in a lively mood, so full of pleasantry, so agreeable to all with whom he associated, that I could hardly realize he was the same Washington whose dignity awed all who approached him." *

For some time past Washington had been occupied in digesting a complete system on which his estate was to be managed for several succeeding years; specifying the cultivation of the several farms, with tables designating the rotations of the crops. It occupied thirty folio pages, and was executed with that clearness and method which characterized all his business papers. This was finished on the 10th of December, and was accompanied by a letter of that date to his manager or steward. It is a valuable document, showing the soundness and vigor of his intellect at this advanced stage of his existence, and the love of order that reigned throughout his affairs. "My greatest anxiety," said he on a previous occasion, "is to have all these concerns in such a clear and distinct form, that no reproach may attach itself to me when I have taken my departure for the land of spirits." †

It was evident, however, that full of health and vigor, he looked forward to his long-cherished hope, the enjoyment of a serene old age in this home of his heart.

According to his diary, the morning on which these voluminous instructions to his steward were dated was clear and calm, but the afternoon was lowering. The next day (11) he notes that there was wind and rain, and "at night *a large circle round the moon.*"

The morning of the 12th was overcast. That morning he wrote a letter to Hamilton, heartily approving of a plan for a military academy, which the latter had submitted to the Secretary of War. "The establishment of an institution of this kind upon a respectable and extensive basis," observes he, "has ever been considered by me an object of primary importance to this country; and while I was in the chair of government I omitted no proper opportunity of recommending it in my public speeches and otherwise, to the attention of the legislature. But I never undertook to go into a detail of the organization of such an academy, leaving this task to others, whose pursuit in the path of science and attention to the arrangement of such institutions, had better qualified them for the execution of it. * * * I sincerely hope that the subject will meet with due attention, and that the

* Paulding's Life of Washington, vol. ii. p. 196.
† Letter to James McHenry. Writings, xi. 407.

reasons for its establishment which you have clearly pointed out in your letter to the secretary, will prevail upon the legislature to place it upon a permanent and respectable footing" He closes his letter with an assurance of "very great esteem and regard," the last words he was ever to address to Hamilton.

About ten o'clock he mounted his horse, and rode out as usual to make the rounds of the estate. The ominous ring round the moon, which he had observed on the preceding night, proved a fatal portent. "About one o'clock," he notes, it began to snow, soon after to hail, and then turned to a settled cold rain. Having on an over-coat, he continued his ride without regarding the weather, and did not return to the house until after three.

His secretary approached him with letters to be franked, that they might be taken to the post-office in the evening Washington franked the letters, but observed that the weather was too bad to send a servant out with them. Mr. Lear perceived that snow was hanging from his hair, and expressed fears that he had got wet; but he replied, "No, his great-coat had kept him dry." As dinner had been waiting for him he sat down to table without changing his dress. "In the evening," writes his secretary, "he appeared as well as usual."

On the following morning the snow was three inches deep and still falling, which prevented him from taking his usual ride. He complained of a sore throat, and had evidently taken cold the day before. In the afternoon the weather cleared up, and he went out on the grounds between the house and the river, to mark some trees which were to be cut down. A hoarseness which had hung about him through the day grew worse towards night, but he made light of it.

He was very cheerful in the evening, as he sat in the parlor with Mrs. Washington and Mr. Lear, amusing himself with the papers which had been brought from the post-office. When he met with anything interesting, or entertaining he would read it aloud as well as his hoarseness would permit, or he listened and made occasional comments, while Mr. Lear read the debates of the Virginia Assembly.

On retiring to bed, Mr. Lear suggested that he should take something to relieve the cold. "No," replied he, "you know I never take anything for a cold. Let it go as it came."

In the night he was taken extremely ill with ague and difficulty of breathing. Between two and three o'clock in the morning he awoke Mrs. Washington, who would have risen to call a servant; but he would not permit her, lest she should

take cold. At daybreak, when the servant woman entered to make a fire, she was sent to call Mr. Lear. He found the general breathing with difficulty, and hardly able to utter a word intelligibly. Washington desired that Dr. Craik, who lived in Alexandria, should be sent for, and that in the mean time Rawlins, one of the overseers, should be summoned, to bleed him before the doctor could arrive.

A gargle was prepared for his throat, but whenever he attempted to swallow any of it, he was convulsed and almost suffocated. Rawlins made his appearance soon after sunrise, but when the general's arm was ready for the operation, became agitated. "Don't be afraid," said the general, as well as he could speak, Rawlins made an incision. "The orifice is not large enough," said Washington. The blood, however, ran pretty freely, and Mrs. Washington, uncertain whether the treatment was proper, and fearful that too much blood might be taken, begged Mr. Lear to stop it. When he was about to untie the string the general put up his hand to prevent him, and as soon as he could speak, murmured, "more —more;" but Mrs. Washington's doubts prevailed, and the bleeding was stopped, after about half a pint of blood had been taken. External applications were now made to the throat, and his feet were bathed in warm water, but without affording any relief.

His old friend, Dr. Craik, arrived between eight and nine, and two other physicians, Drs. Dick and Brown, were called in. Various remedies were tried, and additional bleeding, but all of no avail.

"About half past four o'clock," writes Mr. Lear, "he desired me to call Mrs. Washington to his bedside, when he requested her to go down into his room and take from his desk two wills, which she would find there, and bring them to him, which she did. Upon looking at them, he gave her one, which he observed was useless, as being superseded by the other, and desired her to burn it, which she did, and took the other and put it into her closet.

"After this was done, I returned to his bedside and took his hand. He said to me: 'I find I am going, my breath cannot last long. I believed from the first, that the disorder would prove fatal. Do you arrange and record all my late military letters and papers. Arrange my accounts and settle my books, as you know more about them than any one else; and let Mr. Rawlins finish recording my other letters which he has begun.' I told him this should be done. He then asked if I recollected anything which it was essential for him

to do, as he had but a very short time to continue with us. I told him that I could recollect nothing; but that I hoped he was not so near his end He observed, smiling, that he certainly was, and that, as it was the debt which we must all pay, he looked to the event with perfect resignation."

In the course of the afternoon he appeared to be in great pain and distress from the difficulty of breathing, and frequently changed his posture in the bed. Mr. Lear endeavored to raise him and turn him with as much ease as possible. "I am afraid I fatigue you too much," the general would say. Upon being assured to the contrary, "Well," observed he gratefully, "it is a debt we must pay to each other and I hope when you want aid of this kind you will find it."

His servant, Christopher, had been in the room during the day, and almost the whole time on his feet. The general noticed it in the afternoon, and kindly told him to sit down.

About five o'clock his old friend, Dr. Craik, came again into the room, and approached the bedside. "Doctor," said the general, "I die hard, but I am not afraid to go. I believed, from my first attack, that I should not survive it—my breath cannot last long." The doctor pressed his hand in silence, retired from the bedside, and sat by the fire absorbed in grief.

Between five and six the other physicians came in, and he was assisted to sit up in his bed. "I feel I am going," said he; "I thank you for your attentions, but I pray you to take no more trouble about me; let me go off quietly; I cannot last long." He lay down again; all retired excepting Dr. Craik. The general continued uneasy and restless, but without complaining, frequently asking what hour it was.

Further remedies were tried without avail in the evening. He took whatever was offered him, did as he was desired by the physicians, and never uttered sigh or complaint.

"About ten o'clock," writes Mr. Lear, "he made several attempts to speak to me before he could effect it. At length he said, 'I am just going. Have me decently buried, and do not let my body be put into the vault in less than three days after I am dead.' I bowed assent, for I could not speak. He then looked at me again and said, 'Do you understand me?' I replied, 'Yes.' ''Tis well,' said he.

"About ten minutes before he expired (which was between ten and eleven o'clock) his breathing became easier. He lay quietly; he withdrew his hand from mine and felt his own pulse. I saw his countenance change. I spoke to Dr. Craik, who sat by the fire. He came to the bedside. The general's

hand fell from his wrist. I took it in mine and pressed it to my bosom. Dr. Craik put his hands over his eyes, and he expired without a struggle or a sigh.

"While we were fixed in silent grief, Mrs. Washington, who was seated at the foot of the bed, asked with a firm and collected voice, 'Is he gone?' I could not speak, but held up my hand as a signal that he was no more. 'Tis well,' said she in the same voice. 'All is now over; I shall soon follow him; I have no more trials to pass through.'"

We add from Mr. Lear's account a few particulars concerning the funeral. The old family vault on the estate had been opened, the rubbish cleared away, and a door made to close the entrance, which before had been closed with brick. The funeral took place on the 18th of December. About eleven o'clock the people of the neighborhood began to assemble. The corporation of Alexandria, with the militia and Free Masons of the place, and eleven pieces of cannon, arrived at a later hour. A schooner was stationed off Mount Vernon to fire minute guns.

About three o'clock the procession began to move, passing out through the gate at the left wing of the house, proceeding round in front of the lawn and down to the vault, on the right wing of the house; minute guns being fired at the time. The troops, horse and foot, formed the escort; then came four of the clergy. Then the general's horse, with his saddle, holsters, and pistols, led by two grooms in black. The body was borne by the Free Masons and officers; several members of the family and old friends, among the number Dr. Craik, and some of the Fairfaxes, followed as chief mourners. The corporation of Alexandria and numerous private persons closed the procession. The Rev. Mr. Davis read the funeral service at the vault, and pronounced a short address; after which the Masons performed their ceremonies, and the body was deposited in the vault.

Such were the obsequies of Washington, simple and modest, according to his own wishes; all confined to the grounds of Mount Vernon, which, after forming the poetical dream of his life, had now become his final resting-place.

On opening the will which he had handed to Mrs. Washington shortly before his death, it was found to have been carefully drawn up by himself in the preceding July; and by an act in conformity with his whole career, one of its first provisions directed the emancipation of his slaves on the decease of his wife. It had long been his earnest wish that the slaves held by him *in his own right* should receive their

freedom during his life, but he had found that it would be attended with insuperable difficulties on account of their intermixture by marriage with the "dower negroes," whom it was not in his power to manumit under the tenure by which they were held.

With provident benignity he also made provision in his will for such as were to receive their freedom under this devise, but who, from age, bodily infirmities, or infancy, might be unable to support themselves, and he expressly forbade, under any pretense whatsoever, the sale or transportation out of Virginia, of any slave of whom he might die possessed. Though born and educated a slave-holder, this was all in consonance with feelings, sentiments and principles which he had long entertained.

In a letter to Mr. John F. Mercer, in September, 1786, he writes, "I never mean, unless some particular circumstances should compel me to it, to possess another slave by purchase, it being among my first wishes to see some plan adopted by which slavery in this country may be abolished by law." And eleven years afterwards, in August, 1797, he writes to his nephew, Lawrence Lewis, in a letter which we have had in our hands, "I wish from my soul that the legislature of this State could see the policy of a gradual abolition of slavery. It might prevent much future mischief."

A deep sorrow spread over the nation on hearing that Washington was no more. Congress, which was in session, immediately adjourned for the day. The next morning it was resolved that the Speaker's chair be shrouded with black: that the members and officers of the House wear black during the session, and that a joint committee of both Houses be appointed to consider on the most suitable manner of doing honor to the memory of the man, "first in war, first in peace, and first in the hearts of his fellow-citizens."

Public testimonials of grief and reverence were displayed in every part of the Union. Nor were these sentiments confined to the United States. When the news of Washington's death reached England, Lord Bridport, who had command of a British fleet of nearly sixty sail of the line, lying at Torbay, lowered his flag half-mast, every ship following the example; and Bonaparte, First Consul of France, on announcing his death to the army, ordered that black crape should be suspended from all the standards and flags throughout the public service for ten days.

In the preceding volumes of our work, we have traced the career of Washington from early boyhood to his elevation to the presidential chair. It was an elevation he had neither sought nor wished; for when the independence of his country was achieved, the modest and cherished desire of his heart had been "to live and die a private citizen on his own farm;" * and he had shaped out for himself an ideal elysium in his beloved shades of Mount Vernon. But power sought him in his retirement. The weight and influence of his name and character were deemed all essential to complete his work; to set the new government in motion, and conduct it through its first perils and trials. With unfeigned reluctance he complied with the imperative claims of his country, and accepted the power thus urged upon him: advancing to its exercise with diffidence, and aiming to surround himself with men of the highest talent and information whom he might consult in emergency; but firm and strong in the resolve in all things to act as his conscience told him was "right as it respected his God, his country, and himself." For he knew no divided fidelity, no separate obligation; his most sacred duty to himself was his highest duty to his country and his God.

In treating of his civil administration in this closing volume, we have endeavored to show how truly he adhered to this resolve, and with what inflexible integrity and scrupulous regard to the public weal he discharged his functions. In executing our task, we have not indulged in discussions of temporary questions of controverted policy which agitated the incipient establishment of our government, but have given his words and actions as connected with those questions, and as illustrative of his character. In this volume, as in those which treat of his military career, we have avoided rhetorical amplification and embellishments, and all gratuitous assumptions, and have sought by simple and truthful details, to give his character an opportunity of developing itself, and of manifesting those fixed principles and that noble consistency which reigned alike throughout his civil and his military career.

The character of Washington may want some of those poetical elements which dazzle and delight the multitude, but it possessed fewer inequalities, and a rarer union of virtues than perhaps ever fell to the lot of one man. Prudence, firmness, sagacity, moderation, an overruling judgment, an immovable justice, courage that never faltered, patience that never wearied, truth that disdained all artifice, magnanimity without alloy. It seems as if Providence had endowed him

* Writings, ix. p. 412.

in a preëminent degree with the qualities requisite to fit him for the high destiny he was called upon to fulfil—to conduct a momentous revolution which was to form an era in the history of the world, and to inaugurate a new and untried government, which, to use his own words, was to lay the foundation "for the enjoyment of much purer civil liberty, and greater public happiness, than have hitherto been the portion of mankind."

The fame of Washington stands apart from every other in history; shining with a truer lustre and a more benignant glory. With us his memory remains a national property, where all sympathies throughout our widely-extended and diversified empire meet in unison. Under all dissensions and amid all the storms of party, his precepts and example speak to us from the grave with a paternal appeal; and his name—by all revered—forms a universal tie of brotherhood—a watchword of our Union.

"It will be the duty of the historian and the sage of all nations," writes an eminent British statesman, (Lord Brougham,) "to let no occasion pass of commemorating this illustrious man, and until time shall be no more, will a test of the progress which our race has made in wisdom and virtue, be derived from the veneration paid to the immortal name of Washington."

APPENDIX.

I.

PORTRAITS OF WASHINGTON

[The following notices of the various representations of Washington, which have been prepared by the publisher for the illustrated edition of this work, are kindly furnished by Mr. H. T. TUCKERMAN, from a volume which he has now in press.]

* * * * *

THE earliest portraits of Washington are more interesting, perhaps, as memorials than as works of art; and we can easily imagine that associations endeared them to his old comrades. The dress (blue coat, scarlet facings, and underclothes) of the first portrait, by Peale, and the youthful face, make it suggestive of the first experience of the future commander, when exchanging the surveyor's implements for the colonel's commission, he bivouacked in the wilderness of Ohio, the leader of a motley band of hunters, provincials and savages, to confront wily Frenchmen, cut forest roads, and encounter all the perils of Indian ambush, inclement skies, undisciplined followers, famine, and woodland skirmish. It recalls his calm authority and providential escape amid the dismay of Braddock's defeat, and his pleasant sensation at the first whistling of bullets in the weary march to Fort Necessity. To CHARLES WILSON PEALE, we owe this precious relic of the chieftain's youth. His own career partook of the vicissitudes and was impressed with the spirit of the revolutionary era; a captain of volunteers at the battles of Trenton and Germantown, and a State representative of Pennsylvania, a favorite pupil of West, an ingenious mechanician, and a warrior, he always cherished the instinct and the faculty for art; and even amid the bustle and duties of the camp, never failed to seize auspicious intervals of leisure, to depict his brother officers. This portrait was executed in 1772, and is now at Arlington House.

The resolution of Congress by which a portrait by this artist was ordered, was passed before the occupation of Philadelphia. Its progress marks the vicissitudes of the revolutionary struggle; commenced in the gloomy winter and half-famished encampment at Valley Forge, in 1778, the battles of Trenton, Princeton, and Monmouth intervened before its completion. At the last place Washington suggested that the view from the window of the farm-house opposite to which he was sitting would form a desirable background. Peale adopted the idea, and represented Monmouth Court House and a party of Hessians under guard, marching out of it.* The picture was finished at Princeton, and Nassau Hall is a prominent object in the background; but Congress adjourned without

* MS. Letter of Titian R. Peale to George Livermore, Esq.

making an appropriation, and it remained in the artist's hands. Lafayette desired a copy for the King of France ; and Peale executed one in 1779, which was sent to Paris ; but the misfortunes of the royal family occasioned its sale, and it became the property of the Count de Menou, who brought it again to this country and presented it to the National Institute, where it is now preserved. Chapman made two copies at a thousand dollars each ; and Dr. Craik, one of the earliest and warmest personal friends of Washington, their commissions as officers in the French war having been signed on the same day (1754), declared it a most faithful likeness of him as he appeared in the prime of his life.*

There is a tradition in the Peale family, honorably represented through several generations, by public spirit and artistic gifts, that intelligence of one of the most important triumphs of the American arms was received by Washington in a despatch he opened while sitting to Wilson Peale for a miniature for his wife, who was also present. The scene occurred one fine summer afternoon ; and there is something attractive to the fancy in the association of this group quietly occupied in one of the most beautiful of the arts of peace, and in a commemorative art destined to gratify conjugal love and a nation's pride, with the progress of a war and the announcement of a victory fraught with that nation's liberty and that leader's eternal renown.

The characteristic traits of Peale's portraits of Washington now at the National Institute and Arlington House, and the era of our history and of Washington's life they embalm, make them doubly valuable in a series of pictorial illustrations, each of which, independent of the degree of professional skill exhibited, is essential to our Washingtonian gallery. Before Trumbull and Stuart had caught from the living man his aspect in maturity and age—the form knit to athletic proportions by self-denial and activity, and clad in the garb of rank and war, and the countenance open with truth and grave with thought, yet rounded with the contour and ruddy with the glow of early manhood—was thus genially delineated by the hand of a comrade, and in the infancy of native art. Of the fourteen portraits by Peale, that exhibiting Washington as a Virginia colonel in the colonial force of Great Britain, is the only entire portrait before the revolution extant.† One was painted for the college of New Jersey, at Princeton, in 1780, to occupy a frame in which a portrait of George the Third had been destroyed by a cannon ball during the battle at that place on the 3d of January, 1777. It still remains in the possession of the College, and was saved fortunately from the fire which a few years ago consumed Nassau Hall. Peale's last portrait of Washington, executed in 1783, he retained until his death, and two years since, it was sold with the rest of the collection known as the "Peale Gallery," at Philadelphia. There is a pencil sketch also by this artist, framed with the wood of the tree in front of the famous Chew's house, around which centred the battle of Germantown.‡

* PHILADELPHIA, *Feb.* 4.—His Excellency General Washington set off from this city to join the army in New Jersey. During the course of his short stay, the only relief he has enjoyed from service since he first entered it, he has been honored with every mark of esteem, &c. The Council of this State being desirous of having his picture in full length, requested his sitting for that purpose, which he politely complied with, and a striking likeness was taken by Mr. Peale, of this city. The portrait is to be placed in the council chamber. Don Juan Marrailes, the Minister of France, has ordered five copies, four of which, we hear, are to be sent abroad.—*Penn. Packet*, Feb. 11, 1779. Peale's first portrait was executed for Col. Alexander ; his last is now in the Bryan Gallery, New York. He painted one in 1776 for John Hancock, and besides that for New Jersey others for Pennsylvania and Maryland.

† See frontispiece to vol. i.

‡ "The editor of the *Cincinnati Enquirer* was lately shown a pencil sketch of General

A few octogenarians in the city of brotherly love, used to speak, not many years since, of a diminutive family, the head of which manifested the sensitive temperament, if not the highest capabilities of artistic genius. This was ROBERT EDGE PINE. He brought to America the earliest cast of the Venus de Medici, which was privately exhibited to the select few—the manners and morals of the Quaker city forbidding its exposure to the common eye. He was considered a superior colorist, and was favorably introduced into society in Philadelphia by his acknowledged sympathy for the American cause, and by a grand project such as was afterwards partially realized by Trumbull; that of a series of historical paintings, illustrative of the American Revolution, to embrace original portraits of the leaders, both civil and military, in that achievement, including the statesmen who were chiefly instrumental in framing the Constitution and organizing the Government. He brought a letter of introduction to the father of the late Judge Hopkinson, whose portrait he executed, and its vivid tints and correct resemblance still attest to his descendants the ability of the painter. He left behind him in London, creditable portraits of George the Second, Garrick, and the Duke of Northumberland. In the intervals of his business as a teacher of drawing and a votary of portraiture in general, he collected, from time to time, a large number of "distinguished heads," although, as in the case of Ceracchi, the epoch and country were unfavorable to his ambitious project; of these portraits, the heads of General Gates, Charles Carrol, Baron Steuben, and Washington, are the best known and most highly prized. Pine remained three weeks at Mount Vernon, and his portrait bequeathes some features with great accuracy; artists find in it certain merits not discoverable in those of a later date; it has the permanent interest of a representation from life, by a painter of established reputation; yet its tone is cold and its effect unimpressive beside the more bold and glowing pencil of Stuart. It has repose and dignity. In his letter to Washington, asking his co-operation in the design he meditated, Pine says, "I have been some time at Annapolis painting the portraits of patriots, legislators, heroes and beauties, in order to adorn my large picture;" and he seems to have commenced his enterprise with sanguine hopes of one day accomplishing his object, which, however, it was reserved for a native artist eventually to complete. That his appeal to Washington was not neglected, however, is evident from an encouraging allusion to Pine and his scheme, in the correspondence of the former. "Mr. Pine," he says, "has met a favorable reception in this country, and may, I conceive, command as much business as he pleases. He is now preparing materials for historical representations of the most important events of the war."* Pine's picture is in the possession of the Hopkinson family at Philadelphia. The fac-simile of Washington's letter proves that it was taken in 1785. A large copy was purchased at Montreal, in 1817, by the late Henry Brevoort, of New York, and is now in the possession of his son, J. Carson Brevoort, at Bedford, L. I.

The profile likeness of Washington by SHARPLESS, is a valuable item of the legacy which Art has bequeathed of those noble and benign features; he evidently bestowed upon it his greatest skill, and there is no more correct facial outline of the immortal subject in existence; a disciple of Lavater would probably find it the most available side-view for

Washington, taken from life by Charles Wilson Peale, in the year 1777. It was framed from a part of the elm-tree then standing in front of Chew's house, on the Germantown battle-ground, and the frame was made by a son of Dr. Craley, of Revolutionary fame."

* Sparks' Writings of Washington.

physiognomical inference; it is remarkably adapted to the burin, and has been once, at least, adequately engraved; it also has the melancholy attraction of being the last portrait of Washington taken from life.

One of Canova's fellow-workmen, in the first years of his artistic life, was a melancholy enthusiast, whose thirst for the ideal was deepened by a morbid tenacity of purpose and sensitiveness of heart;—a form of character peculiar to Italy; in its voluptuous phase illustrated by Petrarch, in its stoical by Alfieri, and in its combination of patriotic and tender sentiments by Foscolo's "Letters of Jacopo Ortis." The political confusion that reigned in Europe for a time, seriously interfered with the pursuit of art; and this was doubtless a great motive with Guiseppe Ceracchi for visiting America; but not less inciting was the triumph of freedom, of which the land had recently become the scene—a triumph that so enlisted the sympathies and fired the imagination of the republican sculptor, that he designed a grand national monument, commemorative of American Independence, and sought the patronage of the newly organized government in its behalf. Washington, individually, favored his design, and the model of the proposed work received the warm approval of competent judges: but taste for art, especially for grand monumental statuary, was quite undeveloped on this side of the Atlantic, and the recipient of Papal orders found little encouragement in a young republic, too busy in laying the foundation of her civil polity, to give much thought to any memorials of her nascent glory. It was, however, but a question of time. His purpose is even now in the process of achievement. Washington's native State voluntarily undertook the enterprise for which the general government, in its youth, was inadequate; and it was auspiciously reserved for a native artist, and a single member of the original confederacy, to embody, in a style worthy of more than Italian genius, the grand conception of a representative monument, with Washington in a colossal equestrian statue as the centre, and the Virginian patriots and orators, of the Revolution, grouped around his majestic figure. Ceracchi, however, in aid of his elaborate project, executed the only series of marble portraitures from life of the renowned founders of the national government: his busts of Hamilton Jay, Trumbull, and Governor George Clinton, were long the prominent ornaments of the Academy of Fine Arts, in New York; the latter especially, was remarkable, both in regard to its resemblance to the original, and as a work of art. His most important achievement, however, was a bust of Washington, generally considered the most perfect representation of the man and the hero combined, after Stuart's and Houdon's masterpieces. It is in the heroic style, with a fillet. The fate of this valuable effigy was singular. It was purchased by the Spanish Ambassador, as a gift to the Prince of Peace, then at the height of his power at Madrid; before the bust reached Spain, Godoy was exiled, and the minister recalled, who, on his arrival, transferred it, unpacked, to Richard Meade, Esq., of Philadelphia, in whose family, it remained until two years ago, when, at the administrators' sale of that gentleman's fine collection of paintings, it was purchased by Governor Kemble, and can now be seen at his hospitable mansion, on the banks of the Hudson.

The zeal of Ceracchi in his cherished purpose, is indicated by the assurance he gave Dr. Hugh Williamson—the historian of North Carolina, and author of the earliest work on the American climate, and one of the first advocates of the canal policy—when inviting him to sit for his bust—that he did not pay him the compliment in order to secure his vote for the national monument, but only to perpetuate the "features of the American Cato." With

characteristic emphasis, the honest Doctor declined, on the ground that posterity would not care for his lineaments ; adding that, " if he were capable of being lured into the support of any scheme whatever, against his conviction of right, wood, and not stone ought to be the material of his image."*

Baffled, as Ceracchi ultimately was, in the realization of hopes inspired alike by his ambition as a sculptor and his love of republican institutions, he carried to Europe the proud distinction of having taken the initiative in giving an enduring shape to the revered and then unfamiliar features of Washington. He executed two busts, one colossal, a cast of which was long in the New York Academy of Fine Arts. Impoverished, the darling scheme of his life frustrated in America, and his own patriotic hopes crushed by the victories of Bonaparte in Italy, and his rapid advances towards imperial sway, the enthusiastic artist brooded, with intense disappointment, over the contrast between the fresh and exuberant national life, of which he had partaken here, and the vassalage to which Europe was again reduced. Napoleon and Washington stood revealed, as it were, side by side—the selfish aggrandizement of the one who trampled on humanity under the prestige of military fame, and the magnanimity of the other, content to be the immaculate agent of a free people, after sacrificing all for their welfare. Imbued with the principles and a witness of the self-control which consummated our revolutionary triumph, Ceracchi beheld with an impatience that caution only restrained, the steady and unscrupulous encroachment of Bonaparte on all that is sacred in nationality and freedom. Somewhat of the deep indignation and the sacrificial will that nerved the hand of Charlotte Corday, somewhat of the fanaticism that moved the student-assassin of Kotzebue, and, perhaps, a little of the vengeful ire of Ravaillac, at length kindled the Italian blood of the sculptor. He became one of the most determined secret conspirators against the now established usurper. The memoirs of the time speak of his " exaggerated notions," his disdain of life, of the profound gloom that often clouded his soul, of the tears he alternately shed of admiration at the brilliant exploits of the conqueror, and of grief at the wrongs inflicted on the beautiful land of his nativity. " This man," says one fair chronicler of those exciting times, " has a soul of fire." A plot which is stigmatized as nefarious, and, according to rumor, was of the Fieschi stamp, aimed at the life of Bonaparte, when First Consul, was finally discovered, and Ceracchi became legally compromised as one of those pledged to its execution. He was tried, boldly acknowledged his murderous intention, and was condemned to death. Among his fellow-conspirators were two or three republican artists with whom he had become intimate at Rome; they were arrested at the opera, and daggers found upon their persons: the plot is designated in the annals of the time as the Arena Conspiracy. Ceracchi was a Corsican by birth; and, from an ardent admirer, thus became the deadly foe of his great countryman; and the gifted artist, the enthusiastic republican, the vindictive patriot, and the sculptor of Washington—perished on the scaffold.

His bust gives Washington a Roman look, but has been declared to exhibit more truly the expression of the mouth than any other work. Those of Hamilton and Governor Clinton, by this artist, are deemed, by their respective families, as correct as portraits, as they are superior as pieces of statuary. And this is presumptive evidence in favor of the belief that Ceracchi's attachment to the heroic style did not seriously interfere with the general truth of his portraiture.

*Dr, Hosack's Essays .

The design of a statue was, therefore, only realized on the arrival of Houdon. The history of this sculptor is a striking contrast to that of Ceracchi. A native of Versailles, he flourished at an epoch remarkably prolific of original characters in all departments of letters and art. Many of these, especially his own countrymen, have been represented by his chisel. He enjoyed a long and prosperous existence, having survived the taste he initiated, and the friends of his youth, but maintaining a most creditable reputation to his death, which occurred in his eighty-eighth year. He rose to distinction by a new style, which appears to have exhibited, according to the subject, a remarkable simplicity on the one hand, and elaboration on the other. An over-estimate of the effect of details marred his more labored creations; but he had a faculty of catching the air, and a taste in generalizing the conception, both of a real and fanciful subject, which manifested unusual genius. There was an individuality about his best works that won attention and established his fame. Of the ideal kind, two were the subjects of much critical remark, though for different reasons. One of them was intended to exhibit the effect of cold—an idea almost too melodramatic and physical for sculpture, but quite in character for a Frenchman, aiming even in his severe and limited art, at theatrical effect. The other was a statue of Diana—the object of numerous *bon mots*, first, because it was ordered by Catharine of Russia, who, it was generally thought, had no special affinity with the chaste goddess; and, secondly, on account of the voluptuous character given it by the artist, which procured for his Diana the name of Venus. Houdon's bust of Voltaire gained him renown at once in this department of his pursuit, and is a memorable example of his success. How various the characters whose similitudes are perpetuated by his chisel—Gluck and Buffon, Rousseau and D'Alembert, Mirabeau and Washington! Jefferson, in behalf of the State of Virginia, arranged with Houdon at Paris, to undertake the latter commission; and he accompanied Dr. Franklin to the United States. He remained at Mount Vernon long enough to execute a model of Washington's head, and familiarize himself with every detail of his features and the traits of his natural language; but that implicit fidelity, now evident in the busts of our own leading sculptors, was not then in vogue, and the artists of the day were rather adepts in idealizing than in precise imitation of nature; therefore, the result of Houdon's labors, though, in general, satisfactory, cannot be used with the mathematical exactitude, as a guide, which greater attention to minutiæ would have secured. There is a sketch by Stuart indicating some minute errors in the outline of Houdon's bust. On leaving, he presented Washington with the bas-relief which used to hang over his chair in the library at Mount Vernon. He completed the statue after his return to Paris, and in the diary of Gouverneur Morris, is an entry noting his attendance at the artist's studio, to stand for the figure of his illustrious friend, whom, before he became corpulent, he is said to have resembled. He alludes to the circumstance as "being the humble employment of a mannikin;" and adds, "this is literally taking the advice of St. Paul, to be all things to all men." The original cast of the head of this statue is still at Mount Vernon, and the statue itself is the cherished ornament of the Capitol at Richmond, and has been declared, by one of Washington's biographers, to be "as perfect a resemblance, in face and figure, as the art admits;" while, on the other hand, a critic of large and studious observation, who was well acquainted with the appearance of the original, says that, as a likeness, the head is inferior to Ceracchi's bust. The costume is authentic, that Washington wore as commander-in-chief; it has been assailed with the usual arguments—its want of classical effect, and its undignified style; but less

conservative reasoners applaud the truth of the drapery, and the work is endeared as a faithful and unique representation of the man—the only one from life, bequeathed by the art of the sculptor. "Judge Marshall," says Dr. Sparks in a letter to us, "once told me that the head of Houdon's statue at Richmond, seen at a point somewhat removed towards the side, from the front, presented as perfect a resemblance of the living man as he could conceive possible in marble."

REMBRANDT PEALE, when quite young, became the companion of his father's artistic labors. In compliment to the latter, Washington sat for a likeness to the novice of eighteen, who says the honor agitated more than it inspired him, and he solicited his father's intercession and countenance on the memorable occasion. Of the precise value of his original sketch it is difficult to form an accurate opinion, but the mature result of his efforts to produce a portrait of Washington has attained a high and permanent fame. He availed himself of the best remembered points, and always worked with Houdon's bust before him. This celebrated picture is the favorite portrait of a large number of amateurs. It is more dark and mellowed in tint, more elaborately worked up, and, in some respects, more effectively arranged, than any of its predecessors. Enclosed in an oval of well-imitated stone fretwork, vigorous in execution, rich in color, the brow, eyes, and mouth, full of character—altogether it is a striking and impressive delineation. That it was thus originally regarded we may infer from the unanimous resolution of the U. S. Senate, in 1832, appropriating two thousand dollars for its purchase, and from the numerous copies of the original, in military costume, belonging to the artist, which have been and are still ordered. Rembrandt Peale is said to be the only living artist who ever saw Washington. In the pamphlet which he issued to authenticate the work, we find the cordial testimony to its fidelity and other merits of Lawrence Lewis, the eldest nephew of Washington: of the late venerable John Vaughan, of Bishop White, Rufus King, Charles Carroll, Edward Livingston, General Smith, Dr. James Thatcher, and Judge Cranch. Chief Justice Marshall says of it: "It is more Washington himself than any portrait I have ever seen;" and Judge Peters explains his approval by declaring "I judge from its effect on my heart."

* * * * * * * * *

No artist enjoyed the opportunities of COLONEL TRUMBULL as the portrayer of Washington. As aide-de-camp he was familiar with his appearance in the prime of his life and its most exciting era. At the commencement of the Revolutionary struggle, this officer was among the most active, and essentially promoted the secure retreat of the American forces, under General Sullivan, from Rhode Island; he, therefore, largely partook of the spirit of those days, came freely under the influence of Washington's character as it pervaded the camp, and had ample time and occasion to observe the Commander-in-Chief in his military aspect, and in social intercourse, on horseback, in the field, and at the hospital board, in the councils of war, when silently meditating his great work, when oppressed with anxiety, animated by hope, or under the influence of those quick and and strong feelings he so early learned to subdue. After Trumbull's resignation, and when far away from the scene of Washington's glory, he painted his head from recollection, so distinctly was every feature and expression impressed upon his mind. In the autumn of 1789 he returned from Europe, and began his sketches of the chiefs and statesmen of the Revolution, afterwards embodied in the pictures that adorn the Rotunda of the Capitol, and the originals of which, invaluable for their authenticity, may now be seen in the gallery at New Haven. Here is preserved the most spirited portrait of Washington

that exists—the only reflection of him as a soldier of freedom worthy of the name, drawn from life. The artist's own account of this work is given in his memoirs : "In 1792 I was again in Philadelphia, and there painted the portrait of General Washington, now placed in the gallery at New Haven, the best, certainly of those that I painted, and the best, in my estimation, which exists in heroic and military character. The city of Charleston, S. C., instructed Mr. W. R. Smith, one of the representatives of South Carolina, to employ me to paint for them a portrait of the great man, and I undertook it *con amore*, as the commission was unlimited, meaning to give his military character at the most sublime moment of its exertion—the evening previous to the battle of Trenton, when, viewing the vast superiority of his approaching enemy, the impossibility of again crossing the Delaware or retreating down the river, he conceives the plan of returning by a night march into the country from which he had been driven, thus cutting off the enemy's communication and destroying the depot of stores at Brunswick." There is a singular felicity in this choice of the moment to represent Washington, for it combines all the most desirable elements of expression characteristic of the man. It is a moment, not of brilliant achievement, but of intrepid conception, when the dignity of thought is united with the sternness of resolve, and the enthusiasm of a daring experiment kindles the habitual mood of self-control in an unwonted glow. As the artist unfolded his design to Washington, the memory of that eventful night thrilled him anew ; he rehearsed the circumstances, described the scene, and his face was lighted up as the memorable crisis in his country's fate and his own career was renewed before him. He spoke of the desperate chance, the wild hope, and the hazardous but fixed determination of that hour ; and, as the gratified painter declares, "looked the scene." "The result," he says, "was, in my own opinion, eminently successful, and the General was satisfied." Whether the observer of the present day accedes to the opinion, that he "happily transferred to the canvas the lofty expression of his animated countenance, the resolve to conquer or perish ; " whether the picture comes up to his preconceived ideal of the heroic view of Washington or not, he must admit that it combines great apparent fidelity, with more spirit and the genius of action, than all other portraits.*

Although not so familiar as Stuart's, numerous good copies of Trumbull's Washington, some from his own, and others by later pencils, have rendered it almost as well known in this country. Contemporaries give it a decided preference ; it recalled the leader of the American armies, the man who was "first in the hearts of his countrymen," ere age relaxed the facial muscles and modified the decisive lines of the mouth; it was associated in their minds with the indignant rebuke at Monmouth, the brilliant surprise at Trenton, and the heroic patience at Valley Forge ; it was the Washington of their youth who led the armies of freedom, the modest, the brave, the vigilant and triumphant chief. Ask an elderly Knickerbocker what picture will give you a good idea of Washington, and he will confidently refer you, as the testimony his father has taught him, to Trumbull's portrait in the City Hall. When Lafayette first beheld a copy of this picture, in a gentleman's house in New Jersey, on his visit to this country, a few years before his death, he uttered an exclamation of delight at its resemblance. An excellent copy, by Vanderlyn, adorns the U. S. House of Representatives, for the figure in which, Geo. B. Rapalye, Esq., a highly respected citizen of New York, stood with exemplary patience, for many days, wearing a coat, perhaps the first specimen of American broadcloth, that had been worn by Washington. The air of the figure is as manly and elegant,

the look as dignified and commanding, and the brow as practical in its moulding, as in Stuart's representation of him at a more advanced period ; but the face is less round, the profile more aquiline, the complexion has none of the fresh and ruddy hue, and the hair is not yet blanched. It is, altogether, a keener, more active, less thoughtful, but equally graceful and dignified man. He stands in an easy attitude, in full uniform, with his hand on his horse's neck; and the most careless observer, though ignorant of the subject, would recognize, at a glance, the image of a brave man, an intelligent officer, and an honorable gentleman. The excellent engraving of Durand has widely disseminated Trumbull's spirited head of Washington.

Although the concurrent testimony of those best fitted to judge, give the palm to Trumbull's portrait, now in the gallery at New Haven, as the most faithful likeness of Washington in his prime, this praise seems to refer rather to the general expression and air, than to the details of the face. Trumbull often failed in giving a satisfactory likeness ; he never succeeded in rendering the complexion, as is obvious by comparing that of his picture in the New York City Hall with any or all of Stuart's heads; the former is yellow, and gives the idea of a bilious temperament, while the latter, in every instance, have the florid ruddy tint, which, we are assured, was characteristic of Washington, and indicative of his active habits, constant exposure to the elements, and Saxon blood. The best efforts of Trumbull were his first, careful sketches; he never could elaborate with equal effect; the collection of small, original heads, from which his historical pictures were drawn, are invaluable, as the most authentic resemblances in existence of our revolutionary heroes. They have a genuine look and a spirited air, seldom discoverable in the enlarged copies.

"Washington," says Trumbull, in describing the picture, "is represented standing on elevated ground, on the south side of the Creek at Trenton, a little below the stone bridge and mill. He has a reconnoitring glass in his hand, with which he is supposed to have been examining the strength of the hostile army, pouring into and occupying Trenton, which he had just abandoned at their appearance; and, having ascertained their great superiority, as well in numbers as discipline, he is supposed to have been meditating how to avoid the apparently impending ruin, and to have just formed the plan which he executed during the night. This led to the splendid success at Princeton on the following morning; and in the estimation of the great Frederic, placed his military character on a level with that of the greatest commanders of ancient or modern times. Behind, and near, an attendant holds his horse. Every minute article of dress, down to the buttons and spurs, and the buckles and straps of the horse furniture, were carefully painted from the different objects."

The gentleman who was the medium of this commission to Trumbull, praised his work; but aware of the popular sentiment, declared it not calm and peaceful enough to satisfy those for whom it was intended. With reluctance, the painter asked Washington, overwhelmed as he was with official duty, to sit for another portrait, which represents him in his every-day aspect, and, therefore, better pleased the citizens of Charleston. "Keep this picture," said Washington to the artist, speaking of the first experiment, "and finish it to your own taste." When the Connecticut State Society of Cincinnati dissolved, a few of the members purchased it as a gift to Yale College.

GILBERT STUART'S most cherished anticipation when he left England for America, was that of executing a portrait of Washington. A consummate artist in a branch which his own triumphs had proved

could be rendered of the highest interest, he eagerly sought illustrious subjects for his pencil. This enthusiasm was increased in the present case, by the unsullied fame and the exalted European reputation of the American hero, by the greatest personal admiration of his character, and by the fact that no satisfactory representation existed abroad of a man whose name was identical with more than Roman patriotism and magnanimity. Stuart, by a series of masterly portraits, had established his renown in London; he had mingled in the best society; his vigorous mind was cognizant of all the charms that wit and acumen lend to human intercourse, and he knew the power which genius and will may so readily command. His own nature was more remarkable for strength than refinement; he was eminently fitted to appreciate practical talents and moral energy; the brave truth of nature rather than her more delicate effects, were grasped and reproduced by his skill; he might not have done justice to the ideal contour of Shelley, or the gentle features of Mary of Scotland, but could have perfectly reflected the dormant thunder of Mirabeau's countenance, and the argumentative abstraction that knit the brows of Samuel Johnson. He was a votary of truth in her boldest manifestations, and a delineator of character in its normal and sustained elements. The robust, the venerable, the moral picturesque, the mentally characteristic, he seized by intuition; those lines of physiognomy which channelled by will the map of inward life, which years of consistent thought and action trace upon the countenance, the hue that, to an observant eye, indicates almost the daily vocation, the air suggestive of authority or obedience, firmness or vacillation, the glance of the eye, which is the measure of natural intelligence and the temper of the soul, the expression of the mouth that infallibly betrays the disposition, the tint of hair and mould of features, not only attesting the period of life but revealing what that life has been, whether toilsome or inert, self-indulgent or adventurous, careworn or pleasurable—these, and such as these records of humanity, Stuart transferred, in vivid colors and most trustworthy outlines, to the canvas. Instinctive, therefore, was his zeal to delineate Washington; a man, who, of all the sons of fame, most clearly and emphatically wrote his character in deeds upon the world's heart, whose traits required no imagination to give them effect and no metaphysical insight to unravel their perplexity, but were brought out by the exigencies of the time in distinct relief, as bold, fresh, and true as the verdure of spring and the lights of the firmament, equally recognized by the humblest peasant and the most gifted philosopher.

To trace the history of each of Stuart's portraits of Washington would prove of curious interest. One of his letters to a relative, dated the second of November, 1794, enables us to fix the period of the earliest experiment. "The object of my journey," he says, "is only to secure a portrait of the President and finish yours." One of the succeeding pictures was bought from the artist's studio by Mr. Tayloe, of Washington, and is, at present, owned by his son, B. Ogle Tayloe, Esq.; another was long in the possession of Madison, and is now in that of Gov. E. Coles, of Philadelphia. The full-length, in the Presidential mansion, at the seat of Government, was saved through the foresight and care of the late Mrs. Madison, when the city was taken by the British in the last war. Stuart, however, always denied that this copy was by him. Another portrait of undoubted authenticity was offered to and declined by Congress, a few years ago, and is owned by a Boston gentleman; and one graced the hospitable dwelling of Samuel Williams, the London banker. For a long period artistic productions on this side of the water were subjects of ridicule. Tudor not inaptly called the New England country meeting-houses "wooden lanterns;" almost every town boasted an arch-

itectural monstrosity, popularly known as somebody's "folly;" the rows of legs in Trumbull's picture of the Signing of the Declaration, obtained for it the sarcastic name, generally ascribed to John Randolph, of "the shin piece;" and Stuart's full length, originally painted for Lord Lansdowne, with one arm resting on his sword hilt, and the other extended, was distinguished among artists by the title of the "tea-pot portrait," from the resemblance of the outline to the handle and spout of that domestic utensil. The feature, usually exaggerated in poor copies, and the least agreeable in the original, is the mouth, resulting from the want of support of those muscles consequent on the loss of teeth, a defect which Stuart vainly attempted to remedy by inserting cotton between the jaw and the lips; and Wilson Peale more permanently, but not less ineffectually sought to relieve by a set of artificial teeth.

We have seen in western New York, a cabinet head of Washington which bears strong evidence of Stuart's pencil, and is traced directly by its present owner to his hand, which was purchased of the artist and presented to Mr. Gilbert, a member of Congress from Columbia County, New York, a gentleman who held the original in such veneration that he requested, on his death-bed, to have the picture exhibited to his fading gaze, as it was the last object he desired to behold on earth. The remarks of the latter artist indicate what a study he made of his illustrious sitter; "There were," he said, "features in his face totally different from what he had observed in any other human being; the sockets of the eyes, for instance, were larger than what he ever met with before, and the upper part of the nose broader. All his features were indicative of the strongest passions; yet, like Socrates, his judgment and great self-command made him appear a man of a different cast in the eyes of the world." The color of his eyes were a light grayish blue, but according to Mr. Custis, Stuart painted them of a deeper blue, saying, "in a hundred years they will have faded to the right color."

While Congress was in session at Philadelphia, in 1794, Stuart went thither with a letter of introduction to Washington, from John Jay. He first met his illustrious subject on a reception evening, and was spontaneously accosted by him with a greeting of dignified urbanity. Familiar as was the painter with eminent men, he afterwards declared that no human being ever awakened in him the sentiment of reverence to such a degree. For a moment, he lost his self-possession—with him an experience quite unprecedented—and it was not until several interviews that he felt himself enough at home with his sitter to give the requisite concentration of mind to his work. This was owing not less to the personal impressiveness of Washington — which all who came in contact with him felt and acknowledged—than to the profound respect and deep interest which the long anticipations of the artist had fostered in his own mind. He failed, probably from this cause, in his first experiment. No portrait-painter has left such a reputation for the faculty of eliciting expression by his social tact, as Stuart. He would even defer his task upon any pretext until he succeeded in making the sitter, as he said, "look like himself." To induce a natural, unconscious, and characteristic mood, was his initiative step in the execution of a portrait. Innumerable are the anecdotes of his ingenuity and persistence in carrying out this habit. More or less conversant with every topic of general interest, and endowed with rare conversational ability and knowledge of character, he seldom failed to excite the ruling passion, magnetize the prominent idiosyncrasy, or awaken the professional interest of the occupant of his throne, whether statesman farmer, actor, judge or merchant; and his fund of good stories, narrated with dramatic effect, by enchaining the attention or enlisting the

sympathies, usually made the delighted listener self-oblivious and demonstrative, when, with an alertness and precision like magic, the watchful limner transferred the vital identity of his pre-occupied and fascinated subject, with almost breathing similitude. In Washington, however, he found a less flexible character upon which to scintillate his wit and open his anecdotical battery. Facility of adaptation seldom accompanies great individuality ; and a man whose entire life has been oppressed with responsibility, and in whom the prevalent qualities are conscience and good sense, can scarcely be expected to possess humor and geniality in the same proportion as self-control and reflection. On the professional themes of agriculture and military science, Washington was always ready to converse, if not with enthusiasm, at least in an attentive and intelligent strain ; but the artillery of repartee, and the sallies of fancy, made but a slight impression upon his grave and reserved nature. He was deficient in language—far more a man of action than of words—and had been obliged to think too much on vast interests, to "carry America in his brain," as one of his eulogists has aptly said, to readily unbend in colloquial diversion. By degrees, however, the desirable relation was established between himself and the artist, who, of several portraits, justly gave the preference to the Lansdowne picture and the unfinished one now possessed by the Boston Athenæum. They, doubtless, are the most perfect representations of Washington, as he looked at the time they were executed, and will ever be the standards and resource of subsequent delineators. The latter, supposed by many to have been his original "study," engaged his attention for months. The freshness of color, the studious modelling of the brow, the mingling of clear purpose and benevolence in the eye, and a thorough nobleness and dignity in the whole head, realize all the most intelligent admirer of the original has imagined—not, indeed, when thinking of him as the intrepid leader of armies, but in the last analysis and complete image of the hero in retirement, in all the consciousness of a sublime career, unimpeachable fidelity to a national trust, and the eternal gratitude of a free people. It is this masterpiece of Stuart that has not only perpetuated, but distributed over the globe the resemblance of Washington. It has been sometimes lamented, that so popular a work does not represent him in the aspect of a successful warrior, or in the flush of youth ; but there seems to be a singular harmony between this venerable image—so majestic, benignant, and serene—and the absolute character and peculiar example of Washington, separated from what was purely incidental and contingent in his life. Self-control, endurance, dauntless courage, loyalty to a just but sometimes desperate cause, hope through the most hopeless crisis, and a tone of feeling the most exalted, united to habits of candid simplicity, are better embodied in such a calm, magnanimous, mature image, full of dignity and sweetness, than if portrayed in battle array or melodramatic attitude. Let such pictures as David's Napoleon—with prancing steed, flashing eye, and waving sword—represent the mere victor and military genius ; but he who spurned a crown, knew no watchword but duty, no goal but freedom and justice, and no reward but the approval of conscience and the gratitude of a country, lives more appropriately, both to memory and in art, under the aspect of a finished life, crowned with the harvest of honor and peace, and serene in the consummation of disinterested purpose.

A letter of Stuart's which appeared in the New York *Evening Post* in 1853,* attested by three gentlemen of Boston, with one from Wash-

* Extract *from article in Evening Post, N. Y. March* 15th, 1853 :

It may set this question at rest to state, that Stuart himself has given an account of all the portraits of Washington that he painted.

ington making the appointment for a sitting, proves the error long current in regard both to the dates and the number of this artist's original portraits. He there distinctly states that he never executed but three from life, the first of which was so unsatisfactory that he destroyed it; the second was the picture for Lord Lansdowne; and the third, the one now belonging to the Boston Athenæum. Of these originals he made twenty-six copies. The finishing touches were put to the one in September, 1795, and to the other, at Philadelphia, in the spring of 1796. This last it appears by a letter of Mr. Custis, which we have examined, was undertaken against the desire of Washington, and at the earnest solicitation of his wife, who wished a portrait from life of her illustrious husband, to be placed among the other family pictures at Mount Vernon. For this express purpose, and to gratify her, the artist commenced the work, and Washington agreed to sit once more. It was left, intentionally, unfinished, and when subsequently claimed by Mr. Custis, who offered a premium upon the original price, Stuart excused himself, much to the former's dissatisfaction, on the plea that it was a requisite legacy for his children. Simultaneously with the Lansdowne portrait the artist executed for William Constable that now in the possession of his grandson, Henry E. Pierrepont, Esq., of Brooklyn, L. I. Motives of personal friendship induced the artist to exert his best skill in this instance; it is a fac-simile of its prototype, and the expression has been thought even more noble and of higher significance, more in accordance with the traditional character of the subject, than the Athenæum picture. It has the eyes looking off, and not at the spectator, as in the latter. Mr. Constable, the original proprietor, was aid to General Washington; and when Lafayette visited this country in 1824, upon entering the drawing room at Brooklyn Heights where the picture hangs, he ex-

A gentleman of Philadelphia has in his possession the originals of the following documents. [*Edit. Post.*]—

Sir :—I am under promise to Mrs. Bingham, to sit for you to-morrow at nine o'clock, and wishing to know if it be convenient to you that I should do so, and whether it shall be at your own house, (as she talked of the State-House.) I send this note to you to ask information.—I am, Sir, your obedient servt.,

GEO. WASHINGTON.

Monday Evening, *11th April*, 1796.

This letter was endorsed in Washington's handwriting,—Mr. Stuart, Chestnut Street." At the foot of the manuscript are the following certificates :—

In looking over my papers to find one that had the signature of George Washington, I found this, asking me when he should sit for his portrait, which is now owned by Samuel Williams, of London. I have thought it proper it should be his, especially as he owns the only original painting I ever made of Washington, except one I own myself. I painted a third, but rubbed it out. I now present this to his brother, Timo Williams, for said Samuel.

Boston, *9th day of March*, 1887. GT. STUART.

Attest—J. P. Davis.
W. Dutton.
L. Baldwin.

B.—Mr. Stuart painted in ye *winter season* his first portrait of Washington, but destroyed it. The next painting was ye one owned by S. Williams; the third Mr. S. now has —two only remain, as above stated. T. W.

The picture alluded to in the above note of the late Timo Williams, as being then in Mr. Stuart's possession, is the one now in the Boston Athenæum: and that which belonged to the late Samuel Williams, Esq., alluded to in Mr. Stuart's note above quoted, is yet extant and owned by the son of an American gentleman (*John D. Lewis, Esq.*,) who died in London some years since, where it still remains. Mr. Williams had paid for it at the sale of the personal effects of the Marquis of Lansdowne,—to whom it was originally presented by Mr. Bingham, of Philadelphia,—two thousand guineas.

It is this portrait, full length and life size, from which the bad engraving was made by Heath, so many copies of which are still to be seen in this country.

claimed, "That is my old friend, indeed!" Colonel Nicholson Fish, and General Van Rensselaer, joined in attesting the superior correctness of the likeness.

The usual objection to Stuart's Washington is a certain feebleness about the lines of the mouth, which does not correspond with the distinct outline of the frontal region, the benign yet resolved eye, and the harmonious dignity of the entire head; but this defect was an inevitable result of the loss of teeth, and their imperfect substitution by a false set. In view of the state of the arts in this country at the period, and the age of Washington, we cannot but congratulate ourselves that we have so pleasing and satisfactory a portrait, and exclaim, with Leslie, "how fortunate it was that a painter existed in the time of Washington, who could hand him down looking like a gentleman!" Dr. Marshall, brother of the Chief Justice, said that Washington did not resemble Pine's portrait, when he knew him, that Wertmuller's had too French a look, another by Wertmuller had eyes too light, but that Stuart's was prodigiously "like."

Opinions are quite diverse in regard to the WERTMULLER portrait. There are many points of executive merit in the original not completely rendered in the engraving; the air of the head, the grave and refined look, well-arranged hair, neat ruffles, and old-fashioned coat, sprinkled at the shoulders with powder, at once gave the somewhat vague yet unmistakable impression of "the portrait of a gentleman." There is an expression of firmness and clear-sightedness, and an erect, brave attitude which reveals the soldier; and there is more animation than we are accustomed to see in portraits of Washington. The latter trait is probably that which led to the selection of this picture as an illustration to Irving's Biography.

ADOLPHE ULRIC WERTMULLER was a devoted student of art, but his taste and style were chiefly formed under the influence of the old French Academy — and long before the delicate adherence to nature which now redeems the best modern pictures of French artists, had taken the place of a certain artificial excellence and devotion to mere effect. The career of this accomplished painter was marked by singular vicissitudes;—a native of Stockholm, after preparatory studies there, he went to Paris, and remained several years, acquiring both fame and fortune by his pencil; the latter, however, was nearly all lost by the financial disasters at the outbreak of the Revolution, and Wertmuller embarked for America, and arrived in Philadelphia in 1794. He was well received and highly estimated; Washington sat to him; * in 1796 he returned to Europe, but, after a brief period, the failure of a commercial house at Stockholm, in whose care he had placed his funds, so vexed him, that he returned to Philadelphia in 1800, where he soon after exhibited his large and beautiful picture of "Danæ"—which, while greatly admired for the executive talent it displayed, was too exceptional a subject to meet with the aprobation of the sober citizens, whose sense of propriety was so much more vivid than their enthusiasm for art. Wertmuller soon after married a lady of Swedish descent, purchased a farm in Delaware county, Penn. and resided there in much comfort and tranquillity, until his death in 1812. His pictures were sold at auction; and a small copy of the "Danæ" brought $500; the original, some years after, being purchased in New York for three times that sum. In an appreciative notice of him, which appeared soon after his death in a leading literary journal, there is the following just reference to his portrait of Washington: "It has been much praised and frequently copied on the continent of Europe; but it has a forced and foreign air, into

* See notice of Wertmuller in *Analectic Magazine*, 1815.

which the painter seems to have fallen by losing sight of the noble presence before him, in an attempt after ideal d gnity." *

Wertmuller was eminent in his day for miniatures and oil portraits. Our first knowledge of him was derived from the superb picture of Danæ, which, for some time, occupied a nook, curtained from observation, in the studio of the late Henry Inman, of New York, and it was exhibited in Washington City, thirty years ago. There was fine drawing and rich color in this voluptuous creation—enough to convey a high idea of the skill and grace of the artist. With this picture vividly in the mind, it is difficult to realize that the chaste, subdued portrait of Washington was from the same hand.

It was confidently asserted, that Washington invariably noted in his diary his sittings to portrait painters, and that no entry appears in reference to this picture. Its claim to originality was, therefore, questioned. With the impatience of the whole subject, however, that Washington confessed at last, he may have ceased to record what became a penance; and were the picture satisfactory in other respects, we should not be disposed to complain that it was skilfully combined from other portraits. But, in our view, the engraving at least, has intrinsic faults. It is neither the Washington familiar to observation as portrayed, nor to fancy as idealized. There is a self-conscious expression about the mouth, not visible in Stuart's or Trumbull's heads, and out of character in itself; the eyebrows are raised so as to indicate either a supercilious or a surprised mood, both alien to Washington's habitual state of mind; it is impossible for the brows to be knit between the eyes, and arched over them at the same time, as in this engraving; the eyes themselves have a staring look; the animation so much wanted is here obtained at the expense of that serenity which was a normal characteristic of the man; we miss the modesty, the latent power, the placid strength, so intimately associated with the looks as well as the nature of Washington; the visage is too elongated; compared with the Athenæum portrait this picture has a commonplace expression; it does not approach it in moral elevation; we should pass it by in a gallery as the likeness of a gentleman and a brave officer, but not linger over it as the incarnation of disinterested, magnanimous, loyal courage, such as lent a certain unconscious, impressive, and superior aspect to Washington, and divided him, by an infinite distance, from the mob of vulgar heroes.

* * * * * * * * *

The latest and most triumphant attempt to embody and illustrate the features, form and character of Washington in statuary, was made by the late American sculptor—THOMAS CRAWFORD. How well he studied, and how adequately he reproduced the head of his illustrious subject, may be realized by a careful examination of the noble and expressive marble bust of Washington from his chisel, now in the possession of John Ward, Esq., of New York. Essentially, and as far as contour and proportions are concerned, based upon the model of Hudon,—this beautiful and majestic effigy is instinct with the character of its subject, so that while satisfactory in detail as a resemblance caught from nature, it, at the same time, is executed in a spirit perfectly accordant with the traditional impressions and the instinctive ideas whence we derive our ideal of the man, the chieftain, and the patriot; the moulding of the brow, the *pose* of the head, and especially the expression of the mouth, are not less expressive than effective. But the crowning achievement of this artist is his equestrian statue executed for the State of Virginia, and now the grand trophy and ornament of her Capitol. "When on the evening of his arrival, Crawford went to see, for the first time,

* Analectic Magazine.

his Washington in bronze at the Munich foundry, he was surprised at the dusky precincts of the vast area; suddenly torches flashed illumination on the magnificent horse and rider, and simultaneously burst forth from a hundred voices a song of triumph and jubilee; thus the delighted Germans congratulated their gifted brother and hailed the sublime work—typical to them of American freedom, patriotism, and genius. The Bavarian king warmly recognized its original merits and consummate effect; the artists would suffer no inferior hands to pack and despatch it to the seaside; peasants greeted its triumphal progress; the people of Richmond were emulous to share the task of conveying it from the quay to Capitol Hill; mute admiration followed by ecstatic cheers, hailed its unveiling, and the most gracious native eloquence inaugurated its erection. We might descant upon the union of majesty and spirit in the figure of Washington, and the vital truth of action in the horse, the air of command and of rectitude, the martial vigor and grace, so instantly felt by the popular heart, and so critically praised by the adept in sculpture cognizant of the difficulties to overcome, and the impression to be absolutely conveyed by such a work in order to make it at once true to nature and to character; we might repeat the declaration that no figure ancient or modern, so entirely illustrates the classical definition of oratory, as consisting in action, as the statue of Patrick Henry, one of the grand accessories of the work,—which seems instinct with that memorable utterance, "Give me liberty, or give me death!" By a singular and affecting coincidence, the news of Crawford's death reached the United States simultaneously with the arrival of the ship containing this colossal bronze statue of Washington—his "crowning achievement." In this work, the first merit is *naturalness;* although full of equine ardor, the graceful and noble animal is evidently subdued by his rider; calm power is obvious in the man; restrained eagerness in the horse; Washington's left hand is on the snaffle bridle, which is drawn back; he sits with perfect ease and dignity, the head and face a little turned to the left, as if his attention had just been called in that direction, either in expectancy, or to give an order; he points forward and a little upwards; the figure is erect, the chest thrown forward, the knees pressed to the saddle, the heel nearly beneath the shoulder, and the sole of the foot almost horizontal. The seat is a military, and not a hunting seat; the horse is recognized by one acquainted with breeds, as "a charger of Arab blood."

* * * * * * * * *

His hands were large, as became one inured to practical achievement; his forehead was of that square mould that accompanies an executive mind, not swelling at the temples, as in the more ideal conformation of poetical men; a calm and benevolent light usually gleamed from his eyes, and they flashed at times, with valorous purpose or stern indignation; but they were not remarkably large as in persons of more fluency, and foretold Washington's natural deficiency in language, proclaiming the man of deeds, not words; neither had they the liquid hue of extreme sensibility, nor the varying light of an unsubdued temperament; their habitual expression was self-possessed, serene and thoughtful. There was a singular breadth to the face, invariably preserved by Stuart, but not always by Trumbull, who often gives an aquiline and somewhat elongated visage: no good physiognomist can fail to see in his nose that dilation of nostril and prominence of the ridge which belong to resolute and spirited characters; the distance between the eyes marks a capacity to measure distances and appreciate form and the relation of space; but these special traits are secondary to the carriage of the body, and the expression of the whole face, in which appear to have blended an unpar-

alleled force of impression. When fully possessed of the details of his remarkable countenance, and inspired by the record of his career, we turn from the description of those who beheld the man, on horseback, at the head of an army, presiding over the national councils, or seated in the drawing-room, to any of the portraits, we feel that no artist ever caught his best look, or transmitted his features when kindled by that matchless soul. If we compare any selection of engravings with each other, so inferior are the greater part extant, we find such glaring discrepancies, that doubts multiply; and we realize that art never did entire justice to the idea, the latent significance, and the absolute character of Washington. There is dignity in Houdon's bust, an effective facial angle in the crayon of Sharpless, and elegance, wisdom and benignity in Stuart's head; but what are they, each and all, in contrast with the visage we behold in fancy, and revere in heart? It has been ingeniously remarked, that the letters received by an individual indicate his character better than those he writes, because they suggest what he elicits from others, and thereby furnish the best key to his scope of mind and temper of soul; on the same principle the likeness drawn, not from the minute descriptions, but the vivid impressions of those brought into intimate contact with an illustrious character, are the most reliable materials for his portrait; they reflect the man in the broad mirror of humanity, and are the faithful daguerreotypes which the vital radiance of his nature leaves on the consciousness of mankind.

* * * * * * * * *

II.

WASHINGTON'S FAREWELL ADDRESS.

(The original MS. of the Farewell Address, in Washington's handwriting, and with his revisions and alterations, having been purchased by JAMES LENOX, Esq., of New York, that gentleman caused a few copies of it, with some illustrative documents, to be printed for private distribution. By permission of Mr. Lenox it is here reprinted, with the alterations, and with his explanatory remarks.

PREFACE.

This reprint of Washington's Farewell Address to the people of the United States, is made from the original manuscript recently sold in Philadelphia by the Administrators of the late Mr. David C. Claypoole, in whose possession it had been from the date of its first publication. The paper is *entirely* in the autograph of Washington: no one acquainted with his handwriting can inspect it, and doubt for a moment the statements to that effect made by Mr. Claypoole and Mr. Rawle.

Upon examining the manuscript, it was found that, in addition to its importance as an historical document, and its value from being in the autograph of Washington, it was of great interest as a literary curiosity, and threw light upon the disputed question of the authorship of the Address. It clearly shows the process by which that paper was wrought into the form in which it was first given to the public; and notes written on the margin of passages and paragraphs, which have been erased, prove, almost beyond a doubt, that this draft was submitted to the judgment of other persons. Such memoranda was unnecessary either for Washington's own direction on a subsequent revision, or for the guidance of the printer; but he might very naturally thus note the reasons which had led him to make the alterations before he asked the advice and opinion of his friends. It seems probable, therefore, that this is the very draft sent to General Hamilton and Chief Justice Jay, as related in the letter of the latter. Some of the alterations, however, were evidently made during the writing of the paper; for in a few instances a part, and even the whole, of a sentence is struck out, which afterwards occurs in the body of the address.

Mr. Claypoole's description of the appearance of the manuscript is very accurate. There are many alterations, corrections and interlineations: and whole sentences and paragraphs are sometimes obliterated. All these, however, have been deciphered without much trouble, and carefully noted.

It was thought best to leave the text in this edition as it was first

printed: only two slight verbal variations were found between the corrected manuscript, and the common printed copies. All the interlineations and alterations are inserted in brackets [ ], and where, in any case, words or sentences have been struck out, either with or without corrections in the text to supply their place, these portions have been deciphered nd are printed in notes at the foot of the page. The reader will thus be enabled to perceive at a glance the changes made in the composition of the address; and if the draft made by General Hamilton, and read by him to Mr. Jay, should be published, it will be seen how far Washington adopted the modifications and suggestions made by them.

When this preface was thus far prepared for the press, an opportunity was afforded, through the kindness of John C. Hamilton, Esq., to examine several letters which passed between Washington and General Hamilton relating to the Address, and also a copy of it in the handwriting of the latter. It appears from the communications that the President, both in sending to him a rough draft of the document, and at subsequent dates, requested him to prepare such an Address as he thought would be appropriate to the occasion; that Washington consulted him particularly, and most minutely, on many points connected with it; and that at different times General Hamilton did forward to the President three drafts of such a paper. The first was sent back to him with suggestions for its correction and enlargement : from the second draft thus altered and improved, the manuscript now printed may be supposed to have been prepared by Washington, and transmitted for final examination to General Hamilton and Judge Jay; and with it the third draft was returned to the President, and may probably yet be found among his papers.

The copy in the possession of Mr. Hamilton is probably the second of these three drafts ; it is very much altered and corrected throughout. In comparing it with that in Washington's autograph. the sentiments are found to be the same, and the words used are very frequently identical. Some of the passages erased in the manuscript are in the draft ; three paragraphs, viz. those on pages 50, 51, and 52 have nothing corresponding to them in the draft ; but a space is left in it, evidently for the insertion of additional matter. The comparison of these two papers is exceedingly curious. It is difficult to conceive how two persons could express the same ideas in substantially the same language, and yet with much diversity in the construction of the sentences, and the position of the words.

J. L.

New York, *April* 12, 1850.

FAREWELL ADDRESS.

FRIENDS, AND FELLOW-CITIZENS :

The period for a new election of a Citizen, to administer the Executive Government of the United States, being not far distant, and the time actually arrived, when your thoughts must be employed in designating the person, who is to be clothed with that important trust [*], it appears to me proper, especially as it may conduce to a more distinct expression of the public voice, that I should now apprise you of the resolution I have formed, to decline being considered among the number of those, out of whom a choice is to be made.

I beg you at the same time, to do me the justice to be assured, that this resolution has not been taken, without a strict regard to all the considerations appertaining to the relation, which binds a dutiful citizen to his country—and that, in withdrawing the tender of service which silence in my situation might imply, I am influenced by no diminution of zeal for your future interest, no deficiency of grateful respect for your past kindness; but [am supported by] † a full conviction that the step is compatible with both.

The acceptance of, and continuance hitherto in, the office to which your suffrages have twice called me, have been a uniform sacrifice of inclination to the opinion of duty, and to a deference for what appeared to be your desire.—I constantly hoped, that it would have been much earlier in my power, consistently with motives which I was not at liberty to disregard, to return to that retirement, from which I had been reluctantly drawn.—The strength of my inclination to do this, previous to the last election, had even led to the preparation of an address to declare it to you ; but mature reflection on the then perplexed and critical posture of affairs with foreign Nations, and the unanimous advice of persons entitled to my confidence impelled me to abandon the idea.—

I rejoice that the state of your concerns, external as well as internal, no longer renders the pursuit of inclination incompatible with the sentiment of duty, or propriety; and [am persuaded]‡ whatever partiality [may be retained]§ for my services, [that]‖ in the present circumstances of our country [you] will not disapprove my determination to retire.

The impressions, [with]¶ which I first [undertook]** the arduous trust, were explained on the proper occasion. In the discharge of this trust, I will only say that I have, with good intentions, contributed [towards]†† the organization and administration of the government, the best exertions of which a very fallible judgment was capable. Not unconscious, in the outset, of the inferiority of my qualifications, experience in my own eyes, [perhaps] still more in the eyes of others, has [strengthened]‡‡ the motives to diffidence of myself; and every day the increasing weight of years admonishes me more and more, that the shade of retirement is as necessary to me as it will be welcome.—Satisfied that if any circum-

‡ that ¶ under * for another term.
§ any portion of you may yet retain ** accepted
‖ even they †† to ‡‡ not lessened † act under

stances have given peculiar value to my services, they were temporary, I have the consolation to believe, that, while choice and prudence invite me to quit the political scene, patriotism does not forbid it. [*]

In looking forward to the moment, which is [intended] to terminate the career of my public life, my feelings do not permit me to suspend the deep acknowledgment [of]† that debt of gratitude which I owe to my beloved country,—for the many honors it has conferred upon me; still more for the steadfast confidence with which it has supported me; and for the opportunities I have thence enjoyed of manifesting my inviolable attachment, by services faithful and persevering, though [in usefulness unequal]‡ to my zeal.—If benefits have resulted to our country from these services, let it always be remembered to your praise, and as an instructive example in our annals, that [§] under circumstances in which the Passions agitated in every direction were liable to [mislead],‖ amidst appearances sometimes dubious, vicissitudes of fortune often discouraging—in situations in which not unfrequently want of success has countenanced the spirit of criticism [the constancy of your support] was the essential prop of the efforts and [a]¶ guarantee of the plans by which they were effected. Profoundly penetrated with this idea, I shall carry it with me to the grave, as a strong incitement to unceasing vows [**] that Heaven may continue to you the choicest tokens of its beneficence —that your union and brotherly affection may be perpetual—that the free constitution, which is the work of your hands, may be sacredly maintained—that its administration in every department may be stamped with wisdom and virtue—that, in fine, the happiness of the people of these States, under the auspices of liberty, may be made complete, by so careful a preservation and so prudent a use of this blessing as will acquire to them the glory [††] of recommending it to the applause, the affection, and adoption of every nation which is yet a stranger to it.

Here, perhaps, I ought to stop.—But a solicitude for your welfare which cannot end but with my life, and the apprehension of danger, natural to that solicitude, [urge me, on an occasion like the present, to offer]‡‡ to your solemn contemplation, and to recommend to your frequent review, some sentiments which are the result of much reflection, of no inconsiderable observation [§§], and which appear to me all important to the permanency of your felicity as a people.—These will be offered to you with the more freedom as you can only see in them, the disinterested warnings of a departing friend, who can [possibly] have no personal motive to bias his counsels.—[Nor can I forget, as an encouragement to it, your indulgent reception of my sentiments on a former and not dissimilar occasion.]

Interwoven as is the love of liberty with every ligament of your hearts, no recommendation of mine is necessary to fortify or confirm the attachment.

* May I also have that of knowing in my retreat that the involuntary errors, I have probably committed, have been the sources of no serious or lasting mischief to our country. I may then expect to realize, without alloy, the sweet enjoyment of partaking, in the midst of my fellow-citizens, the benign influence of good laws under a free government; the ever favorite object of my heart, and the happy reward, I trust, of our mutual cares, dangers and labours.

In the margin opposite this paragraph is the following note in Washington's Autograph also erased, "obliterated to avoid the imputation of affected modesty."

† demanded by

‡ unequal in usefulness

‖ wander and fluctuate

** the only return I can henceforth make

§ the constancy of your support

¶ the

†† or satisfaction

‡‡ encouraged by the remembrance of your indulgent reception of my sentiments on an occasion not dissimilar to the present, urge me to offer

§§ and experience

The Unity of Government which constitutes you one people, is also now dear to you.—It is justly so;—for it is a main Pillar in the Edifice of your real independence; [the support] of your tranquility at home; your peace abroad; of your safety; [*] of your prosperity [†]; of that very Liberty which you so highly prize.—But, as it is easy to forsee, that from [different] ‡ causes, and from different quarters, much pains will be taken, many artifices employed, to weaken in your minds the conviction of this truth:—as this is the point in your [political] fortress against which the batteries of internal and external enemies will be most constantly and actively (though often covertly and insidiously directed, it is of infinite moment, that you should properly estimate the immense value of your national Union to your collective and individual happiness;—that you should cherish [§] a cordial, habitual, and immoveable attachment [to it, accustoming yourselves to think and speak of it as of the Palladium of your political safety and prosperity; watching for its preservation with jealous anxiety; discountenancing whatever may suggest even a suspicion that it can in any event be abandoned, and indignantly frowning upon the first dawning of every attempt to alienate any portion of our Country from the rest, or to enfeeble the sacred ties which now link together the various parts.] ‖—

For this you have every inducement of sympathy and interest.—Citizens [by birth or choice of a common country], ¶ that country has a right to concentrate your affections.—The name of AMERICAN, which belongs to you, in your national capacity, must always exalt the just pride of Patriotism, more than any appellation [**] derived from local discriminations.—With slight shades of difference, you have the same Religion, Manners, Habits and political Principles.—You have in a common cause fought and triumphed together.—The Independence and Liberty you possess are the work of joint councils and joint efforts—of common dangers, sufferings and successes.—

But these considerations, however powerfully they address themselves to your sensibility, are greatly outweighed by those which apply more immediately to your Interest.—Here every portion of our country finds the most commanding motives for carefully guarding and preserving the Union of the whole.

The *North* in an [unrestrained] †† intercourse with the *South*, protected by the equal Laws of a common government, finds in the production of the latter [‡‡] great additional resources of maritime and commercial enterprise—and precious materials of manufacturing industry.—The *South;* in the same intercourse benefitting by the agency of the *North*, sees its agriculture grow and its commerce expand. Turning partly into its own channels the seamen of the *North*, it finds its particular navigation envigorated;—and while it contributes, in different ways, to nourish and increase the general mass of the national navigation, it looks forward to the protection of a maritime strength to which itself is unequally adapted.—The *East*, in a like intercourse with the *West*, already finds, and in the progressive improvement of interior communications, by land and water, will more and more find a valuable vent for the com-

* in every relation † in every shape ‡ various § towards it

‖ that you should accustom yourselves to reverence it as the Palladium of your political safety and prosperity, adapting constantly your words and actions to that momentous idea; that you should watch for its preservation with jealous anxiety, discountenance whatever may suggest a suspicion that it can in any event be abandoned; and frown upon the first dawning of any attempt to alienate any portion of our Country from the rest, or to enfeeble the sacred ties which now link together the several parts.

¶ of a common country by birth or choice

** to be †† unfettered ‡‡ many of the peculiar

modities which it brings from abroad, or manufactures at home.—The *West* derives from the *East* supplies requisite to its growth and comfort, and what is perhaps of still greater consequence, it must of necessity owe the *secure* enjoyment of indispensable *outlets* for its own productions to the weight, influence, and the future maritime strength of the Atlantic side of the Union, directed by an indissoluble community of interest as *one Nation*. [Any other]* tenure by which the *West* can hold this essential advantage, [whether derived] † from its own separate strength or from an apostate and unnatural connection with any foreign Power, must be intrinsically precarious. [‡]

[§] While [then] every part of our Country thus [feels] ‖ an immediate and particular interest in Union, all the parts ¶ [combined cannot fail to find] in the united mass of means and efforts [**] greater strength, greater resource, proportionably greater security from external danger, a less frequent interruption of their peace by foreign Nations; and [what is] †† of inestimable value! they must derive from Union an exemption from those broils and wars between themselves, which [so frequently] ‡‡ afflict neighboring countries, not tied together by the same government; which their own rivalships alone would be sufficient to produce; but which opposite foreign alliances, attachments and intrigues would stimulate and embitter.—Hence likewise they will avoid the necessity of those overgrown Military establishments, which under any form of Government are inauspicious to liberty, and which [are to be regarded] §§ as particularly hostile to Republican Liberty: In this sense it is, that your Union ought to be considered as a main prop of your liberty, and that the love of the one ought to endear to you the preservation of the other.

These considerations speak a persuasive language to [every] ‖‖ reflecting and virtuous mind,—[and] ¶¶ exhibit the continuance of the Union as a primary object of Patriotic desire.—Is there a doubt, whether a common government can embrace so large a sphere? Let experience solve it.—To listen to mere speculation in such a case were criminal.—[We are authorised] *** to hope that a proper organization of the whole, with the auxiliary agency of governments for the respective subdivisions, will afford a happy issue to the experiment. 'Tis well worth a fair and full experiment. [†††] With such powerful and obvious motives to Union, [affecting] ‡‡‡ all parts of our country [§§§], while experience shall not have demonstrated its impracticability, there will always be [reason] ‖‖‖ to distrust the patriotism of those, who in any quarter may endeavour to weaken its bands. [¶¶¶]—

* The

† either

‡ liable every moment to be disturbed by the fluctuating combinations of the primary interests of Europe, which must be expected to regulate the conduct of the Nations of which it is composed.

§ And

‖ finds

¶ of it

** cannot fail to find

†† which is an advantage

‡‡ inevitably

§§ there is reason to regard

‖‖ any

¶¶ they

*** 'Tis natural

††† It may not impossibly be found, that the spirit of party, the machinations of foreign powers, the corruption and ambition of individual citizens are more formidable adversaries to the Unity of our Empire than any inherent difficulties in the scheme. Against these the mounds of national opinion, national sympathy, and national jealousy ought to be raised.

‡‡‡ as

§§§ have

‖‖‖ cause in the effect itself

¶¶¶ Besides the more serious causes already hinted as threatening our Union, there is one less dangerous, but sufficiently dangerous to make it prudent to be upon our guard against it. I allude to the petulance of party differences of opinion. It is not uncommon to hear the irritations which these excite vent themselves in declarations that the different parts of the United States are ill affected to each other, in menaces that the Union will be dissolved by this or that measure. Intimations like these are as indiscreet as they are intemperate.

In contemplating the causes which may disturb our Union, it occurs as matter of serious concern, that [any ground should have been furnished for characterizing parties by] * *Geographical* discriminations—*Northern* and *Southern*—*Atlantic* and *Western*; [whence designing men may endeavor to excite a belief that there is a real difference of local interests and views] † One of the expedients of Party to acquire influence, within particular districts, is to misrepresent the opinions and aims of other districts.—You cannot shield yourselves too much against the jealousies and heartburnings which spring from these misrepresentations;—They tend to render alien to each other those who ought to be bound together by fraternal affection—The inhabitants of our Western country have lately had a useful lesson on this [head.]‡—They have seen, in the negotiation by the Executive, and in the unanimous ratification by the Senate, of the Treaty with Spain, and in the universal satisfaction at that event, throughout the United States, a decisive proof how unfounded were the suspicions propagated among them of a policy in the General Government and in the Atlantic States unfriendly to their interests in regard to the MISSISSIPPI.—They have been witnesses to the formation of two Treaties, that with G. Britain, and that with Spain, which secure to them every thing they could desire, in respect to our foreign Relations towards confirming their prosperity.—Will it not be their wisdom to rely for the preservation of these advantages on the UNION by which they were procured ?—Will they not henceforth be deaf to those advisers, if such there are, who would sever them from their Brethren, and connect them with Aliens ?—

To the efficacy and permanency of your Union, a Government for the whole is indispensable.—No alliances however strict between the parts can be an adequate substitute.—They must inevitably experience the infractions and interruptions which all alliances in all times have experienced.—Sensible of this momentous truth, you have improved upon your first essay, by the adoption of a Constitution of Government, better calculated than your former for an intimate Union, and for the efficacious management of your common concerns.—This government, the offspring of our own choice, uninfluenced and unawed, adopted upon full investigation and mature deliberation, completely free in its principles, in the distribution of its powers, uniting security with energy, and containing within itself a provision for its own amendment, has a just claim to your confidence and your support.—Respect for its authority, compliance with its Laws, acquiescence in its measures, are duties enjoined by the fundamental maxims of true Liberty. The basis of our

Though frequently made with levity and without any really evil intention, they have a tendency to produce the consequence which they indicate. They teach the minds of men to consider the Union as precarious ; as an object to which they ought not to attach their hopes and fortunes : and thus chill the sentiment in its favour. By alarming the pride of those to whom they are addressed, they set ingenuity at work to depreciate the value of the things and to discover reasons of indifference towards it. This is not wise.—It will be much wiser to habituate ourselves to reverence the Union as the palladium of our national happiness ; to accommodate constantly our words and actions to that idea, and to discountenance whatever may suggest a suspicion that it can in any event be abandoned. (In the margin opposite this *paragraph* are the words, "not important enough.")

* our parties for some time past have been too much characterized by

† These discriminations,———the mere contrivance of the spirit of Party, (always dexterous to seize every handle by which the passions can be wielded, and too skillful not to turn to account the sympathy of neighborhood), have furnished an argument against the Union as evidence of a real difference of local interests and views ; and serve to hazard it by organizing larger districts of country, under the leaders of contending factions ; whose rivalships, prejudices and schemes of ambition, rather than the true interests of the Country, will direct the use of their influence. If it be possible to correct this poison in the habit of our body politic, it is worthy the endeavors of the moderate and the good to effect it.

‡ subject.

political systems is the right of the people to make and to alter their Constitutions of Government.—But the Constitution which at any time exists, 'till changed by an explicit and authentic act of the whole People, is sacredly obligatory upon all.—The very idea of the power and the right of the People to establish Government, presupposes the duty of every individual to obey the established Government.

All obstructions to the execution of the Laws, all combinations and associations, under whatever plausible character, with [the real] design to direct, controul, counteract, or awe the regular deliberation and action of the constituted authorities, are destructive of this fundamental principle, and of fatal tendency.—They serve to organize faction, to give it an artificial and extraordinary force—to put, [*] in the place of the delegated will of the Nation, the will of a party;—often a small but artful and enterprising minority of the community;—and, according to the alternate triumphs of different parties, to make the public administration the mirror of the ill-concerted and incongruous projects of faction, rather than the organ of consistent and wholesome plans, digested by common councils and modified by mutual interests.—However combinations or associations of the above description may now and then answer popular ends, [†] they are likely, in the course of time and things, to become potent engines, by which cunning, ambitious and unprincipled men will be enabled to subvert the power of the People, and to usurp for themselves the reins of Government; destroying afterwards the very engines which have lifted them to unjust dominion.—

Towards the preservation of your Government and the permanency of your present happy state, it is requisite, not only that you steadily discountenance irregular opposition to its acknowledged authority, but also that you resist with care [the]‡ spirit of innovation upon its principles however specious the pretexts.—One method of assault may be to effect, in the forms of the Constitution, alterations which will impair the energy of the system, [and thus to] § undermine what cannot be directly overthrown. In all the changes to which you may be invited, remember that time and habit are at least as necessary to fix the true character of Governments, as of other human institutions—that experience is the surest standard, by which to test the real tendency of the existing Constitution of a Country—that facility in changes upon the credit of mere hypothesis and opinion exposes to perpetual change, from the endless variety of hypothesis and opinion:—and remember, especially, that for the efficient management of your common interests in a country so extensive as ours, a Government of as much vigour as is consistent with the perfect security of Liberty is indispensable—Liberty itself will find in such a Government, with powers properly distributed and adjusted its surest guardian.—[It is indeed little else than a name, where the Government is too feeble to withstand the enterprises of faction, to confine each member of the Society within the limits prescribed by the laws, and to maintain all in the secure and tranquil enjoyment of the rights of person and property.]‖

I have already intimated to you the danger of Parties in the State, with particular reference to the founding of them on Geographical discriminations.—Let me now take a more comprehensive view, and warn you in the most solemn manner against the baneful effects of the spirit of Party, generally.

* it † and purposes ‡ a § to

‖ Owing to you as I do a frank and free disclosure of my heart, I shall not conceal from you the belief I entertain, that your Government as at present constituted is far more likely to prove too feeble than too powerful.

This Spirit, unfortunately, is inseparable from [our] * nature, having its root in the strongest passions of the [human] mind.—It exists under different shapes in all governments, more or less stifled, controuled or repressed; but in those of the popular form it is seen in its greatest rankness, and is truly their worst enemy. [†]

The alternate domination of one faction over another, sharpened by the spirit of revenge natural to party dissension, which in different ages and countries has perpetrated the most horrid enormities, is itself a frightful despotism.—But this leads at length to a more formal and permanent despotism. The disorders and miseries, which result, gradually incline the minds of men to seek security and repose in the absolute power of an Individual: and sooner or later the chief of some prevailing faction, more able or more fortunate than his competitors, turns this disposition to the purposes of his own elevation, on the ruins of Public Liberty.

Without looking forward to an extremity of this kind, (which nevertheless ought not to be entirely out of sight), the common and continual mischiefs of the spirit of Party are sufficient to make it the interest and the duty of a wise People to discourage and restrain it.—

It serves always to distract the Public Councils and enfeeble the Public administration.—It agitates the community with ill-founded jealousies and false alarms, kindles the animosity of one part against another, foments occasionally riot and insurrection. It opens the door to foreign influence and corruption, which find a facilitated access [to the Government itself through the channels of party passions. Thus, the policy and the will of one country, are subjected to the policy and will of another.] ‡

There is an opinion that parties in free countries are useful checks upon the Administration of the Government, and serve to keep alive the Spirit of Liberty.—This within certain limits is probably true—and in Governments of a Monarchical cast, Patriotism may look with indulgence, if not with favour, upon the spirit of party.—But in those of the popular character, in Governments purely elective, it is a spirit not to be encouraged.—From their natural tendency, it is certain there will always be enough of that spirit for every salutary purpose,—and there being constant danger of excess, the effort ought to be, by force of public opinion, to mitigate and assuage it.—A fire not to be quenched; it demands a uniform vigilance to prevent its bursting into a flame, lest, [instead of warming, it should] § consume.—

It is important, likewise,, that the habits of thinking in a free country should inspire caution in those entrusted with its administra-

* human

† In Republics of narrow extent, it is not difficult for those who at any time hold the reins of Power, and command the ordinary public favor, to overturn the established [constitution] * in favor of their own aggrandizement.—The same thing may likewise be too often accomplished in such Republics, by partial combinations of men, who though no. in office, from birth, riches or other sources of distinction, have extraordinary influence and numerous [adherents.] †—By debauching the Military force, by surprising some commanding citadel, or by some other sudden an unforseen movement the fate of the Republic is decided.—But in Republics of large extent, usurpation can scarcely make its way through these avenues.—The powers and opportunities of resistance of a wide extended and numerous nation, defy the successful efforts of the ordinary Military force, or of any collections which wealth and patronage may call to their aid.—In such Republics, it is safe to assert, that the conflicts of popular factions are the chief, if not the only inlets, of usurpation and Tyranny.

‡ through the channels of party passions. It frequently subjects the policy of our own country to the policy of some foreign country, and even enslaves the will of our Government to the will of some foreign Government.

§ it should not only warm, but

* order † retainers

tion, to confine themselves within their respective constitutional spheres; avoiding in the exercise of the powers of one department to encroach upon another.—The spirit of encroachment tends to consolidate the powers of all the departments in one, and thus to create, [*] whatever [the form of government, a real]† despotism.—A just estimate of that love of power, and [‡] proneness to abuse it, which predominates in the human heart, is sufficient to satisfy us of the truth of this position.—The necessity of reciprocal checks in the exercise of political power, by dividing and distributing it into different depositories, and constituting each the Guardian of the Public Weal [against]§ invasions by the others, has been evinced by experiments ancient and modern; some of them in our country and under our own eyes.—To preserve them must be as necessary as to institute them.—If in the opinion of the People, the distribution or modification of the Constitutional powers be in any particular wrong, let it be corrected by an amendment in the way which the Constitution designates.—But let there be no change by usurpation; for though this, in one instance, may be the instrument of good, it is the [customary]‖ weapon by which free governments are destroyed.—The precedent [¶] must always greatly overbalance in permanent evil any partial or [transient]** benefit which the use [††] can at any time yield.—

Of all the dispositions and habits which lead to political prosperity, Religion and morality are indispensable supports.—In vain would that man claim the tribute of Patriotism, who should labour to subvert these great Pillars of human happiness, these firmest props of the duties of Men and Citizens.—The mere Politician, equally with the pious man, ought to respect and to cherish them.—A volume could not trace all their connections with private and public felicity.—Let it simply be asked where is the security for property, for reputation, for life, if the sense of religious obligation *desert* the oaths, which are the instruments of investigation in Courts of Justice? And let us with caution indulge the supposition, that morality can be maintained without religion.—Whatever may be conceded to the influence of refined education on minds of peculiar structure—reason and experience both forbid us to expect that national morality can prevail in exclusion of religious principle.—

'Tis substantially true that virtue or morality is a necessary spring of popular government.—The rule indeed extends with more or less force to every species of Free Government.—Who that is a sincere friend to it, can look with indifference upon attempts to shake the foundation of the fabric?—

[Promote then as an object of primary importance, institutions for the general diffusion of knowledge.—In proportion as the structure of a government gives force to public opinion, it is essential that public opinion should be enlightened.]—‡‡

As a very important source of strength and security, cherish public

* under † forms, a ‡ the
§ from ‖ usual and natural ¶ of its use
** temporary †† itself

‡‡ Cultivate industry and frugality, as auxiliaries to good morals and sources of private and public prosperity.—Is there not room to regret that our propensity to expense exceeds our means for it? Is there not more luxury among us and more diffusively, than suits the actual stage of our national progress? Whatever may be the apology for luxury in a country, nature in the Arts which are its ministers, and the cause of national opulence—can it promote the advantage of a young country, almost wholly agricultural, in the infancy of the Arts, and certainly not in the maturity of wealth?

(Over this paragraph in the original a piece of paper is wafered, on which the passage is written as printed in the text.)

credit—One method of preserving it is to use it as [sparingly]* as possible: —avoiding occasions of expense by cultivating peace, but remembering also that timely disbursements to prepare for danger frequently prevent much greater disbursements to repel it—avoiding likewise the accumulation of debt, not only by [shunning]† occasions of expense, but by vigorous exertions in time of Peace to discharge the debts which unavoidable wars may have occasioned, not ungenerously throwing upon posterity the burthen which we ourselves ought to bear. The execution of these maxims belongs to your Representatives, but it is necessary that public opinion should [co-operate.]‡—To facilitate to them the performance of their duty, it is essential that you should practically bear in mind, that towards the payment of debts there must be Revenue—that to have Revenue there must be taxes—that no taxes can be devised which are not more or less inconvenient and unpleasant—that the intrinsic embarrassment inseparable from the selection of the proper objects (which is always a choice of difficulties) ought to be a decisive motive for a candid construction of the conduct of the Government in making it, and for a spirit of acquiescence in the measures for obtaining Revenue which the public exigencies may at any time dictate.—

Observe good faith and justice towards all Nations [§] Cultivate peace and harmony with all.—Religion and morality enjoin this conduct; and can it be that good policy does not equally enjoin it ?—It will be worthy of a free, enlightened, and, at no distant period, a great nation, to give to mankind a magnanimous and too novel example of a People always guided by an exalted justice and benevolence.—Who can doubt that in the course of time and things, the fruits of such a plan would richly repay any temporary advantages which might be lost by a steady adherence to it ? Can it be, that Providence has not connected the permanent felicity of a Nation with its virtue ? The experiment, at least, is recommended by every sentiment which ennobles human nature.—Alas ! is it rendered impossible by its vices ?

In the execution of such a plan nothing is more essential than that [permanent, inveterate] ‖ antipathies against particular nations and passionate attachments for others should be excluded; and that in place of them just and amicable feelings towards all should be cultivated.—The Nation, which indulges towards another [an] ¶ habitual hatred or [an] ** habitual fondness, is in some degree a slave. It is a slave to its animosity or to its affection, either of which is sufficient to lead it astray from its duty and its interests.—Anti pathy inone nation against another [††] disposes each more readily to offer insult to injury, to lay hold of slight causes of umbrage, and to be haughty and intractable, when accidental or trifling occasions of dispute occur.—Hence frequent collisions, obstinate, envenomed and bloody contests.—The Nation prompted by ill-will and resentment sometimes impels to War the Government, contrary to [the best] ‡‡ calculations of policy. The Government sometimes participates in the [national] propensity, and adopts through passion what reason would reject;—at other times, it makes the animosity of the Nation subservient to projects of hostility instigated by pride, ambition, and other sinister and pernicious motives.—The peace often sometimes perhaps the Liberty, of Nations has been the victim.—

So likewise a passionate attachment of one Nation for another pro-

* little † avoiding ‡ co incide
§ and cultivate peace and harmony with all, for in public as well as in private transactions, I am persuaded that honesty will always be found to be the best policy.
‖ rooted ¶ a ** a
†† begets of course a similar sentiment in that other, ‡‡ its own

duces a variety of evils.—Sympathy for the favorite nation, facilitating the illusion of an imaginary common interest in cases where no real common interest exists, and infusing into one [*] the enmities of the other, betrays the former into a participation in the quarrels and wars of the latter, without adequate inducement or justification: It leads also to concessions to the favorite Nation of privileges denied to others, which is apt doubly to injure the Nation making the concessions; [†] by unnecessarily parting with what ought to be retained, ‡ and by exciting jealousy, ill-will, and a disposition to retaliate in the parties from whom equal privileges are withheld, and it gives to ambitious, corrupted, or deluded citizens [who devote themselves to the favorite Nation] facility to betray, or sacrifice the interests of their own country without odium, sometimes even with popularity:—gilding with the appearances of a virtuous sense of obligation, a commendable deference for public opinion, or a laudable zeal for public good, the base or foolish compliances of ambition, corruption or infatuation.—

As avenues to foreign influence in innumerable ways, such attachments are particularly alarming to the truly enlightened and independent patriot.—How many opportunities do they afford to tamper with domestic factions, to practice the arts of seduction, to mislead public opinion, to influence or awe the public councils! Such an attachment of a small or weak, towards a powerful nation, dooms the former to be the satellite of the latter.

Against the insidious wiles of foreign influence, [I conjure you to] believe me, [fellow citizens,] § the jealousy of a free people ought to be [constantly] ‖ awake, since history and experience prove that foreign influence is one of the most baneful foes of Republican Government.—But that jealousy to be useful must be impartial ; else it becomes the instrument of the very influence to be avoided, instead of a defence against it.—Excessive partiality for one foreign nation and excessive dislike of another, cause those whom they actuate to see danger only on one side, and to serve to veil and even second the arts of influence on the other.—Real Patriots, who may resist the intrigues of the favourite, are liable to become suspected and odious; while its tools and dupes usurp the applause and confidence of the people. to surrender their interests.—

The great rule of conduct for us, in regard to foreign Nations is, [in extending our commercial relations.] to have with them as little *Political* connection as possible. So far as we have already formed engagements let them be fulfilled with [¶] perfect good faith.—Here let us stop.—

Europe has a set of primary interests, which to us have none, or a very remote relation.—Hence she must be engaged in frequent controversies, the causes of which are essentially foreign to our concerns.—Hence therefore it must be unwise in us to implicate ourselves by [**] artificial [ties] †† in the ordinary vicissitudes of her politics, [or] ‡‡ the ordinary combinations and collisions of her friendships, or enmities.

Our detached and distant situation invites and enables us to pursue a different course.—If we remain one People, under an efficient government, the period is not far off, when we may defy material injury from external annoyance; when we may take such an attitude as will cause the neutrality we may at any time resolve [upon] §§ to be scrupulously respected.—When [‖‖] belligerent nations, under the impossibility of making acquisitions upon us, will [not] lightly hazard the giving us

* another † 1stly ‡ 2dly
§ my friends ‖ incessantly
¶ circumspection indeed, but with
** an †† connection ‡‡ in §§ to observe ‖‖ neither of two

provocation [*]; when we may choose peace or war, as our interest guided by [†] justice shall counsel.—

Why forego the advantages of so peculiar a situation ?—Why quit our own to stand upon foreign ground ?—Why, by interweaving our destiny with that of any part of Europe, entangle our peace and prosperity in the toils of European ambition, rivalship, interest, humour or caprice ?—

'Tis our true policy to steer clear of permanent alliances [‡] with any portion of the foreign world;—so far, I mean, as we are now at liberty to do it—for let me not be understood as capable of patronizing infidelity to [existing] § engagements, ([I hold the maxim no less applicable to public than to private affairs] ‖, that honesty is [always] the best policy).—[I repeat it therefore let those engagements] ¶ be observed in their genuine sense.—But in my opinion it is unnecessary and would be unwise to extend them.—

Taking care always to keep ourselves, by suitable establishments, on a respectably defensive posture, we may safely trust to [temporary] ** alliances for extraordinary emergencies.——

Harmony, liberal intercourse with all nations, are recommended by policy, humanity and interest.—But even our commercial policy should hold an equal and impartial hand :—neither seeking nor granting exclusive favours or preferences ;—consulting the natural course of things;—diffusing and diversifying by gentle means the streams of commerce, but forcing nothing;—establishing with powers so disposed—in order to give to trade a stable course, to define the rights of our Merchants and to enable the government to support them—conventional rules of intercourse, the best that present circumstances and mutual opinion will permit; but temporary, and liable to be from time to time abandoned or varied, as experience and circumstances shall dictate; constantly keeping in view, that 'tis folly in one nation to look for disinterested favors [from] †† another,—that it must pay with a portion of its independence for whatever it may accept under that character—that by such acceptance, it may place itself in the condition of having given equivalents for nominal favours and yet of being reproached with ingratitude for not giving more.—There can be no greater error than to expect, or calculate upon real favours from Nation to Nation.—'Tis an illusion which experience must cure, which a just pride ought to discard.

In offering to you, my Countrymen, these counsels of an old and affectionate friend, I dare not hope that they will make the strong and lasting impression, I could wish,—that they will controul the usual current of the passions or prevent our Nation from running the course which has hitherto marked the destiny of Nations.—But if I may even flatter myself, that they may be productive of some partial benefit; some occasional good; that they may now and then recur to moderate the fury of party spirit, to warn against the mischiefs of foreign intrigue, to guard against the impostures of pretended patriotism, this hope will be a full recompense for the solicitude for your welfare, by which they have been dictated.—

How far in the discharge of my official duties, I have been guided by the principles which have been delineated, the public Records and other evidences of my conduct must witness to You, and to the World.—To myself, the assurance of my own conscience is, that I have at least believed myself to be guided by them.

* to throw our weight into the opposite scale ;
‡ intimate connections
‖ for I hold it to be as true in public as in private transactions,
¶ those must
** occasional
† our
§ pre-existing.
†† at

In relation to the still subsisting War in Europe, my Proclamation of the 22d of April 1793 is the index to my plan.—Sanctioned by your approving voice and by that of Your Representatives in both Houses of Congress, the spirit of that measure has continually governed me:—uninfluenced by any attempts to deter or divert me from it.

After deliberate examination with the aid of the best lights I could obtain, [*] I was well satisfied that our country, under all the circumstances of the case, had a right to take, and was bound in duty and interest, to take a Neutral position.—Having taken it, I determined, as far as should depend upon me, to maintain it, with moderation, perseverance and firmness.—

[The considerations which respect the right to hold this conduct, [it is not necessary†] on this occasion [to detail.] I will only observe, that according to my understanding of the matter, that right, so far from being denied by any of the Belligerent Powers, has been virtually admitted by all.—]‡

The duty of holding a neutral conduct may be inferred, without anything more, from the obligation which justice and humanity impose on every Nation, in cases in which it is free to act, to maintain inviolate the relations of Peace and Amity towards other Nations.—

The inducements of interest for observing that conduct will best be referred to your own reflections and experience.—With me, a predominant motive has been to endeavour to gain time to our country to settle and mature its yet recent institutions, and to progress without interruption to that degree of strength and consistency, which is necessary to give it, humanly speaking, the command of its own fortunes.

Though in reviewing the incidents of my Administration, I am unconscious of intentional error—I am nevertheless too sensible of my defects not to think it probable that I [may] have committed many errors. —Whatever [they may be]§I fervently beseech the Almighty to avert or mitigate [the evils to which they may tend.]‖—I shall also carry with me the hope that my country will never cease to view them with indulgence; and that after forty-five years of my life dedicated to its service, with an upright zeal, the faults of incompetent abilities will be consigned to oblivion, as myself must soon be to the mansion of rest. [¶]

(* and from men disagreeing in their impressions of the origin, progress, and nature of that war.)

† some of them of a delicate nature, would be improperly the subject of explanation.

‡ The considerations which respect the right to hold this conduct, some of them of a delicate nature, would be improperly the subject of expianation on this occasion. I will barely observe that according to my understanding of the matter, that right so far from being denied by any belligerent Power, has been virtually admitted by all.—

This paragraph is then erased from the word "conduct," and the following sentence interlined, "would be improperly the subject of particular discussion on this occasion. I will barely observe that to me they appear to be warranted by well-established principles of the Laws of Nations as applicable to the nature of our alliance with France in connection with the circumstances of the War and the relative situation of the contending Parties."

A piece of paper is afterwards wafered over both, on which the paragraph as it stands in the text is written, and on the margin is the following note: "This is the first draft, and it is questionable which of the two is to be preferred."

§ I deprecate the evils to which they may tend. and ‖ them

¶ May I without the charge of ostentation add, that neither ambition nor interest has been the impelling cause of my actions—that I have never designedly misused any power confided to me nor hesitated to use one, where I thought it could redound to your benefit. May I without the appearance of affectation say, that the fortune with which I came into office is not bettered otherwise than by the improvement in the value of property which the quick progress and uncommon prosperity of our country have produced? May I still further add without breach of delicacy, that I shall retire without cause for a blush, with no sentiments alien to the force of those vows for the happiness of his country so natural to a citizen who sees in it the native soil of his progenitors and himself for four generations?

On the margin opposite this paragraph is the following note: "This paragraph may have the appearance of self-distrust and mere vanity."

Relying on its kindness in this as in other things, and actuated by that fervent love towards it, which is so natural to a man, who views in it the native soil of himself and his progenitors for [several] * generations; —I anticipate with pleasing expectation that retreat, in which I promise myself to realize, without alloy, the sweet enjoyment of partaking, in the midst of my fellow citizens, the benign influence of good Laws under a free Government,—the ever favourite object of my heart, and the happy reward, as I trust, of our mutual cares, labours and dangers. †

GO. WASHINGTON.

UNITED STATES, *19th September,* 1796.

* four.

† The paragraph, beginning with the words, "May I without the charge of ostentation add," having being struck out, the following note is written on the margin of that which is inserted in its place in the text :—"Continuation of the paragraph preceeding the last ending with the word 'rest.'"

III.

PROCEEDINGS OF CONGRESS IN CONSEQUENCE OF THE DEATH OF WASHINGTON.

SPEECH OF JOHN MARSHALL IN THE HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES, AND RESOLUTIONS ADOPTED BY THE HOUSE, DECEMBER 19TH, 1799.*

MR. SPEAKER,

The melancholy event, which was yesterday announced with doubt, has been rendered but too certain. Our Washington is no more! The hero, the patriot, and the sage of America; the man on whom in times of danger every eye was turned, and all hopes were placed, lives now only in his own great actions, and in the hearts of an affectionate and and afflicted people.

If, Sir, it had even not been usual openly to testify respect for the memory of those whom heaven has selected as its instruments for dispensing good to man, yet such has been the uncommon worth, and such the extraordinary incidents, which have marked the life of him whose loss we all deplore, that the whole American nation, impelled by the same feelings, would call with one voice for a public manifestation of that sorrow, which is so deep and so universal.

More than any other individual, and as much as to one individual was possible, has he contributed to found this our wide-spreading empire, and to give to the western world independence and freedom.

Having effected the great object for which he was placed at the head of our armies, we have seen him convert the sword into the ploughshare, and sink the soldier in the citizen.

When the debility of our federal system had become manifest, and the bonds which connected this vast continent were dissolving, we have seen him the chief of those patriots who formed for us a constitution, which, by preserving the union, will, I trust, substantiate and perpetuate those blessings which our Revolution had promised to bestow.

In obedience to the general voice of his country, calling him to preside over a great people, we have seen him once more quit the retirement he loved, and, in a season more stormy and tempestuous than war itself, with calm and wise determination pursue the true interests of the nation, and contribute, more than any other could contribute, to the establishment of that system of policy, which will, I trust, yet preserve our peace, our honor, and our independence.

Having been twice unanimously chosen the chief magistrate of a free people, we have seen him, at a time when his re-election with universal

* The intelligence of the death of Washington had been received the preceding day, and the House immediately adiourned. The next morning Mr. Marshall addressed this speech to the House.

suffrage could not be doubted, afford to the world a rare instance of moderation by withdrawing from his station to the peaceful walks of private life.

However the public confidence may change, and public affections fluctuate with respect to others, with respect to him they have, in war and in peace, in public and in private life, been as steady as his own firm mind, and as constant as his own exalted virtues.

Let us then, Mr. Speaker, pay the last tribute of respect and affection to our departed friend. Let the grand council of the nation display those sentiments which the nation feels. For this purpose I hold in my hand some resolutions, which I take the liberty of offering to the House.

Resolved, That this House will wait on the President, in condolence of this mournful event.

Resolved, That the Speaker's chair be shrouded with black, and that the members and officers of the House wear black during the session.

Resolved, That a committee, in conjunction with one from the Senate, be appointed to consider on the most suitable manner of paying honor to the memory of the man, first in war, first in peace, and first in the hearts of his fellow-citizens.

LETTER FROM THE SENATE TO THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES.

SIR, 23 December, 1799.

The Senate of the United States respectfully take leave to express to you their deep regret for the loss their country sustains in the death of General George Washington.

This event, so distressing to all our fellow-citizens, must be peculiarly heavy to you, who have long been associated with him in deeds of patriotism. Permit us, Sir, to mingle our tears with yours. On this occasion it is manly to weep. To lose such a man, at such a crisis, is no common calamity to the world. Our country mourns a father. The Almighty Disposer of human events has taken from us our greatest benefactor and ornament. It becomes us to submit with reverence to him "who maketh darkness his pavilion."

With patriotic pride we review the life of our Washington, and compare him with those of other countries who have been pre-eminent in fame. Ancient and modern times are diminished before him. Greatness and guilt have too often been allied; but his fame is whiter than it is brilliant. The destroyers of nations stood abashed at the majesty of his virtues. It reproved the intemperance of their ambition, and darkened the splendor of victory. The scene is closed and we are no longer anxious lest misfortune should sully his glory; he has travelled on to the end of his journey, and carried with him an increasing weight of honor; he has deposited it safely, where misfortune cannot tarnish it, where malice cannot blast it. Favored of Heaven, he departed without exhibiting the weakness of humanity. Magnanimous in death, the darkness of the grave could not obscure his brightness.

Such was the man whom we deplore. Thanks to God, his glory is consummated. Washington yet lives on earth in his spotless example; his spirit is in Heaven.

Let his countrymen consecrate the memory of the heroic general, the patriotic statesman, and the virtuous sage. Let them teach their children never to forget, that the fruits of his labors and his example are their inheritance.

THE PRESIDENT'S ANSWER.

23 December, 1799.

GENTLEMEN OF THE SENATE,

I receive with the most respectful and affectionate sentiments, in this impressive address, the obliging expressions of your regret for the loss our country has sustained in the death of her most esteemed, beloved, and admired citizen.

In the multitude of my thoughts and recollections on this melancholy event, you will permit me to say, that I have seen him in the days of adversity, in some of the scenes of his deepest distress and most trying perplexities. I have also attended him in his highest elevation and most prosperous felicity, with uniform admiration of his wisdom, moderation, and constancy.

Among all our original associates in that memorable league of this continent, in 1774, which first expressed the sovereign will of a free nation in America, he was the only one remaining in the general government. Although with a constitution more enfeebled than his, at an age when he thought it necessary to prepare for retirement, I feel myself alone, bereaved of my last brother, yet I derive a strong consolation from the unanimous disposition which appears in all ages and classes, to mingle their sorrows with mine, on this common calamity to the world.

The life of our Washington cannot suffer by a comparison with those of other countries who have been most celebrated and exalted by fame. The attributes and decorations of royalty could only have served to eclipse the majesty of those virtues which made him, from being a modest citizen, a more resplendent luminary. Misfortune, had he lived, could hereafter have sullied his glory only with those superficial minds, who, believing that character and actions are marked by success alone, rarely deserves to enjoy it. Malice could never blast his honor, and envy made him a singular exception to her universal rule. For himself, he had lived long enough to life and to glory; for his fellow-citizens, if their prayers could have been answered, he would have been immortal; for me, his departure is at a most unfortunate moment. Trusting, however, in the wise and righteous dominion of Providence over the passions of men and the results of their actions, as well as over their lives, nothing remains for me but humble resignation.

His example is now complete; and it will teach wisdom and virtue to magistrates, citizens, and men, not only in the present age, but in future generations, as long as our history shall be read. If a Trajan found a Pliny, a Marcus Aurelius can never want biographers, eulogists, or historians.

JOHN ADAMS.

JOINT RESOLUTIONS ADOPTED BY BOTH HOUSES OF CONGRESS.

December 23d. Resolved, by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America, in Congress assembled, That a marble monument be erected by the United States at the Capitol of the city of Washington, and that the family of General Washington be requested to permit his body to be deposited under it, and that the monument be so designed as to commemorate the great events of his military and political life.

And be it further resolved, That there be a funeral procession from Congress Hall, to the German Lutheran Church, in memory of General

George Washington, on Thursday the 26th instant, and that an oration be prepared at the request of Congress to be delivered before both Houses that day; and that the President of the Senate, and Speaker of the House of Representatives, be desired to request one of the members of Congress to prepare and deliver the same.

And be it further resolved, That it be recommended to the people of the United States, to wear crape on their left arm, as mourning, for thirty days.

And be it further resolved, That the President of the United States be requested to direct a copy of these resolutions to be transmitted to Mrs. Washington, assuring her of the profound respect Congress will ever bear for her person and character, of their condolence on the late afflicting dispensation of Providence; and entreating her to assent to the interment of the remains of General Washington in the manner expressed in the first resolution.

Resolved, That the President of the United States be requested to issue his proclamation, notifying to the people throughout the United States the recommendation contained in the third resolution.

December 30th. Resolved, That it be recommended to the people of the United States to assemble, on the twenty-second day of February next, in such number and manner as may be convenient, publickly to testify their grief for the death of General George Washington, by suitable eulogies, orations and discourses, or by public prayers.

And it is further resolved, that the President be requested to issue a proclamation, for the purposes of carrying the foregoing resolution into effect.

IV.

WASHINGTON'S WILL.

IN THE NAME OF GOD, AMEN.

I, GEORGE WASHINGTON, of Mount Vernon, a citizen of the United States, and lately President of the same, do make, ordain and declare this instrument, which is written with my own hand, and every page thereof subscribed with my name,* to be my last WILL and TESTAMENT, revoking all others.

Imprimis.—All my debts, of which there are but few, and none of magnitude, are to be punctually and speedily paid, and the legacies, herein after bequeathed, are to be discharged as soon as circumstances will permit, and in the manner directed.

Item.—To my dearly beloved wife, *Martha Washington*, I give and bequeath the use, profit and benefit of my whole estate real and personal, for the term of her natural life, except such parts thereof as are specially disposed of hereafter. My improved lot in the town of Alexandria, situated on Pitt and Cameron streets, I give to her and her heirs for ever; as I also do my household and kitchen furniture of every sort and kind, with the liquors and groceries which may be on hand at the time of my decease, to be used and disposed of as she may think proper.

Item.—Upon the decease of my wife, it is my will and desire that all the slaves whom I hold *in my own right* shall receive their freedom. To emancipate them during her life would, though earnestly wished by me, be attended by such insuperable difficulties, on account of their intermixture by marriage with the dower negroes, as to excite the most painful sensations, if not disagreeable consequences to the latter, while both descriptions are in the occupancy of the same proprietor; it not being in my power, under the tenure by which the dower negroes are held, to manumit them. And whereas, among those who will receive freedom according to this devise, there may be some, who, from old age or bodily infirmities, and others, who, on account of their infancy, will be unable to support themselves, it is my will and desire, that all, who come under the first and second description, shall be comfortably clothed and fed by my heirs while they live; and that such of the latter description as have no parents living, or, if living, are unable or unwilling to provide for them, shall be bound by the court until they shall arrive at the age of twenty-five years; and, in cases where no record can be produced, whereby their ages can be ascertained, the judgment of the court, upon its own view of the subject, shall be adequate and final. The negroes thus bound, are (by their masters or mistresses) to be taught to read and write, and to be brought up to some useful occupation, agreeably to the laws of the Commonwealth of Virginia, providing for the support of orphan and other poor children. And I do hereby expressly forbid the

* In the original manuscript, GEORGE WASHINGTON'S name was written at the bottom of every page.

sale or transportation out of the said Commonwealth, of any slave I may die possessed of, under any pretence whatsoever. And I do, moreover, most pointedly and most solemnly enjoin it upon my executors hereafter named, or the survivors of them, to see that this clause respecting slaves, and every part thereof, be religiously fulfilled at the epoch at which it is directed to take place, without evasion, neglect, or delay, after the crops which may then be on the ground are harvested, particularly as it respects the aged and infirm; seeing that a regular and permanent fund be established for their support, as long as there are subjects requiring it; not trusting to the uncertain provision to be made by individuals. And to my mulatto man, *William*, calling himself *William Lee*, I give immediate freedom, or, if he should prefer it, (on account of the accidents which have befallen him, and which have rendered him incapable of walking, or of any active employment,) to remain in the situation he now is, it shall be optional in him to do so; in either case, however, I allow him an annuity of thirty dollars, during his natural life, which shall be independent of the victuals and clothes he has been accustomed to receive, if he chooses the last alternative; but in full with his freedom, if he prefers the first; and this I give him as a testimony of my sense of his attachment to me, and for his faithful services during the revolutionary war.

Item.—To the trustees (governors, or by whatsoever other name they may be designated) of the Academy in the town of Alexandria, I give and bequeath, in trust, four thousand dollars, or in other words, twenty of the shares which I hold in the Bank of Alexandria, towards the support of a free school, established at and annexed to, the said Academy, for the purpose of educating such orphan children, or the children of such other poor and indigent persons, who are unable to accomplish it with their own means, and who, in the judgment of the trustees of the said seminary, are best entitled to the benefit of this donation. The aforesaid twenty shares I give and bequeath in perpetuity; the dividends only of which are to be drawn for and applied, by the said trustees for the time being, for the uses above mentioned; the stock to remain entire and untouched, unless indications of failure of the said bank should be so apparent, or a discontinuance thereof, should render a removal of this fund necessary. In either of these cases, the amount of the stock here devised is to be vested in some other bank or public institution, whereby the interest may with regularity and certainty be drawn and applied as above. And to prevent misconception, my meaning is, and is hereby declared to be, that these twenty shares are in lieu of, and not in addition to, the thousand pounds given by a missive letter some years ago, in consequence whereof an annuity of fifty pounds has since been paid towards the support of this institution.

Item.—Whereas, by a law of the Commonwealth of Virginia, enacted in the year 1785, the Legislature thereof was pleased, as an evidence of its approbation of the services I had rendered the public during the Revolution, and partly, I believe, in consideration of my having suggested the vast advantages which the community would derive from the extension of its inland navigation under legislative patronage, to present me with one hundred shares, of one hundred dollars each, in the incorporated Company, established for the purpose of extending the navigation of James River from the tide water to the mountains; and also with fifty shares, of £100 sterling each, in the corporation of another company, likewise established for the similar purpose of opening the navigation of the River Potomac from the tide water to Fort Cumberland; the acceptance of which, although the offer was highly honorable and grateful to my feelings, was refused, as inconsistent with

a principle which I had adopted and had never departed from, viz., not to receive pecuniary compensation for any services I could render my country in its arduous struggle with Great Britian for its rights, and because I had evaded similar propositions from other States in the Union; adding to this refusal, however, an intimation, that, if it should be the pleasure of the legislature to permit me to appropriate the said shares to *public uses*, I would receive them on those terms with due sensibility; and this it having consented to, in flattering terms, as will appear by a subsequent law, and sundry resolutions, in the most ample and honorable manner;—I proceed after this recital, for the more correct understanding of the case, to declare; that, as it has always been a source of serious regret with me, to see the youth of these United States sent to foreign countries for the purpose of education, often before their minds were formed, or they had imbibed any adequate ideas of the happiness of their own; contracting too frequently, not only habits of dissipation and extravagance, but principles unfriendly to republican government, and to the true and genuine liberties of mankind, which thereafter are rarely overcome; for these reasons it has been my ardent wish to see a plan devised on a liberal scale, which would have a tendency to spread systematic ideas through all parts of this rising empire, thereby to do away local attachments and State prejudices, as far as the nature of things would, or indeed ought, to admit, from our national councils. Looking anxiously forward to the accomplishment of so desirable an object as this is (in my estimation), my mind has not been able to contemplate any plan more likely to effect the measure, than the establishment of a UNIVERSITY in a central part of the United States, to which the youths of fortune and talents from all parts thereof may be sent for the completion of their education, in all the branches of polite literature, in arts and sciences, in acquiring knowledge in the principles of politics and good government, and, as a matter of infinite importance in my judgment, by associating with each other and forming friendships in juvenile years, be enabled to free themselves in a proper degree from those local prejudices and habitual jealousies which have just been mentioned, and which, when carried to excess, are never-failing sources of disquietude to the public mind, and pregnant of mischievous consequences to this country. Under these impressions, so fully dilated,

Item.—I give and bequeath, in perpetuity, the fifty shares which I hold in the Potomac company, (under the aforesaid acts of the Legislature of Virginia,) towards the endowment of a University, to be established within the limits of the District of Columbia, under the auspices of the general government, if that government should incline to extend a fostering hand towards it; and, until such seminary is established, and the funds arising on these shares shall be required for its support, my further will and desire is, that the profit accruing therefrom shall, whenever the dividends are made, be laid out in purchasing stock in the bank of Columbia, or some other bank, at the discretion of my executors, or by the Treasurer of the United States for the time being under the direction of Congress, provided that honorable body should patronize the measure; and the dividends proceeding from the purchase of such stock are to be vested in more stock, and so on, until a sum adequate to the accomplishment of the object is obtained; of which I have not the smallest doubt, before many years pass away, even if no aid or encouragement is given by the legislative authority, or from any other source.

Item.—The hundred shares which I hold in the James River Company, I have given and now confirm in perpetuity, to and for the use and benefit of Liberty Hall Academy, in the County of Rockbridge in the Commonwealth of Virginia.

Item.—I release, exonerate, and discharge the estate of my deceased brother, *Samuel Washington*, from the payment of the money which is due to me for the land I sold to *Philip Pendelton*, (lying in the county of Berkeley,) who assigned the same to him, the said *Samuel*, who by agreement was to pay me therefor. And whereas, by some contract (the purport of which was never communicated to me) between the said *Samuel* and his son, *Thornton Washington*, the latter became possessed of the aforesaid land, without any conveyance having passed from me, either to the said *Pendleton*, the said *Samuel*, or the said *Thornton*, and without any consideration having been made, by which neglect neither the legal nor equitable title has been alienated; it rests therefore with me to declare my intentions concerning the premises; and these are, to give and bequeath the said land to whomsoever the said *Thornton Washington* (who is also dead) devised the same, or to his heirs for ever, if he died intestate; exonerating the estate of the said *Thornton*, equally with that of the said *Samuel*, from payment of the purchase money, which, with interest, agreeably to the original contract with the said *Pendleton*, would amount to more than a thousand pounds. And whereas two other sons of my said deceased brother *Samuel*, namely, *George Steptoe Washington*, and *Lawrence Augustine Washington*, were, by the decease of those to whose care they were committed, brought under my protection, and, in consequence, have occasioned advances on my part for their education at college and other schools, for their board, clothing, and other incidental expenses, to the amount of near five thousand dollars, over and above the sums furnished by their estate, which sum it may be inconvenient for them or their father's estate to refund; I do for these reasons acquit them and the said estate from the payment thereof, my intention being, that all accounts between them and me, and their father's estate and me, shall stand balanced.

Item.—The balance due to me from the estate of *Bartholomew Dandridge*, deceased, (my wife's brother.) and which amounted on the first day of October, 1795, to four hundred and twenty-five pounds, (as will appear by an account rendered by his deceased son, *John Dandridge*, who was the acting executor of his father's will,) I release and acquit from the payment thereof. And the negroes, then thirty-three in number, formerly belonging to the said estate, who were taken in execution, sold, and purchased in on my account, in the year (*blank*), and ever since have remained in the possession and to the use of *Mary*, widow of the said *Bartholomew Dandridge*, with their increase, it is my will and desire shall continue and be in her possession, without paying hire, or making compensation for the same for the time past, or to come, during her natural life; at the expiration of which, I direct that all of them who are forty years old and upwards shall receive their freedom; and all under that age, and above sixteen, shall serve seven years and no longer; and all under sixteen years shall serve until they are twenty-five years of age, and then be free. And, to avoid disputes respecting the ages of any of these negroes, they are to be taken into the court of the county in which they reside, and the judgment thereof, in this relation, shall be final and record thereof made, which may be adduced as evidence at any time thereafter if disputes should arise concerning the same. And I further direct, that the heirs of the said *Bartholomew Dandridge* shall equally share the benefits arising from the services of said negroes according to the tenor of this devise, upon the decease of their mother.

Item.—If *Charles Carter*, who intermarried with my niece *Betty Lewis*, is not sufficiently secured in the title to the lots he had of me in the town of Fredericksburg, it is my will and desire, that my executors

shall make such conveyances of them as the law requires to render it perfect.

Item.—To my nephew, *William Augustine Washington*, and his heirs, (if he should conceive them to be objects worth prosecuting,) a lot in the town of Manchester, (opposite to Richmond.) No. 265, drawn on my sole account, and also the tenth of one or two hundred acre lots, and two or three half-acre lots, in the city and vicinity of Richmond, drawn in partnership with nine others, all in the lottery of the deceased *William Byrd*, are given; as is also a lot which I purchased of *John Hood*, conveyed by *William Willie* and *Samuel Gordon*, trustees of the said *John Hood*, numbered 139, in the town of Edinburgh, in the County of Prince George, State of Virginia.

Item.—To my nephew, *Bushrod Washington*,* I give and bequeath all the papers in my possession which relate to my civil and military administration of the affairs of this country. I leave to him also such of my private papers as are worth preserving; and at the decease of my wife, and before, if she is not inclined to retain them, I give and bequeath my library of books and pamphlets of every kind.

Item.—Having sold lands which I possessed in the State of Pennsylvania and part of a tract held in equal right with *George Clinton*, late governor of New York, in the State of New York, my share of land and interest in the Great Dismal Swamp, and a tract of land which I owned in the County of Gloucester,—withholding the legal titles thereto, until the consideration money should be paid—and having moreover leased and conditionally sold (as will appear by the tenor of the said leases) all my lands upon the Great Kenhawa, and a tract upon Difficult Run, in the County of Loudoun, it is my will and direction, that whensoever the contracts are fully and respectively complied with, according to the spirit, true intent, and meaning thereof, on the part of the purchasers, their heirs or assigns, that then, and in that case, conveyances are to be made, agreeably to the terms of the said contracts, and the money arising therefrom, when paid, to be vested in bank stock; the dividends whereof, as of that also which is already vested therein, are to inure to my said wife during her life; but the stock itself is to remain and be subject to the general distribution hereafter directed.

Item.—To the *Earl of Buchan* I recommit the "Box made of the Oak that sheltered the great Sir *William Wallace*, after the battle of Falkirk," presented to me by his Lordship, in terms too flattering for me to repeat, with a request "to pass it, on the event of my decease, to the man in my country, who should appear to merit it best, upon the same conditions that have induced him to send it to me." Whether easy or not to select the man, who might comport with his Lordship's opinion in this respect, is not for me to say; but, conceiving that no disposition of this valuable curiosity can be more eligible than the recommitment of it to his own cabinet, agreeably to the original design of the Goldsmiths' Company of Edinburgh, who presented it to him, and, at his request, consented that it should be transferred to me, I do give and bequeath the same to his Lordship; and in case of his decease, to his heir, with my grateful thanks for the distinguished honor of presenting it to me, and more especially for the favorable sentiments with which he accompanied it.

Item.—To my brother, *Charles Washington*, I give and bequeath the

* As General Washington never had any children, he gave the larger part of his property to his nephews and nieces, and the children of Mrs. Washington's son by her first marriage. The principal heir was Bushrod Washington, son of his brother. John Augustine Washington.

gold-headed cane left me by Dr. *Franklin* in his will. I add nothing to it because of the ample provision I have made for his issue. To the acquaintances and friends of my juvenile years, *Lawrence Washington* and *Robert Washington*, of Chotanck, I give my other two gold-headed canes, having my arms engraved on them; and to each, as they will be useful where they live, I leave one of the spyglasses, which constituted part of my equipage during the late war. To my compatriot in arms and old and intimate friend, Dr. *Craik*, I give my bureau (or, as the cabinet-makers call it, tambour secretary) and the circular chair, an appendage of my study. To Dr. *David Stewart* I give my large shaving and dressing table, and my telescope. To the Reverend, now *Bryan, Lord Fairfax*, I give a Bible, in three large folio volumes, with notes, presented to me by the Right Reverend *Thomas Wilson*, Bishop of Sodor and Man. To General *de Lafayette* I give a pair of finely-wrought steel pistols, taken from the enemy in the revolutionary war. To my sisters-in-law, *Hannah Washington* and *Mildred Washington*, to my friends, *Eleanor Stuart, Hannah Washington*, of Fairfield, and *Elizabeth Washington*, of Hayfield, I give each a mourning ring, of the value of one hundred dollars. These bequests are not made for the intrinsic value of them, but as mementos of my esteem and regard. To *Tobias Lear* I give the use of the farm, which he now holds in virtue of a lease from me to him and his deceased wife, (for and during their natural lives,) free from rent during his life; at the expiration of which, it is to be disposed of as is hereinafter directed. To *Sallie B. Hayne*, (a distant relation of mine,) I give and bequeath three hundred dollars. To *Sarah Green*, daughter of the deceased *Thomas Bishop*, and to *Anne Walker*, daughter of *John Alton*, also deceased, I give each one hundred dollars, in consideration of the attachment of their fathers to me; each of whom having lived nearly forty years in my family. To each of my nephews *William Augustine Washington, George Lewis, George Steptoe Washington, Bushrod Washington*, and *Samuel Washington*, I give one of the swords or couteaux, of which I may die possessed; and they are to choose in the order they are named. These swords are accompanied with an injunction not to unsheath them for the purpose of shedding blood, except it be for self-defence or in defence of their country and its rights; and in the latter case, to keep them unsheathed, and prefer falling with them in their hands to the relinquishment thereof.

And now, having gone through these specific devices, with explanations for the more correct understanding of the meaning and design of them, I proceed to the distribution of the more important part of my estate, in manner following;

FIRST.—To my nephew, *Bushrod Washington*, and his heirs, (partly in consideration of an intimation to his deceased father, while we were bachelors, and he had kindly undertaken to superintend my estate during my military services in the former war between Great Britain and France, that if I should fall therein, Mount Vernon, then less extensive in domain than at present, should become his property,) I give and bequeath all that part thereof, which is comprehended within the following limits, viz. Beginning at the ford of Dogue Run, near my Mill, and extending along the road, and bounded thereby, as it now goes, and ever has gone, since my recollection of it, to the ford of Little Hunting Creek, at the Gum Spring, until it comes to a knoll opposite to an old road, which formerly passed through the lower field of Muddy-Hole Farm; at which, on the north side of the said road, are three red or Spanish oaks, marked as a corner, and a stone placed; thence by a line of trees to be marked rectangular, to the back line or outer boundary of the tract between *Thomson Mason* and myself; thence with that line

easterly (now double ditching, with a post-and-rail fence thereon) to the run of Little Hunting Creek; thence with that run which is the boundary between the lands of the late Humphrey Peake and me, to the tide water of the said creek; thence by that water to Potomac River; thence with the river to the mouth of Dogue Creek; and thence with the said Dogue Creek to the place of beginning at the aforesaid ford; containing upwards of four thousand acres; be the same more or less together with the mansion-house, and all other buildings and improvements thereon

SECOND.—In consideration of the consanguinity between them and my wife, being as nearly related to her as to myself, as on account of the affection I had for, and the obligation I was under to, their father when living, who from his youth had attached himself to my person, and followed my fortunes through the vicissitudes of the late Revolution, afterwards devoting his time to the superintendence of my private concerns for many years, whilst my public employments rendered it impracticable for me to do it myself, thereby affording me essential services, and always performing them in a manner the most filial and respectful; for these reasons, I say, I give and bequeath to *George Fayette Washington* and *Lawrence Augustine Washington*, and their heirs, my estate east of Little Hunting Creek, lying on the River Potomac, including the farm of three hundred and sixty acres, leased to *Tobias Lear*, as noticed before, and containing in the whole, by deed, two thousand and twenty-seven acres, be it more or less; which said estate it is my will and desire should be equitably and advantageously divided between them, according to quantity, quality, and other circumstances, when the youngest shall have arrived at the age of twenty-one years, by three judicious and distinterested men; one to be chosen by each of the brothers, and the third by these two. In the mean time, if the termination of my wife's interest therein should have ceased, the profits arising therefrom are to be applied for their joint uses and benefit.

THIRD.—And whereas it has always been my intention, since my expectation of having issue has ceased, to consider the grandchildren of my wife in the same light as I do my own relations, and to act a friendly part by them; more especially by the two whom we have raised from their earliest infancy, namely *Eleanor Parke Custis* and *George Washington Parke Custis*; and whereas the former of these hath lately intermarried with *Lawrence Lewis*, a son of my deceased sister, *Betty Lewis*, by which the inducement to provide for them both has been increased; wherefore, I give and bequeath to the said *Lawrence Lewis* and *Eleanor Parke Lewis*, his wife, and their heirs, the residue of my Mount Vernon estate, not already devised to my nephew, *Bushrod Washington*, comprehended within the following description, viz. All the land north of the road leading from the ford of Dogue Run to the Gum Spring as described in the devise of the other part of the tract to *Bushrod Washington*, unil it comes to the stone and three red or Spanish oaks on the knoll; thence with the rectangular line to the back line (between Mr. *Mason* and me); thence with that line westerly along the new double ditch to Dogue Run, by the tumbling dam of my Mill; thence with the said run to the ford aforementioned. To which I add all the land I possess west of the said Dogue Run and Dogue Creek, bounded easterly and southerly thereby; together with the mill, distillery, and all other houses and improvements on the premises, making together about two thousand acres, be it more or less.

FOURTH.—Actuated by the principle already mentioned, I give and bequeath to *George Washington Parke Custis*, the grandson of my wife, and my ward, and to his heirs, the tract I hold on Four Mile Run, in the vicinity of Alexandria, containing one thousand two hundred acres,

more or less, and my entire square, No. 21, in the city of Washington.

Fifth.—All the rest and residue of my estate real and personal, not disposed of in manner aforesaid, in whatsoever consisting, wheresoever lying, and whensoever found, (a schedule of which, as far as is recollected, with a reasonable estimate of its value, is hereunto annexed,) I desire may be sold by my executors at such times, in such manner, and on such credits, (if an equal, valid, and satisfactory distribution of the specific property cannot be made without,) as in their judgment shall be most conducive to the interests of the parties concerned; and the moneys arising therefrom to be divided into twenty-three equal parts, and applied as follows, viz. To *William Augustine Washington*, *Elizabeth Spotswood*, *Jane Thornton*, and the heirs of *Ann Ashton*, sons and daughters of my deceased brother, *Augustine Washington*, I give and bequeath four parts; that is, one part to each of them. To *Fielding Lewis*, *George Lewis*, *Robert Lewis*, *Howell Lewis*, and *Betty Carter*, sons and daughters of my deceased sister, *Betty Lewis*, I give and bequeath five other parts; one to each of them. To *George Steptoe Washington*, *Lawrence Augustine Washington*, *Harriet Parks*, and the heirs of *Thornton Washington*, sons and daughters of my deceased brother, *Samuel Washington*, I give and bequeath other four parts; one to each of them. To *Corbin Washington*, and the heirs of *Jane Washington*, son and daughter of my deceased brother, *John Augustine Washington*, I give and bequeath two parts; one to each of them. To *Samuel Washington*, *Frances Ball*, and *Mildred Hammond*, son and daughters of my brother *Charles Washington*, I give and bequeath three parts; one part to each of them. And to *George Fayette Washington*, *Charles Augustine Washington*, and *Maria Washington*, sons and daughter of my deceased nephew, *George Augustine Washington*, I give one other part; that is, to each a third of that part. To *Elizabeth Parke Law*, *Martha Parke Peter*, and *Eleanor Parke Lewis*, I give and bequeath three other parts; that is, a part to each of them. And to my nephews, *Bushrod Washington* and *Lawrence Lewis*, and to my ward, the grandson of my wife, I give and bequeath one other part; that is a third thereof to each of them. And, if it should so happen that any of the persons whose names are here enumerated (unknown to me) should now be dead, or should die before me, that in either of these cases, the heir of such deceased person shall, notwithstanding, derive all the benefits of the bequest in the same manner as if he or she was actually living at the time. And, by way of advice, I recommend it to my executors not to be precipitate in disposing of the landed property, (herein directed to be sold,) if from temporary causes the sale thereof should be dull; experience having fully evinced, that the price of land, especially above the falls of the river and on the western waters, has been progressively rising, and cannot be long checked in its increasing value. And I particularly recommend it to such of the legatees (under this clause of my will), as can make it convenient, to take each a share of my stock in the Potomac Company in preference to the amount of what it might sell for; being thoroughly convinced myself that no uses to which the money can be applied, will be so productive as the tolls arising from this navigation when in full operation, (and thus, from the nature of things, it must be, ere long,) and more especially if that of the Shenandoah is added thereto.

The family vault at Mount Vernon requiring repairs, and being improperly situated besides, I desire that a new one of brick, and upon a larger scale, may be built at the foot of what is commonly called the Vineyard Enclosure, on the ground which is marked out; in which my remains, with those of my deceased relations (now in the old vault), and

such others of my family as may choose to be entombed there, may be deposited. And it is my express desire, that my corpse may be interred in a private manner, without parade or funeral oration.

LASTLY, I constitute and appoint my dearly beloved wife, *Martha Washington*, my nephews, *William Augustine Washington*, *Bushrod Washington*, *George Steptoe Washington*, *Samuel Washington*, and *Lawrence Lewis*, and my ward, *George Washington Parke Custis* (when he shall have arrived at the age of twenty-one years), executrix and executors of this my will and testament; in the construction of which it will be readily perceived, that no professional character has been consulted, or has had any agency in the draft; and that, although it has occupied many of my leisure hours to digest, and to throw it into its present form, it may, notwithstanding, appear crude and incorrect; but, having endeavored to be plain and explicit in all the devises, even at the expense of prolixity, perhaps of tautology, I hope and trust that no disputes will arise concerning them. But if, contrary to expectation, the case should be otherwise, from the want of legal expressions, or the usual technical terms, or because too much or too little has been said on any of the devises to be consonant with law, my will and direction expressly is, that all disputes (if unhappily any should arise) shall be decided by three impartial and intelligent men, known for their probity and good understanding, two to be chosen by the disputants, each having the choice of one, and the third by those two; which three men, thus chosen, shall, unfettered by law or legal constructions, declare their sense of the testator's intention; and such decision is, to all intents and purposes, to be as binding on the parties as if it had been given in the Supreme Court of the United States.

GEORGE WASHINGTON.

In witness of all and of each of the things herein contained, I have set my hand and seal, this ninth day of July, in the year one thousand seven hundred and ninety, * *and of the Independence of the United States the twenty-fourth.*

* It appears that the testator omitted the word "nine."

INDEX.

A.

Abercrombie, General—
supersedes General Shirley.....i. 156
commander-in-chief.....i. 178
encamped at Lake George.....i. 181
proceeds against Ticonderoga.....i. 182
falls back.....i. 182
attacks the French works.....i. 183
repulsed by Montcalm.....i. 183
superseded by Major General Amherst.....i. 194
Abercrombie, Lieutenant Colonel, attacks American batteries.....iv. 34
Ackland, Lady Harriett—
with Burgoyne's Army.....ii. 396
during the action.....ii. 402
her distress.....iii. 26
seeks her husband.....iii. 28
kind treatment of.....iii. 29
subsequent history.....iii. 37
Ackland, Major—
commands the Grenadiers.....iii. 23
wounded and taken prisoner.....iii. 23
subsequent history (note).....iii. 37
Adams, John—
birth of American Independence...i. 219
at town meetings.....i. 258
on the General Congress.....i. 260
to his wife about Mr. Duché.....i. 261
opposes petition to the king.....i. 291
on the choice of commander-in-chief.....i. 292
proposes Washington as commander-in-chief.....i. 293
on the conduct of Washington.....i. 295
opposes Lee, and urges Ward as second in command.....i. 295
opposed to Lee and Gates.....i. 295
on the act of Massachusetts General Court.....i. 371
to General Thomas on Schuyler's unpopularity.....i. 388
picture of festivities at head-quarters.....i. 399
on the defence of New York.....ii. 23
member of the Board of War and Ordnance.....ii. 68
on the Declaration of Independence.....ii. 88
its great importance.....ii. 89
concerning sectional jealousies...ii. 108
on committee to confer with Lord Howe.....ii. 144
at Washington's inauguration.....iv. 117
on presidential etiquette.....iv. 126
distrusts the French Revolution...iv. 178
on the office of Vice President.....iv. 178
his "Discourses on Davila".....iv. 178
on the British Constitution.....iv. 191
concerning Washington's judgment of Genet.....iv. 237
to his wife on affairs.....iv. 240
elected President.....iv. 284
inaugural address.....iv. 286
convenes Congress.....iv. 294
address concerning French indignities.....iv. 294
to Washington, asking advice.....iv. 298
on the appointment of Washington commander-in-chief.....iv. 299
nominates minister to France.....iv. 307
Adams, Mrs.—
to her husband on the appearance of Washington.....i. 321
description of General Lee.....i. 323
account of party at General Mifflin's.....i. 399
to her husband on the cannonade..ii. 43
Adams, Samuel—
as moderator.....i. 258
proposes Mr. Duché as chaplain.....i. 261
apprised of the movement of troops i. 279
irresolute as to commander in chief.....i. 299
excepted from proffered pardon.....i. 298
on the united command of Schuyler and Gates.....ii. 103
meets Washington at Cambridge..iv. 147
Adams, Sir Thomas.....i. 214
Adet, Mr.—
minister from France.....iv. 259
presents the colors of France.....iv. 273
complaints against the government of the United States.....iv. 283
Agnew, Brigadier General—
in the expedition against Danbury ii. 287
killed at Germantown.....iii. 42
Albany, panic at St. Clair's retreat..ii. 331
Allen, the fighting parson.....ii. 369
Allen, Ethan—
at the head of the Green Mountain Boys.....i. 287
volunteers in the public cause.....i. 287
described.....i. 287
commands expedition to Ticonderoga.....i. 288
proceeds to Shoreham.....i. 288
arrives at Shoreham.....i. 288
addresses his men.....i. 289
surprises Ticonderoga.....i. 289
expedition against St. Johns.....i. 290
returns to Ticonderoga.....i. 290
rivalry with Arnold.....i. 344
to New York Congress.....i. 345
to Trumbull.....i. 345
designs on Canada.....i. 345
repairs to Congress.....i. 346
repairs to New York convention ...i. 346
to Trumbull on the invasion of Canada.....i. 343
superseded by Seth Warner.....i. 351
joins as a volunteer.....i. 351
to Trumbull.....i. 351
sent to reconnoitre.....i. 359
report to Schuyler.....i. 359
recruiting.....i. 360
to Montgomery on Canadian volunteers.....i. 362
meets Major Brown.....i. 363

decides to attack Montreal.....i. 363
taken prisoner.....i. 363
reception by General Prescott.....i. 364
sent to England.....i. 364
to General Prescott.....i. 364
memory of.....i. 365
treatment by the British.....i. 393
exchanged for Colonel Campbell.iii. 117
visits Valley Forge.....iii. 117
leaves for home.....iii. 118
Allen, Levi—
to Washington on the treatment of Ethan Allen.....i. 393
project to effect his release.....i. 393
Allen, William.....ii. 105
Alton, John, Washington's servant taken ill.....i. 131
Ambuscade, engagement with the Boston.....iv. 231
Amboy, disaffection of people.....ii. 88
American Colonies—
affection for the mother country...i. 217
resolve not to purchase British fabrics.....i. 220
American Army—
besieging Boston, its nature.....i. 298
disposition of its forces.....i. 299
distribution of before Boston.....i. 325
condition and discipline.....i. 325
spirit of insubordination.....i. 326
camp described.....i. 326
strict discipline.....i. 334
scarcity of powder.....i. 337
critical condition.....i. 338
difficulty of filling up.....i. 399
greatly weakened.....ii. 18
lack of equipments.....ii. 18
strength in and about New York...ii. 58
retreat from before Quebec.....ii. 63
British description of.....ii. 177
at New Brunswick.....ii. 206
contrasted with the British.....ii. 262
marches through Philadelphia.....ii. 350
described by a Hessian.....iii. 34
approach of winter.....iii. 70
destitution of.....iii. 210
pass through Philadelphia.....iii. 401
discontent of.....iv. 50
memorial to Congress.....iv. 51
anonymous address.....iv. 51
other anonymous papers.....iv. 54
meeting of officers.....iv. 54
addressed by Washington.....iv. 54
resolutions of meeting.....iv. 57
its breaking up described.....iv. 69
contrasted with the British.....iv. 71
American Militia—
fly before the British.....ii. 150
cowardice of.....ii. 175
signalize themselves.....ii. 257
gallant exploits.....ii. 260
American prisoners, treatment of .....ii. 269, 271
American seamen, impressment of..iv. 235
Ames, Fisher—
on the first Congress.....iv. 137
debate on Jefferson's report.....iv. 241
on Washington's farewell address, iv. 281
Amesbury, a British spy.....ii. 308
Amherst, Major General—
to reduce Louisburg.....i. 178
embarks.....i. 179
arrives at the bay of Gabarus.....i. 180
landing of troops.....i. 180
takes Louisburg.....i. 181
supersedes General Abercrombie...i. 194
to advance against Ticonderoga and Crown Point.....i. 195
embarks for Ticonderoga.....i. 196
repairs the works at Ticonderoga and Crown Point.....i. 196
consequences of his delay.....i. 196
further delay.....i. 204
again in the field.....i. 205
arrives at Montreal.....i. 205
Amherst, Captain, despatched to England with news of the capture of Louisburg.....i. 181
Anderson, Ephraim—
plan for destroying British ships...ii. 113
entertained by Congress.....ii. 113
to the President of Congress on his progress.....ii. 114
André, Major—
and the Mischianza.....iii. 115
aide-de-camp to Sir Henry Clinton iii. 253
correspondence with Arnold.....iii. 253
sketch of his life.....iii. 254
attempted interview with Arnold iii. 257
goes on board the Vulture.....iii. 258
interview with Arnold.....iii. 259
remains ashore all night.....iii. 259
anxiety to escape.....iii. 260
crosses to Verplanck's Point.....iii. 261
stopped by patrolling party.....iii. 261
approaches the Neutral Ground...iii. 261
parts with Smith.....iii. 261
stopped by Paulding.....iii. 262
arrested and searched.....iii. 263
taken to North Castle.....iii. 264
sent to Arnold.....iii. 265
brought back.....iii. 265
taken to Lower Salem.....iii. 265
to Washington.....iii. 265
amuses himself by sketching.....iii. 266
propensity for caricature (note)...iii. 266
taken to the Robinson House.....iii. 274
sent to West Point.....iii. 274
conversation with Major Tail madge.....iii. 274
his fate predicted.....iii. 276
arrives at Tappan.....iii. 277
frank confession.....iii. 279
condemned as a spy.....iii. 279
concerning Sir Henry Clinton.....iii. 279
qualities of.....iii. 280
execution postponed.....iii. 282
affecting appeal to Washington...iii. 283
nature of his mission.....iii. 284
British view of his case (note).....iii. 285
his execution.....iii. 286
burial.....iii. 286
transferred to Westminster Abbey.....iii. 286
sympathy in behalf of.....iii. 286
Angel, Colonel, in the fight at Springfield.....iii. 230
Annapolis before the Revolution (note).....i. 214
Anspachers arrived at New York...ii. 203
Arbuthnot, Admiral—
arrival with troops.....iii. 185
convoys expedition to South Carolina.....iii. 188
enters Charleston harbor.....iii. 217
passes Fort Moultrie.....iii. 218
squadron scattered by a storm....iii. 362
encounters the French fleet.....iii. 366
Armstrong, Colonel John, commands expedition against Kittanning.....i. 164
Armstrong, Major General—
to check the British.....ii. 378
at Brandywine.....ii. 384
on Washington (note).....iii. 54
posted at the Schuylkill.....ii. 390
author of anonymous papers.....iv. 58
Armstrong, Captain—
commands at Verplanck's Point..iii. 172
pursues Colonel Coates.....iii. 391
fight at Quimby Creek.....iii. 391
decoyed into an ambush.....iv. 169
Armstrong, Major, attention to Mercer.....ii. 254
Arnold, Benedict—
arrives at Castleton.....i. 288
proposes the surprisal of Ticonderoga and Crown Point.....i. 288

aspires to the command....i. 288
serves as a volunteer....i. 288
desires to command Ticonderoga....i. 289
is disappointed and protests....i. 290
commands armed schooner....i. 290
surprises St. John's....i. 290
rivalry with Ethan Allen....i. 344
opinion of Allen....i. 344
difficulties with Colonel Hinman....i. 347
and the committee of inquiry....i. 347
indignation....i. 347
sets off for Cambridge....i. 348
commands the expedition as lieutenant colonel....i. 358
sets out for Canada....i. 358
to Washington, on the expedition....i. 361
to Washington, on his progress....i. 366
toils of the expedition....i. 366
obstacles to the expedition....i. 381
perseverance....i. 382
embarks on the Chaudiere....i. 382
arrives at Point Levi....i. 383
sudden apparition....i. 383
at Point Levi....i. 401
crosses to Wolf's Cove....i. 402
discovered by a boat from the Lizard....i. 402
on the Heights of Abraham....i. 402
obstacles before him....i. 402
holds a council of war....i. 402
demands a surrender....i. 403
retires to Point aux Trembles....i. 403
joined by Montgomery....ii. 18
leads his division against St. Roque....ii. 31
wounded....ii. 32
assisted back to camp....ii. 33
determination and resources....ii. 34
gallant resolve....ii. 34
promoted to brigadier general....ii. 61
keeps up the blockade....ii. 61
difficulties....ii. 61
accident....ii. 62
obtains leave of absence....ii. 62
at Montreal....ii. 70
affair at the Cedars....ii. 70
council of war....ii. 71
exchange of prisoners....ii. 71
to Commissioners of Congress....ii. 72
joins Sullivan....ii. 79
commands flotilla at Ticonderoga..ii. 185
at Valcour Island....ii. 186
his force....ii. 187
engages the British....ii. 187
escapes the enemy....ii. 188
overtaken, brave resistance....ii. 188
burns his vessels....ii. 188
arrives at Crown Point....ii. 189
passed over by Congress....ii. 285
to Washington on his non-promotion....ii. 286
reasons for....ii. 287
hastens to Danbury....ii. 287
takes post at Ridgefield....ii. 288
throws up a breastwork....ii. 289
narrow escape....ii. 289
presses the enemy hard....ii. 290
made major-general....ii. 290
presented with a horse by Congress....ii. 290
declines the command of the Hudson....ii. 301
business with Congress....ii. 301
commands Philadelphia....ii. 304
volunteers to relieve Fort Schuyler..ii. 365
encourages Gansevoort....ii. 372
reinforced....ii. 373
to Gates, determination....ii. 373
success of his stratagem....ii. 373
selects a camping ground....ii. 393
skirmishes with the enemy....ii. 400
impetuous attack....ii. 401
quarrel with Gates....ii. 403
indignant letter to Gates....ii. 405
tries to goad Gates on....iii. 22
rushes to the fight....iii. 24
desperate valor....iii. 24
storms Burgoyne's camp....iii. 25
wounded....iii. 25
to take command of Philadelphia..iii. 338
unsettled accounts....iii. 195
command of Philadelphia....iii. 195
issues proclamation....iii. 196
style of living....iii. 196
disputes....iii. 196
attachment to Miss Shippen....iii. 196
projects a settlement in New York..iii. 197
charges against....iii. 198
sets out for Albany....iii. 198
address to the public....iii. 198
appeal to Congress....iii. 198
exculpated by Congress....iii. 199
resigns his command....iii. 199
dissatisfaction with Congress....iii. 199
to Washington on the court-martial....iii. 199
marries Miss Shippen....iii. 200
application for a guard....iii. 200
tried by a court-martial....iii. 201
sentenced to be reprimanded....iii. 201
reprimanded by Washington....iii. 202
projects an expedition....iii. 203
and the French minister....iii. 212
applies to rejoin the army....iii. 213
seeks the command of West Point..iii. 238
appointed to the command of West Point....iii. 239
treason of....iii. 252
correspondence with Sir Henry Clinton....iii. 253
desperate state of affairs....iii. 253
takes command of West Point....iii. 254
headquarters at Robinson House..iii. 254
carries on secret correspondence with André....iii. 254
scheme of treachery....iii. 254
attempted interview with André..iii. 257
accompanies Washington....iii. 258
message to Colonel Robinson....iii. 258
interview with André....iii. 259
the bargain completed....iii. 259
returns to headquarters....iii. 260
arrival of Washington....iii. 268
hears of André's capture....iii. 268
flight....iii. 269
escapes to the Vulture....iii. 270
gives up his crew as prisoners of war....iii. 271
to Washington concerning his wife....iii. 271
certificate in behalf of André....iii. 278
to Washington, threatening retaliation for André....iii. 282
rewarded by the British....iii. 287
address to the inhabitants of America....iii. 287
proclamation to the American army....iii. 287
letter from his mother (note)....iii. 290
subsequent fortunes....iii. 290
commands British detachment....iii. 318
arrives in the Chesapeake....iii. 327
buccaneering ravages....iii. 328
takes post at Portsmouth....iii. 328
returns to New York....iii. 332
commands expedition against New London....iii. 399
attacks New London....iii. 399
ravages the town....iii. 400
Arnold, Mrs., hears of Arnold's ruin....iii. 269
interview with Washington....iii. 273
ordered to leave the State....iii. 289
her fortunes....iii. 289
Asgill, Captain Charles....iv. 44
Asgill, Lady, to the Count de Vergennes....iv. 45
Assistance, Writs of....i. 219

Atlee, Colonel, retires before General Grant....ii. 128
forms an ambush and falls back on Lord Sterling....ii. 128
taken prisoner....ii. 131
Augusta ship of war burned....iii. 48

B

Babcock, Colonel, to Governor Cooke, on the agitations in New York....ii. 149
operations of the enemy....ii. 150
Bache's Aurora....iv. 276
Baird, Sir James....iii. 161
Baker, Remember, Ethan Allen's lieutenant....i. 287
Balcarras, Lord, commands light infantry....iii. 23
defends the intrenchments....iii. 25
Ball, Lieutenant Colonel, takes hostile message to Gates....ii. 93
Barbour, Major, carries message to Baron de Viomenil....iv. 32
Bard, Dr. Sam'l, attends Washington.v. 133
Barras, Count de, arrives at Boston.iii. 374
address to Mr. Monroe....v. 293
Barren Hill, Lafayette stationed on.iii. 116
Barton, Colonel, captures General Prescott....ii. 332
voted a sword and promoted....ii. 332
Bastille, Key of....iv. 166
Bati's Hill, occupied by General Sullivan....iii. 150
action at....iii. 150
Baum, Lieutenant, commands expedition against Bennington....ii. 366
sets out from camp....ii. 367
slow march....ii. 367
intrenches himself....ii. 368
defeated....ii. 370
Baylor, Lieutenant Colonel, at Old Tappan....iii. 157
surprised by Major General Grey..iii. 157
Baxter, Colonel, at Fort Washington....ii. 397
killed....ii. 194
Beall, General, to secure Pine's Bridge....ii. 177
Beaugen, Capt. de....i. 142
Bedel, Colonel, in command at the Cedars....ii. 70
menaced by Captain Forster....ii. 70
repairs to Montreal for reinforcements....ii. 70
Bedford Pass neglected....ii. 127
Beefsteak (The) and Tripe Club....i. 55
Bellarni, M., and the American envoys....iv. 296
Belt of Wampum....i. 64
Bemis's Heights fortified....ii. 393
situation of....ii. 399
Bennington, expedition against....ii. 357
situation of....ii. 365
people on the alert....ii. 367
battle of....ii. 369
second battle....ii. 370
spoils of victory....ii. 371
Benson, Egbert, commissioner to New York....iv. 61
Berkshire Committees acquit Schuyler....ii. 66
Bernard, Gov. Sir Francis, calls upon the General Court to rescind their resolution....i. 228
Berthier, Marshal....iii. 378
Beville, General de, reconnoitres....iii. 379
Bienville, Celeron de, despatched with 300 men to the Ohio....i. 46
orders the English traders to depart.i. 46
Biglin's Bridge secured by the British.iv.
Bird, Colonel, commands attack on Peckskill....ii. 275
retreat....ii. 276
Bishop, Washington's servant....i. 186
Black (The) Hunter....i. 116
Black rifle....i. 116
Black Stock Hill, fight at....iii. 311
Blair, John, acting governor....i. 177
judge of Supreme Court....iv. 137
Bland, Colonel, at Brandywine....ii. 385
Bland, Richard, delegate to the General Congress....i. 257
Blockade of Boston, a play....ii. 42
Board of War modified....iii. 66
Bolden (The) Book....i. 17
Bompard, Captain, at New York....iv. 231
Bonaparte on the death of Washington....v. 315
Bonner, Lieutenant Colonel, slain at Monmouth Court-house....iii. 134
Bordentown, public storehouses burned....iii. 108
Boscawen, Admiral, sails for Louisburg....i. 179
receives a vote of praise by Parliament....v. 181
Boskirk, Lieutenant Colonel, surprises Elizabethtown....iii. 192
Boston resists payment of duties....i. 219
demand for British goods diminished....i. 220
riot against stamp-act....i. 224
proceedings in regard to stamp act.i. 225
military demonstrations....i. 228
convention held at....i. 228
arrival of British forces....i. 229
town meeting against the right of the king to send troops....i. 229
refuses to quarter the troops....i. 229
massacre....i. 237
arrival of tea....i. 248
destruction of tea....i. 249
passage of the Boston Port Bill....i. 249
general league recommended at town meeting....i. 251
Port Bill carried into effect....i. 252
excitement in....i. 253
condition of....i. 258
town meetings....i. 258
rumored cannonading of....i. 268
like a place besieged....i. 273
besieged....i. 297
arrival of British troops....i. 299
feeling against the British in....i. 326
in a state of siege....i. 337
question of bombardment....i. 372
preparations in the harbor....ii. 21
destitution and sickness....ii. 39
opening of bombardment....ii. 43
British prepare to evacuate....ii. 48
hurried preparations....ii. 49
evacuation....ii. 49
occupied by the Americans....ii. 51
after the siege....ii. 51
people of, project expedition against Penobscot....iii. 180
Boston frigate engagement with the Ambuscade....iv. 231
Boston massacre....i. 237
Boston Port Bill....i. 249
Boston tea party....i. 249
Botetourt, Lord, Governor of Virginia....i. 232
his manners....i. 232
his promptness....i. 232
his style and equipage....i. 233
opening of the session....i. 233
dissolves the House of Burgesses....i. 234
conciliatory conduct....i. 234
his death....i. 237
Bottle Hill, Americans encamped at.iii. 163
alarm post....iii. 163
Boudinot, Elias, to Pres. Wharton...iii. 69
Bougainville, De, detached to watch Wolfe's movements....i. 209
arrives too late....i. 208

retires.....i. 202
Bouquet, Colonel, stationed at Raystown.....i. 185
attaches an officer and men to Indian scouting parties.....i. 188
halt at Loyal Hannan.....i. 190
sends out a reconnoitring party.....i. 190
Bourlamarque dismantles Ticonderoga and Crown Point.....i. 196
makes a stand at the Isle aux Noix.i. 196
Braam, Van. (See Van Braam.).....
Braddock, Major General Edward, appointed generalissimo of the colonial forces.....i. 108
his character.....i. 108
anecdotes of.....i. 108
lands at Hampton.....i. 109
proceeds to Alexandria.....i. 111
invites Washington to join his staff..i. 111
holds a council.....i. 113
sets out from Alexandria.....i. 117
commencement of troubles.....i. 117
interview with Franklin.....i. 118
sets off for Will's Creek.....i. 118
arrives at Fort Cumberland.....i. 119
his discipline.....i. 120
treatment of Indians.....i. 122
to Governor Morris.....i. 122
his impatience and obstinacy.....i. 123
arrival of conveyances.....i. 124
leaves Fort Cumberland.....i. 125
asks the advice of Washington.....i. 126
advances to attack Fort Duquesne..i. 126
reception of Captain Jack.....i. 127
his delay.....i. 128
solicitude for Washington.....i. 128
continued march.....i. 128
deserted Indian camp.....i. 128
three straggiers shot and scalped....i. 129
difficulties of the march.....i. 129
precautions.....i. 130
encamps at Thickety Run .....i. 130
sends scouts to Fort Duquesne.....i. 130
Scarooyadi's son killed by mistake.i. 131
admirable conduct.....i. 131
tardiness of his march.....i. 132
crosses the Monongahela.....i. 133
commencement of the battle.....i. 134
panic of the advanced guard.....i. 136
attempts to rally them.....i. 135
is wounded; his despair.....i. 137
the route.....i. 137
reach the Great Meadows.....i. 139
his death, dying requests.....i. 139
character.....i. 140
Bradford, Wm., attorney general....iv. 239
death of.....iv. 269
Bradstreet, Lieutenant Colonel, secures a saw-mill .....i. 182
expedition again Fort Frontenac..i. 184
captures the fort.....i. 184
Brandywine (battle of the) cannonading commenced.....ii. 334
conflicting reports.....ii. 335
desperate conflict.....ii. 337
description of the retreat.....ii. 337
Brandywine Creek.....ii. 333
Brannan, Colonel, joins Marion.....iii. 311
Brant, Mohawk sachem.....i. 318
at Niagara.....iii. 154
depredations of .....iii. 295
Breed's Hill.....i. 302
to be fortified.....i. 302
fortified.....i. 303
under the enemy's fire... .....i. 305
Breton Club.....iv. 151
Breyman, Colonel, to the relief of Baum.....ii. 368
arrives, and renews the battle.....ii. 370
mortally wounded..... .....iii. 25
Bridport, Lord, death of Washington.iv. 315
Bright Lightning.....i. 122
British ministry, efforts to suppress smuggling.....i. 219
manufactures, resolutions not to import.....i. 220
officers, their scornful spirit.....i. 228
troops at Boston.....i. 324
send out cruisers.....i. 367
plan of operations.....ii. 20
officers and their amusements.....ii. 39
move against Dorchester Heights..ii. 47
postponed by a storm.... ....ii. 47
retire.....ii. 47
preparations for retreat from Boston.....ii. 48
embarkation from Boston.....ii. 49
designs against New York.....ii. 80
plans for the attack on Long Island.ii. 89
crossing from Long Island.....ii. 149
land at New York.....ii. 149
repulse Americans.....ii. 150
land at Throg's Neck.....ii. 166
ships move up to Bourdett's Ferry.ii. 172
cross the Hudson above Fort Lee...ii. 198
view of affairs.....ii. 210
picket surprised.....ii. 244
army contrasted with American....ii. 252
evacuate the Jerseys.....ii. 310
invasion from Canada.....ii. 314
fleet leaves New York.....ii. 337
enters the Delaware.....ii. 338
sails out of the Capes.....ii. 338
enters the Chesapeake.....ii. 348
Brodhead, Col., expedition against the Indians.....iii. 170
Bromfield, Major, attack on Fort Griswold.....iii. 400
Brooke, Judge, on Washington's hilarity.....iv. 93
Brooke, General, meets Washington at Cambridge.... .....iv. 146
Brooklyn, defences of.....ii. 121
Brooks, Lieutenant General, attacks Burgoyne's camp.....iii. 25
joins Prescott.....i. 302
Brown, Dr., attends Washington.....iv. 312
Brown, Lieutenant, brings flag of truce .....ii. 95
recognition of Washington's rank..ii. 95
Brown, Major John, despatched into Canada.....i. 349
sent to reconnoitre.....i. 359
projects with Allen an attack on Montreal.....i. 363
and Major Livingston take Fort Chamblee.....i. 378
drives Colonel Maclean back.....i. 380
successful feint.....ii. 30
Brown, Colonel, surprises Ticonderoga.....ii. 408
threatens Diamond Island .....ii. 404
Brown, Lieutenant Colonel, commands expedition to Augusta....iii. 222
Brudenell, Mr., accompanies Lady Ackland.....iii. 28
Brunswick troops hired by England..ii. 60
Buford, Colonel, pursued by Tarleton.....iii. 222
rejects Tarleton's proposals.....iii. 223
defeated by Tarleton.....iii. 224
Bunker's Hill to be fortified..... .....i. 301
position of .....i. 302
works thrown up.....i. 307
advance of General Pigot.....i. 308
effect of the American fire.....i. 308
advance of General Howe.....i. 308
British checked .....i. 309
second attack.....i. 309
British again retreat.....i. 310
spectators.....i. 310
third attack.....i. 310
Americans driven from the breastwork on the left.....i. 310
British advance with the bayonet...i. 310
American ammunition exhausted..i. 311
desperate struggle.....i. 311
American retreat.....i. 311

Stark, Reed, and Knowlton maintain their ground....i. 311
Putnam endeavors to rally the troops....i. 311
British take possession....i. 311
résumé....i. 312
relative merits of the American officers....i. 316
occupied by the British....i. 325
Burgesses, (Va.) House of, convened..i. 77
vote thanks to Washington and his officers....i. 99
grant £20,000 for the public service..i. 108
meeting called....i. 252
Bullitt, Captain, brave conduct....i. 191
promoted to Major....i. 192
Burgoyne, General, arrives at Boston i. 297
surprise....i. 298
cannonading at Bunker's Hill....i. 309
described....i. 324
history of....i. 324
accused by Junius....i. 324
"The Maid of the Oaks"....i. 324
Walpole's witticism....i. 324
"The Heiress" praised by Walpole i. 324
correspondence with Lee....i. 339
proposes an interview with Lee....i. 339
in Canada....ii. 77
pursues Sullivan....ii. 79
reported arrival at Quebec....ii. 308
plan of campaign....ii. 314
leaves St. John's....ii. 315
on Lake Champlain....ii. 316
arrives at Crown Point....ii. 317
advancing....ii. 319
issues proclamation....ii. 319
fortifies Mount Hope....ii. 324
pursues the flotilla....ii. 328
moves towards the Hudson....ii. 351
reaches Fort Anne....ii. 351
feeling towards the Indians....ii. 352
murder of Miss McCrea....ii. 353
at Fort Edward....ii. 355
difficulties at....ii. 356
opposite Saratoga....ii. 367
hears of Baum's surrender....ii. 371
correspondence with Gates....ii. 376
dubious position....ii. 395
to Lord Germain on his prospects....ii. 369
silent preparations....ii. 398
moves across the Hudson....ii. 398
march of his army....ii. 398
encamps near Gates....ii. 399
plan of battle....ii. 400
attacked by Arnold....ii. 401
on the situation of the ladies....ii. 402
critical situation....ii. 403
news from Clinton....ii. 403
sends word to Clinton....ii. 403
harassed by the Americans....ii. 405
within intrenchments....iii. 21
movement against Gates....iii. 22
prepares for battle....iii. 23
retreats to his camp....iii. 25
shifts his position....iii. 26
determines on retreat....iii. 27
at the burial of General Fraser....iii. 27
dismal retreat....iii. 27
concerning Lady Ackland....iii. 28
reaches Saratoga....iii. 29
destruction of Schuyler's property....iii. 29
calls a council of war....iii. 30
fortifies his camp....iii. 30
capitulates....iii. 32
terms of capitulation....iii. 32
number of troops....iii. 33
meeting with Gates....iii. 34
kind reception by Schuyler....iii. 36
question of embarkation....iii. 101
Burke, Judge, denounces the Cincinnati....iv. 80
Burke, Edmund, on the employment of men-of-war as custom-house officers....i. 220
on the state of affairs in America..ii. 257
Burr, Aaron, a volunteer....i. 357
Montgomery's aide-de-camp....ii. 28
on the designs of the British....ii. 117
on a reconnoitring expedition....iii. 134
Burton, Lieutenant Colonel, ordered to advance....i. 134
the detachments fall back upon in confusion....i. 135
Bush, Crean....ii. 48
Bushnell's submarine battery....ii. 160
Buskirk, Major....iii. 183
Butler, Colonel, accompanies Wayne....iii. 321
Butler, General, reinforces Greene..iii. 353
at Guilford Court House....iii. 354
Butler, Major General, with General St. Clair....iv. 183
killed....iv. 185
Butler, Lieutenant Colonel, to intercept Colonel Simcoe....iii. 59
Butler, Colonel, at Oriskany....ii. 360
Butler, Colonel John, commands expedition against Wyoming....iii. 154
at Wintermoot's Fort....iii. 154
battle of Wyoming....iii. 155
Butler, Colonel Richard, surprises a party of Hessians....iii. 159
Butler, Colonel Zebulon, in command of Forty Fort....iii. 154
battle of Wyoming....iii. 155
Butlers of Tryon County....i. 318
Butterfield, Major, surrenders the Cedars....ii. 70
Bryant, Lieutenant, at Throg's Neck ii. 166
Byrd, Colonel....i. 179
Byrd, Mr., visits the garrison....ii. 110
Byron, Admiral, arrives at New York....iii. 160
tries to entrap D'Estaing....iii. 160

C.

Cadwalader, Colonel John, commands detachment of volunteers ii. 223
stationed at Bristol....ii. 223
prevented by the ice....ii. 235
dilemma....ii. 240
marches to Burlington....ii. 240
to Washington advising pursuit....ii. 241
sends in pursuit of Donop....ii. 242
at Crosswicks....ii. 245
Cadwalader, Lambert....ii. 105
at Fort Washington....ii. 169
posted in the outer lines....ii. 193
forced to retreat....ii. 194
Caldwell, Reverend James, the "rousing gospel preacher"....iii. 192
his church burnt....iii. 193
his return home....iii. 238
in the fight at Springfield....iii. 231
Caldwell, Mrs., killed by the British iii. 228
popular excitement....iii. 229
Callbeck, Mr., taken prisoner....i. 391
to Washington....i. 391
Calvert, Benedict....i. 246
Cambridge, assembling of patriots...i. 268
Camden, battle of....iii. 246
flight of American militia....iii. 247
burnt by the British....iii. 338
Campbell, Colonel William, pursues Major Ferguson....iii. 306
in the battle of King's Mountain..iii. 307
at Guilford Court House....iii. 354
at Eutaw Springs....iv. 25
charges the British....iv. 26
his death....iv. 27
Campbell, Colonel, orders a retreat..ii. 31
Campbell, Lieutenant Colonel, to attack Fort Montgomery....iii. 16
checked by the Americans....iii. 17

Campbell, Lieut. Colonel—*Continued.*
killed ..... ii. 18
thrown into jail ..... ii. 267
appeals to Washington ..... ii. 267
exchanged for Ethan Allen ..... iii. 117
to surprise New Tappan ..... iii. 157
sails for Georgia ..... iii. 161
lands his troops ..... iii. 161
defeats the Americans ..... iii. 161
takes Savannah ..... iii. 162
moderate conduct ..... iii. 162
detached against Augusta ..... iii. 162
Campbell, Lord, wounded at Sullivan's Island ..... ii. 111
Campbell, Major, takes Ethan Allen prisoner ..... i. 363
Campbell, Major, killed ..... iv. 32
Canada, campaign against ..... i. 170
project of invasion ..... i. 348
defences and disposition ..... i. 351
force of the enemy in ..... ii. 77
expedition against projected ..... iii. 81
found impracticable ..... iii. 88
suspended by Congress ..... iii. 90
Lafayette's scheme against ..... iii. 163
Washington's opposition to ..... iii. 164
abandoned ..... iii. 164
Cape Breton to be reduced ..... i. 173
Caramhe, Lieutenant Governor, apprised of Arnold's designs ..... i. 401
Carleton, Colonel Guy, commands the grenadiers ..... i. 197
commands the battery at the Isle of Orleans ..... i. 197
persuades Indians to war against the Americans ..... i. 373
amount of forces ..... i. 378
embarks from Montreal ..... i. 379
attacked by Colonel Warner ..... i. 379
retreats to Montreal ..... i. 380
flies from Montreal ..... i. 383
escapes in disguise ..... i. 384
arrives at Quebec ..... i. 404
strength of force ..... ii. 18
treatment of Montgomery's messengers ..... ii. 27
captures Dearborn and party ..... ii. 33
reinforced ..... ii. 62
makes a sortie ..... ii. 62
Americans retreat ..... ii. 63
treatment of Americans ..... ii. 63
plan of campaign ..... ii. 186
armament completed ..... ii. 186
takes possession of Crown Point ..... ii. 189
returns to Canada ..... ii. 190
to remain in Canada ..... ii. 314
arrives at New York ..... iv. 46
to Washington on peace ..... iv. 46
to Washington on negotiations for peace ..... iv. 48
to Washington on peace ..... iv. 59
preparations to evacuate New York ..... iv. 61
interview with Washington ..... iv. 61
evacuates New York ..... iv. 71
Carleton, Major, captures Forts Anne and George ..... iii. 294
Carlisle, Earl of, commissioner from Great Britain ..... iii. 119
state of Philadelphia ..... iii. 119
to George Selwyn ..... iii. 122
Carnes, Captain, discovers Champe's escape ..... iii. 292
Carpenter, Captain, joins Lord Stirling ..... ii. 128
Carrington, Lieutenant, at Quimly's Creek ..... iii. 892
Carroll, of Carrollton, and Miss Custis ..... iv. 294
Caswell, General, on the road to Camden ..... iii. 244
at the battle of Camden ..... iii. 247
Cedars, affair at ..... ii. 70
Chadd's Ford ..... ii. 334
Chamberlayne, Mr., asks Washington to dinner ..... i. 439
Champe, John, scheme to entrap Arnold ..... iii. 292
pretended desertion ..... iii. 293
enlists in Arnold's corps ..... iii. 293
failure of his plan ..... iii. 293
rewarded ..... iii. 293
Champlain, Lake, engagement ..... ii. 187
killed and wounded ..... ii. 189
Chapman, Colonel ..... i. 125
Charleston fortified ..... ii. 108
joy at General Lee's arrival ..... ii. 109
expedition against ..... iii. 188
defences of ..... iii. 205
reinforced ..... iii. 213
strength of garrison ..... iii. 218
summoned to surrender ..... iii. 219
British batteries opened on ..... iii. 219
capitulates ..... iii. 222
loss in the siege ..... iii. 222
harlestown, arsenal sacked ..... i. 267
burned ..... i. 309
alarm during the play ..... ii. 42
Charlestown Neck, to be seized by the Americans ..... i. 300
reconnoitred ..... i. 301
described ..... i. 302
Charlottesville, Tarleton enters ..... iii. 883
Chartiers Creek ..... i. 58
Chastellux, Marquis de, arrives at Newport ..... iii. 234
introduced to Washington ..... iii. 238
description of his visit ..... iii. 243
reconnoissance ..... iii. 379
at Mount Vernon ..... iii. 403
anecdote of Mr. Secretary Nelson ..... iv. 29
Chatham, Lord, on the opposition of the colonists to the mutiny act ..... i. 227
opinion of the General Congress ..... i. 264
vain efforts in behalf of America ..... i. 283
conciliatory bill ..... i. 273
Chatterton's Hill, military position ..... ii. 174
attack of the British ..... ii. 175
killed and wounded ..... ii. 175
Cheeseman, Captain, before Quebec ..... ii. 31
death ..... ii. 31
Cherry Valley, atrocities at ..... iii. 167
Chesapeake, expedition against ..... iii. 171
Chestnut Hill, British encamped on ..... iii. 67
Chesterfield Court House, British maraud ..... iii. 369
Chestnut Neck, village destroyed by the British ..... iii. 153
Chew, Benjamin, mansion of ..... iii. 59
Chew's House, fortified by Musgrave ..... iii. 41
Cheyney, Thomas ..... ii. 385
Cholseul, Duke de, prediction ..... i. 327
Choisy, General M. de, arrives with troops ..... iv. 17
crosses York river ..... iv. 21
skirmish with Tarleton ..... iv. 22
Chouin, Major, at the American headquarters ..... iii. 143
Christopher, Washington's servant ..... iv. 312
Church, Dr. Benjamin, treasonable letter ..... i. 303
sentence ..... i. 309
mitigation of sentence—death ..... i. 309
Cincinnati, Society of, formed ..... iv. 82
popular jealousy of ..... iv. 83
modification of its constitution ..... iv. 89
Cincinnati, Society of Massachusetts, address to Washington ..... iv. 148
Clark, Colonel, joins Marion ..... iii. 311
Clarke, Colonel Elijah, on the retreat ..... iii. 304
Clermont, exploit of Colonel Washington ..... iii. 315
Cleveland, Colonel, in the battle of King's Mountain ..... iii. 307
Clinton, Charles ..... ii. 68
Clinton George, conferences with Washington ..... ii. 68
descent and career ..... ii. 68
on the alert for the British ..... ii. 92
promptness in raising levies ..... ii. 93

Clinton, George—*Continued.*
sagacious measures....ii. 93
visits Forts Constitution and Montgomery....ii. 93
arrival of reinforcement....ii. 93
to Washington on the patriotism of the country people....ii. 93
precautions against British ships..ii. 99
contemplates descent on Long Island....ii. 158
on military exigencies....ii. 173
stationed in the Highlands....ii. 182
safety of the Hudson....ii. 205
affair between Generals Lee and Heath....ii. 212
commands the Highland forts....ii. 298
promoted....ii. 299
his patriotism....ii. 299
to Washington on his defences....ii. 299
governor of New York....ii. 339
on the alert....ii. 345
at Kingston....iii. 13
hastens to the Highlands....iii. 14
prepares for an attack....iii. 16
escape....iii. 18
measures to oppose the British....iii. 20
intercepts a letter from Burgoyne to Clinton....iii. 20
reaches Kingston too late....iii. 21
wishes to strengthen the defences of the Hudson....iii. 57
finds money for Hamilton....iii. 59
takes the field....iii. 295
tour with Washington....iv. 67
summons state council at East Chester....iv. 70
at Harlem....iv. 70
enters New York....iv. 71
receives Washington at New York.iv. 115
Clinton, General James....ii. 68
Clinton, James, at the Highlands....ii. 68
descent and career....ii. 68
appointed to command Forts Montgomery and Constitution...ii. 74
the consp racy in New York....ii. 84
put on the alert....ii. 162
in command of Fort Clinton....iii. 14
narrow escape....iii. 17
joins Sullivan....iii. 170
in command of the Northern department....iii. 295
Clinton, Sir Henry, arrives at Boston....i. 297
joins Howe at Bunker's Hill....i. 310
described....i. 323
arrives at New York harbor....ii. 37
interview with the mayor....ii. 37
departure....ii. 38
expedition to the South....ii. 109
lands at Long Island, S. C....ii. 109
constructs batteries....ii. 109
attempts to cross from Long Island....ii. 111
repulsed in another attempt....ii. 112
arrival at New York....ii. 115
lands on Long Island....ii. 123
at Flatlands....ii. 126
marches from Flatlands....ii. 126
secures the Bedford Pass....ii. 127
crosses from Long Island....ii. 150
advances against White Plains....ii. 175
awaits reinforcements....iii. 13
moves up the Hudson....iii. 14
lands at Verplanck's Point....iii. 15
plan of operations....iii. 15
crosses to Stony Point....iii. 15
marches round the Dunderberg...iii. 16
divides his force....iii. 16
meets with opposition....iii. 17
letter to Burgoyne intercepted....iii. 20
project to capture....iii. 107
plan to entrap Lafayette....iii. 116
ordered to evacuate Philadelphia.iii. 119
informs Washington of the arrival of commissioners....iii. 120
evacuates Philadelphia....iii. 124

Clinton, Sir Henry—*Continued.*
dilatory movements....iii. 125
at Allentown....iii. 126
changes plan of route....iii. 126
changes the line of march....iii. 127
encamps near Monmouth Court House....iii. 127
battle of Monmouth Court House.iii. 131
falls back....iii. 132
silent retreat....iii. 133
arrives at Sandy Hook....iii. 135
arrives at Newport....iii. 151
returns to New York....iii. 151
sends troops into the Jerseys and Westchester County....iii. 157
sets on foot a naval expedition against St. Lucia....iii. 161
confined to predatory warfare....iii. 171
expedition up the Hudson....iii. 172
takes Stony Point....iii. 172
captures Fort Lafayette....iii. 172
returns to New York....iii. 173
desolating expedition against Connecticut....iii. 173
capture of Stony Point by Wayne.iii. 179
hastens up the Hudson....iii. 179
fortifies and garrisons Stony Point....iii. 180
returns to Philipsburg....iii. 180
concentrates his forces at New York....iii. 185
expedition to South Carolina....iii. 188
damage during the voyage....iii. 205
at Tybee bay....iii. 205
disembarks at St. John's Island..iii. 205
advance to Charleston....iii. 205
on Charleston Neck....iii. 206
reinforced....iii. 221
fall of Charleston....iii. 222
sends expeditions into the interior....iii. 222
garrisons South Carolina....iii. 225
issues a proclamation....iii. 225
embarks for New York....iii. 225
arrives at New York....iii. 229
project against Rhode Island....iii. 237
changes his plan....iii. 238
correspondence with Arnold....iii. 253
releases Arnold's crew....iii. 271
to Washington claiming the release of André....iii. 278
rejects exchange of Arnold for André....iii. 280
sends commission relative to André....iii. 281
detaches Arnold to Virginia....iii. 318
proceedings on the revolt of Pennsylvania line....iii. 323
on the destruction of Cornwallis' baggage....iii. 340
to Cornwallis for troops....iii. 380
hears of the Virginia expedition..iii. 399
promised relief to Cornwallis....iv. 20
tardy movements....iv. 38
refuses to deliver the murderer of Captain Huddy....iv. 44
recalled at his own request....iv. 46
Closter Dock, landing of British....ii. 199
Clough, Major, killed....iii. 158
Coates, Lieutenant Colonel, at Monk's Corner....iii. 390
decamps in silence....iii. 393
bold stand....iii. 393
Cobble Hill, fortified by Putnam....i. 394
Cochran, Major, expedition against the Onondagas....iii. 170
Cochrane, Major, march from Savannah....iii. 217
Coffin, Major, put to flight....iv. 24
Colburn, Colonel, watches the enemy....iii. 398
Colden, Lieutenant Governor, retires into the fort....i. 225
assailed by the mob....i. 225
burned in effigy....i. 225
Cole, Colonel....i. 451

Collier, Admiral Sir George, convoys expedition to the Chesapeake....iii. 171
expedition up the Hudson....iii. 172
convoys expedition against Connecticut....iii. 174
confers with Sir Henry Clinton...iii. 175
arrives at the Penobscot....iii. 180
relieves the fort....iii. 181
Commissariat, changes in....ii. 343
Commissioners, arrive from Great Britain....iii. 118
land at Philadelphia....iii. 119
letter to Congress....iii. 120
unsuccessful attempts at negotiation....iii. 121
embark for England....iii. 122
Committee of Arrangement, appointed by Congress....iii. 97
report on the sufferings of the army....iii. 98
Committee of Conference with Lord Howe....ii. 144
conference....ii. 144
Committee of Inquiry visit Arnold...i. 347
their instructions....i. 347
Committee of Safety....i. 274
suspect a design on the magazine at Concord....i. 279
urge the enlistment of troops....i. 286
appoint Arnold Colonel....i. 288
Conciliatory bills sent to America...iii. 111
effect of....iii. 113
Concord, military stores collected at....i. 274
expedition against....i. 280
alarm of the people....i. 281
exertions to remove and conceal the stores....i. 281
advance of the British....i. 281
take possession of the town....i. 281
destroy the stores....i. 281
British attacked....i. 281
British retreat harassed by the Americans....i. 282
Confederacy, ratification of the....iii. 326
Congress (General) recommended by the Virginia House of Burgesses....i. 251
first meeting fixed upon....i. 251
assembled....i. 260
prayers....i. 261
rumors that Boston had been cannonaded....i. 261
opening speeches....i. 262
declaration of colonial rights....i. 262
resolutions....i. 263
state papers....i. 264
held at New York....i. 224
denounce the acts of Parliament...i. 224
address to the king and petition to Parliament....i. 224
its discussions....i. 261
masterly state papers....i. 264
the second general....i. 291
petition to the king moved....i. 291
federal union formed....i. 291
council of twelve....i. 291
exercise their federated powers....i. 292
retaliating decree....i. 292
declare Massachusetts absolved from the crown....i. 292
adopt the army....i. 294
elect Washington commander-in-chief....i. 294
other military appointments....i. 295
on the English generals....i. 323
on General Howe....i. 323
accept Ticonderoga....i. 345
determine to invade Canada....i. 348
committee from, confer with Washington....i. 372
order formation of a new army....i. 373
to Schuyler on his proposed resignation....i. 386
order Schuyler to Tryon county....i. 89
Congress (General)—*Continued.*
applaud Schuyler's conduct....ii. 36
divide the middle and southern colonies into two departments...ii. 54
enlistment act....ii. 68
establish a war office....ii. 68
declare the United States free and independent....ii. 88
adopt the Declaration of Independence....ii. 88
settle dispute between Schuyler and Gates....ii. 102
action on Lord Howe's overtures....ii. 144
appoint a committee to confer with Lord Howe....ii. 144
leave the question of the abandonment of New York to Washington's discretion....ii. 149
forbid the destruction of New York....ii. 149
reorganize the army....ii. 157
request Washington to obstruct the Hudson....ii. 168
clothe Washington with additional powers....ii. 223
invest Washington with dictatorial powers....ii. 243
refuse to comply with Lee's request....ii. 266
retaliatory measures....ii. 266
decline the resignation of Schuyler....ii. 278
reprimand Schuyler....ii. 280
make Arnold major-general....ii. 290
vote Arnold a horse....ii. 290
refuse to admit Gates to the floor...ii. 298
summon Schuyler and St. Clair....ii. 342
appoint Gates to the command of the northern department....ii. 342
proceedings of, at the battle of Brandywine....ii. 388
anonymous letter to, against Washington....iii. 80
refuse to treat with Great Britain.iii. 112
recommend the pardoning of Tories....iii. 112
ratifies treaties with France....iii. 113
reception of the despatches of the British commissioners....iii. 121
reply to the commissioners....iii. 121
refuse to negotiate with Johnstone....iii. 121
approve the sentence of Lee....iii. 129
inform Washington of the arrival of the French fleet....iii. 142
approve of d'Estaing's conduct....iii. 152
approve of Lafayette's Canada scheme....iii. 164
deterioration of....iii. 165
vote a gold medal to Major Henry Lee....iii. 184
financial difficulties....iii. 89
charges against Arnold....iii. 198
order court-martial on Arnold....iii. 199
confirm sentence against Arnold..iii. 204
jealousy of military power....iii. 210
appoint a committee to confer with Washington....iii. 210
appoint Gates to the southern department....iii. 234
accept Greene's resignation....iii. 239
reward the captors of André....iii. 287
order a court of inquiry into the conduct of Gates....iii. 293
new system for the organization and support of the army....iii. 296
send Colonel Laurens to France...iii. 319
committee to meet Pennsylvania insurgents....iii. 329
appoint heads of departments....iii. 329
rejoicings at the surrender of Yorktown....iv. 38
resolutions concerning Lafayette.iv. 41
murder of Captain Huddy....iv. 43
proclamation concerning peace...iv. 59

Congress (General)—*Continued.*
resolution concerning the service of the soldiers....iv. 61
threatened by mutineers....iv. 66
discharge of the army....iv. 68
resignation of Washington....iv. 73
its composition....iv. 137
reassemble....iv. 152
assumption of State debts discussed....iv. 159
adopted....iv. 160
discords in....iv. 161
reassemble at Philadelphia....iv. 170
impost and excise bill....iv. 171
assembling of the second....iv. 181
apportionment bill....iv. 187
assemble December, 1793....iv. 235
do justice to Washington....iv. 237
bill to increase naval force....iv. 242
Washington's denunciation of secret societies....iv. 254
response to Washington....iv. 272
reply to Washington's last address.iv. 282
authorize the enlistment of a provisional army....iv. 298
Congress (Massachusetts) at Boston..i. 273
adjourn to Concord....i. 273
assume supreme authority....i. 273
remonstrate with Governor Gage..i. 273
system and order....i. 274
nominate general officers....i. 274
Connecticut abets the opposition of Massachusetts....i. 259
people march towards Boston....i. 284
sends volunteers....i. 286
Legislature of, favor the surprisal of Ticonderoga and Crown Point.i. 287
committee appointed....i. 287
Massachusetts and Rhode Island fit out armed vessels....i. 369
troops desert....i. 389
reception at home....i. 390
troops described by Graydon....ii. 105
by Washington....ii. 106
dingy regimentals....ii. 106
their composition....ii. 107
British expedition against....iii. 173
Connecticut farms sacked by the enemy....iii. 227
Conspiracy in New York....ii. 80
letter relative to (note)....ii. 82
its ramifications....ii. 84
Constitution of the United States, formation of....iv. 106
opposition to....iv. 121
Continental army. (*See* American Army.)
Contrecœur, Captain, surprises the fort....i. 80
Contributions for the Continental Army....iii. 234
Convention of Virginia, at Williamsburg....i. 256
at Richmond....i. 277
for considering and revising the federal system....iv. 105
Conway's Cabal....iii. 50
Conway, General, appointed brigadier-general....ii. 283
character of....ii. 283
in Washington's camp....ii. 380
gallant conduct....ii. 389
pretensions of....iii. 49
joins faction opposed to Washington....iii. 50
correspondence with Gates....iii. 50
attempts at explanation....iii. 52
sends in his resignation....iii. 53
promoted....iii. 69
to Washington on his letter....iii. 85
remains at Albany....iii. 90
to be appointed to the Canada expedition....iii. 81
Lafayette's opinion of....iii. 82
downfall of....iii. 109
resignation accepted....iii. 110

Conway, General—*Continued.*
fails to get reinstated....iii. 110
duel with Cadwalader (note)....iii. 110
penitential letter to Washington (note)....iii. 110
subsequent history (note)....iii. 110
Cook, James, in the expedition against Quebec....i. 197
sounds the river....i. 200
Copp's Hill, British battery on....i. 302
Corbie's Tavern....ii. 80
rendezvous of conspirators....ii. 81
Cornplanter, at the seat of government....iv. 173
Cornwallis, Lord, arrival at New York....ii. 115
lands on Long Island....ii. 123
advances against Hand....ii. 124
posts for the night at Flatbush....ii. 124
leaves Flatbush with the rear-guard....ii. 127
crosses the Hudson above Fort Lee....ii. 199
marches against Washington....ii. 214
at the Delaware....ii. 214
gives up the pursuit....ii. 215
at New York....ii. 224
resumes command in the Jerseys..ii. 244
approaches the American forces...ii. 246
enters Trenton....ii. 246
repulsed by Washington....ii. 246
alarm at the escape of Washington.ii. 252
pushes forward to Princeton....ii. 253
arrives at Brunswick....ii. 253
irksome position....ii. 255
to Washington concerning Hessian prisoners....ii. 257
gains Washington's rear....ii. 385
advances to the attack....ii. 386
marches into Philadelphia....ii. 394
pursues the Americans....iii. 42
takes Fort Mercer....iii. 62
sent into the Jerseys....iii. 157
in the expedition against South Carolina....iii. 188
completes the investment of Charleston....iii. 231
moves against Colonel Buford....iii. 222
approves of Tarleton's conduct..iii. 224
head-quarters at Charleston....iii. 242
at Camden....iii. 246
amount of force....iii. 246
sends in pursuit of Sumter....iii. 248
vigorous measures....iii. 302
takes post at Charlotte....iii. 303
returns to South Carolina....iii. 309
takes post at Winnsborough....iii. 309
plan for invading North Carolina.iii. 334
pursues Morgan....iii. 339
at Ramsour's Mills....iii. 340
destroys his baggage....iii. 340
affair at McGowan's Ford....iii. 342
encamped at Salem....iii. 345
amount of force....iii. 346
march to the Dan....iii. 346
retrograde movement....iii. 349
takes post at Hillsborough....iii. 349
proclamation....iii. 349
encamps near Alamance Creek...iii. 351
attacks the Americans at Wetzell's Mills....iii. 352
battle of Guilford Court House....iii. 354
retreats to Cross Creek....iii. 358
number of troops....iii. 353
at Guilford Court House....iii. 354
retreats to Wilmington....iii. 360
perplexities....iii. 360
sets off for Virginia....iii. 361
arrives at Petersburg....iii. 371
amount of force....iii. 371
renewed hope....iii. 371
movement against Lafayette....iii. 381
reinforced....iii. 383
pursues Lafayette....iii. 382
retrograde march....iii. 384
at Williamsburg....iii. 384

Conway, General—*Continued.*
sets out for Portsmouth....iii. 385
takes post at Yorktown....iii. 402
feeling of security....iii. 402
arrival of De Grasse....iv. 15
retreat cut off....iv. 15
to Clinton on promised relief....iv. 20
draws within the town....iv. 20
to Clinton, critical situation....iv. 33
plan of escape....iv. 34
proposes a capitulation....iv. 35
capitulates....iv. 35
humiliation....iv. 37
treatment by the captors....iv. 38
sails for New York on parol....iv. 39
Corresponding Committees....i. 245
Cortlandt, Van. (See Van Cortlandt.)
Coryell's Ferry, Washington at....ii. 338
Council at Alexandria....i. 113
Council of Indians at Logstown....i. 57
Courtney, Captain, killed in action....iv. 231
Cow Boys....iii. 261
Cowpens, situation of....iii. 336
battle of....iii. 337
killed and wounded....iii. 338
spoils taken....iii. 338
Cox, Colonel, dispute with General Herkimer....ii. 359
shot down....ii. 361
Crajie, Andrew, (note)....i. 329
Cragie House, (note)....i. 321
Craik, Dr. James....i. 92
advises Washington to retire to Mount Vernon....i. 176
a visitor at Mount Vernon....i. 208
accompanies Washington....i. 239
at Mount Vernon....i. 275
appointed to the Hospital Department....ii. 302
to Washington on his secret enemies....iii. 79
application to Washington....iv. 77
accompanies Washington....iv. 81
attends Washington....iv. 312
Crawford, Hugh, brings a message from the Miami tribes....i. 47
Creeks, treaty with....iv. 161
Croghan, George, sent from Pennsylvania to treat with the Indians....i. 47
appointed commissioner....i. 109
his reverses....i. 109
to Governor Morris....i. 115
enlists Indians and hunters....i. 116
letter....i. 116
arrives at Braddock's camp with Indians....i. 121
dangers and escapes....i. 239
Croton River....iii. 313
Crown Point, preparations against....i. 287
to be reduced....i. 178
expedition against....i. 150
surprised by Seth Warner....i. 289
abandoned....ii. 101
abandoned by the Americans....ii. 189
Cruger, Lieutenant Colonel, commands expedition to the district of Ninety Six....iii. 22
commands at Ninety Six....iii. 389
Custis, John Parke, his estate....i. 206
Custis, John Parke, Washington's conduct towards....i. 224
character and education....i. 246
in love....i. 246
marriage....i. 247
death of....iv. 40
Custis, George W. P., accompanies Mrs. Washington....iv. 129
Custis, Mrs. Martha, meeting with Washington....i. 186
Custis, Miss, death of....i. 246
Custis, Eleanor, accompanies Mrs. Washington....iv. 129
accompanies Washington....iv. 287
described....iv. 290
halcyon days, anecdote....iv. 291
marries Lawrence Lewis....iv. 309
Cuyler, Yan Yost....ii. 372
in St. Leger's camp....ii. 373
Currency, derangement of....iii. 189
depreciation of....iii. 209
Cushing, Mrs., to her husband....i. 268
Cushing, Mr....i. 292
Cushing, William, judge of Supreme Court....iv. 136
administers the oath of office to Washington....iv. 209

D.

Dagworthy, Captain....i. 153
Dallas, Mr., interview with Genet....iv. 223
Danbury, expedition against....ii. 287
destroyed by the British....ii. 288
Darke, Colonel, with General St. Clair....iv. 183
at St. Clair's defeat....iv. 185
Dartmouth, Lord, to General Gage....i. 272
D'Aubry, attempts to relieve Fort Niagara....i. 195
is defeated....i. 196
Davidson, John, Indian interpreter....i. 61
Davidson, General, at McGowan's Ford....iii. 343
death of....iii. 344
Davie, General, and Greene....iii. 388
Davie, William Richardson, on mission to France....iv. 308
Davis, Charles Augustus, on Wertmuller's portrait of Washington, (Appendix)....iv. 332
Davis, Reverend Samuel, appreciation of Washington....i. 146
Dayton, Colonel Elias, takes Johnson Hall....ii. 72
retires before Knyphausen....iii. 226
falls in with General Maxwell....iii. 227
fight at Springfield....iii. 230
Deane, Mr., and French officers....ii. 283
Deane, Silas, returns to America....iii. 142
Dearborn, Captain, captured by General Carleton....ii. 33
Dearborn, Major, receives Lady Ackland....iii. 29
De Barras, arrival at the Chesapeake....iv. 17
noble conduct....iv. 17
De Bardt, Dennis, on the mission of Lord Howe....ii. 95
Deborre, General....ii. 380
resignation....ii. 380
Debt of the United States....iv. 153
De Buysson, aide-de-camp to De Kalb....iii. 248
De Fermois, at Ticonderoga....ii. 315
De Grasse, Count de, bound for the Chesapeake....iii. 396
arrives in the Chesapeake....iii. 403
urges Lafayette to attack Yorktown....iv. 15
action with British fleet....iv. 16
junction with De Barras....iv. 17
receives Washington....iv. 18
arrival of Admiral Digby....iv. 18
consents to remain....iv. 19
departure....iv. 39
De Heister, Lieutenant General, on Long Island....ii. 126
reaches Flatbush....ii. 126
cannonades Colonel Hand....ii. 129
advances against Whiteplains....ii. 179
treatment of Lord Stirling....ii. 237
De Kalb, Baron, at Philadelphia....ii. 347
appointed major general....iii. 49
appointed to the Canada expedition....iii. 82
sent to reinforce Lincoln....iii. 208
advance retarded....iii. 244
halts at Deep River....iii. 244
applications for aid....iii. 244
meeting with Gates....iii. 244
at the battle of Camden....iii. 246
death of....iii. 249

De La Croix, M., complaints against the American government.....iv. 278
Delancey, Colonel, loyalists.....iii. 372
surprises Colonel Greene.....iii. 373
Delancey, Lieutenant Governor.....i. 113
De Lancey, Oliver, recruiting on Long Island.....ii. 157
Delaplace, Captain, surprised by Ethan Allen.....i. 289
sent prisoner to Hartford.....i. 289
Delawares, Shawnees, and Mingoes in council at Logstown.....i. 57
De Levi, takes post at Oswegatchie...i. 196
rallies the French forces.....i. 204
approaches Quebec.....i. 204
lands at Point-au-Tremble.....i. 204
is attacked by Murray.....i. 204
repulses him.....i. 204
opens trenches before Quebec.....i. 204
retreat.....i. 205
Democratic Society, formation of...iv. 226
Democratic societies, Washington concerning.....iv. 253
Democrats, party formed.....iv. 173
Denison, Colonel, at the battle of Wyoming.....iii. 155
De Ramsey, commands the garrison at Quebec.....i. 203
D'Estaing, Count, arrival with French fleet.....iii. 142
to Washington on his arrival.....iii. 143
correspondence with Washington.iii. 143
plan of operations.....iii. 143
off Point Judith.....iii. 145
opposite Newport.....iii. 146
arrival of Lord Howe's fleet.....iii. 146
stands out to sea.....iii. 146
manœuvres of the fleets.....iii. 147
return to Newport.....iii. 147
to Sullivan on his intention of proceeding to Boston.....iii. 148
protest of American officers.....iii. 149
proceeds to Boston.....iii. 149
to Congress, explanatory of his conduct.....iii. 152
considerate letter from Washington.....iii. 153
sails for the West Indies.....iii. 160
proclamation to the French Canadians.....iii. 160
arrival on the coast of Georgia....iii. 185
unsuccessful siege of Savannah...iii. 187
wounded.....iii. 187
sails for France.....iii. 188
Destouches, Chevalier, to send ships to the Chesapeake.....iii. 362
encounters the British fleet.....iii. 366
Deuxponts, Count de, wounded.....iv. 32
De Vaudreuil, fortifies himself at Montreal.....i. 205
threatened by General Amherst.....i. 205
capitulates.....i. 205
Dick, Dr., attends Washington.....iv. 312
Dickinson, drafts a petition to the king and an address to the people of Canada.....i. 264
Dickinson, General Philemon, gallant exploit of.....ii. 260
to watch the enemy.....iii. 128
alarm signals.....iii. 163
Dickinson, Major, slain at Monmouth Court House.....iii. 134
Dieskau, Baron de, takes post at Crown Point.....i. 151
mortally wounded.....i. 152
Digby, Admiral, on negotiations for peace.....iv. 48
Digges, Mr.....i. 214
Dinwiddie, Governor.....i. 60
calls upon the governors of the other provinces to make common cause against the foe.....i. 77
convenes the House of Burgesses...i. 77
to Washington, about Captain Mackay.....i. 92
orders Washington to Will's Creek.i. 102
Dinwindle, Governor—*Continued.*
his perplexities.....i. 102
refuses to give up the French prisoners.....i. 105
efforts to secure Indian allies.....i. 110
convenes the Assembly.....i. 144
conduct to Washington.....i. 145
unsatisfactory relations with Washington.....i. 168
his interference with Washington..i. 168
pique against Washington.....i. 169
ungracious reply to Washington....i. 172
prejudice against Washington.....i. 175
conduct towards Washington.....i. 176
sails for England.....i. 176
character.....i. 177
Dismal Swamp.....i. 215
Dismal Swamp Company.....i. 215
District of Columbia ceded to the United States.....iv. 161
Dobb's Ferry, British at.....ii. 180
works thrown up.....iii. 238
Donop, Count, at Long Island.....ii. 124
storms the redoubt.....ii. 129
crosses from Long Island.....ii. 150
decoyed by Colonel Griffin.....ii. 240
precipitate retreat.....ii. 241
attacks Fort Mercer.....iii. 47
repulsed.....iii. 47
death of.....iii. 48
Donop's Yagers surprised.....iii. 159
Dorchester Heights, to be fortified....i. 301
preparations to occupy.....ii. 42
letters relative to.....ii. 43
fortification of.....ii. 44
effect on the British.....ii. 45
cannonaded by the British.....ii. 46
Drucour, Chevalier, in command of Louisburg.....i. 180
defence and surrender.....i. 181
Drummond's Pond.....i. 215
Duane, Mr., controversy with Gates..ii. 208
Duché, Mr., chaplain to the General Congress.....i. 261
officiates.....i. 261
effect of prayer.....i. 261
Ducoudray, Monsieur.....ii. 283
Duer, William, to Schuyler.....ii. 340
Dumas, Count Matthew, accompanies Washington.....iii. 267
Washington's reception by the people.....iii. 267
on the French camp.....iii. 273
to Washington with pamphlet....iv. 295
Dunbar, Colonel.....i. 126
his terror.....i. 141
Dundas, Colonel, accompanies Arnold.....iii. 318
commands at Gloucester Point....iv. 20
foraging.....iv. 22
capitulation of Yorktown.....iv. 35
Dunlap, William, portrait of Washington (appendix).....i.
Dunmore, Earl of, Governor of Virginia.....i. 244
lingers at New York.....i. 244
haughty bearing.....i. 244
friendly relations with Washington.....i. 245
social position.....i. 249
dissolves the House of Burgesses..i. 250
seizes the military munitions of Virginia.....i. 285
timely concession.....i. 285
proclaims martial law.....i. 374
exercises martial law.....i. 396
to Howe, proposing a servile war.....ii. 15
Washington's opinion of.....ii. 15
Dunmore, Lady, ball in honor of.....i. 251
Duplessis, Captain Mauduit, at Fort Mercer.....iii. 46
attentions to Count Donop.....iii. 48
Du Portail, General, urges the evacuation of Charleston.....iii. 221
reconnoitres.....iii. 379

Durham, Bishop of, his state and splendor.....i. 16
Durkee, Captain, joins Putnam.....i. 286

E.

East India Company, affected by the tax on tea.....i. 248
ships large quantities to the colonies.....i. 248
ships sent back unladen.....i. 248
Easton, Colonel, at Ticonderoga.....i. 348
Easton, James, in the expedition against Ticonderoga.....i. 288
Eaton, General, reinforces Greene..iii. 353
at Guilford Court House.....iii. 354
Eden, William, commissioner from Great Britain.....iii. 119
disposition towards America.....iii. 119
Edmonson, Captain, in command of Fort Pitt.....i. 239
Elizabethtown, Livingston's account of.....ii. 88
surprised by the British.....iii. 192
Elizabethtown Point, descent of British.....iii. 226
Elliott, Lieutenant-Governor, on commission concerning André..iii. 281
Ellsworth, in the mission to France.iv. 307
Emerson, Rev. William, description of American camp.....i. 326
on the labors of the army.....i. 333
discipline in camp.....i. 334
England prepares for military operations in America.....i. 107
plan of campaign.....i. 108
detains vessels bound for France.iv. 234
impressment of American seamen.iv. 235
her infatuation.....i. 278
restrictive policy.....i. 217
English claims to the Ohio Valley.....i. 44
English officers and Indian squaws..i. 122
luxurious habits.....i. 125
their baggage and camp equipage..i. 125
bravery.....i. 136
Enos, Colonel, leaves Arnold with his command.....i. 281
Erskine, General Sir William, on Long Island.....ii. 123
urges a night attack.....ii. 246
in the expedition against Danbury.ii. 287
drives back the Americans.....ii. 290
Eutaw Springs, battle of.....iv. 24
Evans, Rev. Mr., anecdote of.....iv. 21
Everett, Edward, Washington on Dorchester Heights.....ii. 45
Ewing, Colonel, passage of British ships up the Hudson.....ii. 160
Ewing, General, prevented by the ice.....ii. 235
Eyre, Lieutenant-Colonel, at New London.....iii. 309
mortally wounded.....iii. 399

F.

Fairfax, Bryan, fox hunting.....i. 230
to Washington, advising a petition.i. 254
to Washington, on the resolutions..i. 255
to Washington, in reply.....i. 257
effect of the battle of Lexington..i. 285
visits Washington.....iii. 101
to Washington on his courtesy....iii. 102
subsequent history (note).....iii. 102
Fairfax, Colonel, to Washington.....i. 160
Fairfax, George William, fox hunting.....i. 212
departs for England.....i. 266
in England.....iv. 79
(note).....iv. 95
Fairfax, Thomas, Lord, his character and history.....i. 34
his style of living.....i. 41
organizes a troop of horse.....i. 136
Fairfax, Thomas, Lord—*Continued.*
calls out the militia to defend Winchester.....i. 147
menaced by Indians.....i. 158
decides to remain.....i. 159
occupations, fox hunting.....i. 212
hunting.....i. 230
his last days.....iv. 79
Fairfax, William.....i. 31
his counsels to Washington.....i. 93
Fairfield destroyed by the British...iii. 174
Fair Haven ravaged by the British..iii. 151
Fairlie, Major, anecdote.....iv. 93
Falls of Montmorency.....i. 198
Falmouth destroyed by the British...i. 370
Faneuil Hall, British troops quartered in.....i. 316
meetings at.....i. 259
Fauchet, Mr., succeeds Genet.....iv. 243
intercepted despatch.....iv. 264
exonerates Randolph.....iv. 266
Faulkner, Captain, with General St. Clair.....iv. 183
Fauquier, Francis, appointed to succeed Dinwiddie.....i. 177
Fauquier, Lieutenant-Governor, dissolves the assembly.....i. 222
Federalist, The.....iv. 123
Federalists spring up.....iv. 173
Fellows, General, opposite Saratoga Ford.....iii. 27
opens fire on the British.....iii. 29
Felton, Professor, correction of error (note).....i. 329
Fenno's Gazette, Adams' papers.....iv. 178
Ferguson, Dr. Adam, secretary to commissioners from Great Britain.....iii. 119
Ferguson, Major Patrick, commands expedition to Little Egg Harbor.iii. 158
massacres American infantry.....iii. 159
march from Savannah.....iii. 217
described.....iii. 219
on violence to women.....iii. 220
detached to North Carolina.....iii. 302
takes post at Gilbertown.....iii. 304
issues an address.....iii. 305
retreats.....iii. 305
takes post on King's Mountain....iii. 307
defeated.....iii. 307
Fermois, Brigadier-General, accompanies Gates.....ii. 231
Fersen, Count, to hurry on the French troops.....iv. 17
Fire-ships sent to destroy Wolfe's fleet.....i. 197
Fishburn, Benjamin, nomination of.....iv. 133
Washington's reasons for.....iv. 133
Fishing in Virginia.....i. 213
Fishing Creek, defeat of Sumter....iii. 249
Fitzgerald, Colonel, at Princeton....ii. 250
Fitzhugh, Colonel.....i. 104
Flagg, Major, killed.....iii. 373
Fleury, Louis.....ii. 380
presented with a horse by Congress.....ii. 389
Col., at Fort Mifflin.....iii. 56
promoted.....iii. 57
inspector.....iii. 104
at the storming of Stony Point....iii. 177
Fontainebleau, treaty of.....i. 262
Forbes, Brigadier-General, to reduce Fort Duquesne.....i. 173
detained at Philadelphia.....i. 185
respect for Washington.....i. 190
Forbes, Gilbert, conspirator.....ii. 81
paid for arms.....ii. 82
Foreign officers, applicants for admission to the patriot army.....ii. 282
embarrassments about.....ii. 283
Forest, Captain.....ii. 232
Forster, Captain, besieges the Cedars.....ii. 70
captures the post.....ii. 70
Fort Anne captured.....iii. 294

Fort Chamblee taken by Majors Brown and Livingston....i. 378
Fort Clinton, its strength....iii. 14
attack of the British....iii. 17
captured....iii. 17
Fort Constitution....ii. 73
its garrison....ii. 73, 143
commanded by West Point....ii. 183
evacuated....iii. 19
Fort Cumberland....i. 101
Fort Defiance....ii. 326
erected by Wayne....iv. 255
Fort Duquesne, its site....i. 61
completed....i. 94
Washington advises a rapid attack..i. 126
report of scouts....i. 130
to be reduced....i. 178
abandoned by the French....i. 193
name changed to Fort Pitt....i. 193
Fort Edward....i. 151
Fort Frontenac captured....i. 184
Fort George captured by Carleton..iii. 294
Fort George at Coram taken....iii. 311
Fort Griswold taken by the British..iii. 399
Fort Independence....ii. 74
abandoned....ii. 180
evacuated by the Americans....iii. 19
evacuated by the British....iii. 36
Fort Johnson....ii. 108
Fort Lafayette, cannonaded....iii. 172
capitulates....iii. 173
Fort Lee....ii. 169
menaced....ii. 181
preparations to abandon....ii. 198
retreat from....ii. 199
Fort Loudoun....i. 166
Fort Mercer....iii. 38
garrison of....iii. 46
Washington on importance of....iii. 46
attacked by Count Donop....iii. 47
garrison increased....iii. 56
taken by Cornwallis....iii. 62
Fort Mifflin....iii. 38
garrison of....iii. 45
repulses naval attack....iii. 48
garrison increased....iii. 55
attacked by Howe....iii. 55
evacuated....iii. 56
Fort Montgomery....ii. 73
its garrison....ii. 73
the chevaux-de-frise....iii. 14
stormed by the British....iii. 18
Fort Moultrie surrendered....iii. 221
Fort Motte, taken by Marion and Lee....iii. 389
Fort Necessity....i. 92, 96
capitulation of....i. 98
Fort Niagara, besieged....i. 195
surrenders....i. 196
Fort Ninety Six, siege of....iii. 389
Fort Pitt....i. 181
blockaded by Indians....i. 216
Indian encampment....i. 239
Fort Schuyler, invested by Colonel St. Leger....ii. 357
its strength and garrison....ii. 358
summoned to surrender....ii. 358
news of relief....ii. 358
expedition against the Onondagas..iii. 170
Fort Stanwix, invested by Colone St. Leger....ii. 357
Fort Washington....ii. 74
chevaux de-frise sunk near by....ii. 115
strongly garrisoned....ii. 173
cannonade at....ii. 173
menaced....ii. 180
question of evacuating....ii. 181
summoned to surrender....ii. 192
amount of garrison....ii. 192
British attack....ii. 193
surrendered....ii. 195
number of prisoners, (note)....ii. 197
Fort Watson, taken by Lee and Marion....iii. 388
Fort William Henry, attacked by Montcalm....i. 174
Fort William Henry—*Continued.*
captured and destroyed....i. 174
Forty Fort, Colonel Zebulon Butler in command of....iii. 155
Fox, opinion of George Johnstone..iii. 119
Fox-hunting in Virginia....i. 36, 212
Foy, Captain, secretary to Earl of Dunmore....i. 244
France, treaty with the United States....iii. 111
ratified by Congress....iii. 113
rejoicing in United States....iii. 113
declares war against England....iv. 214
scarcity in....iv. 284
violates treaty with the United States....iv. 279
indignities towards America....iv. 294
threatened war with....iv. 297
Francis, Colonel....ii. 327
in St. Clair's retreat....ii. 329
falls....ii. 350
Franklin, Benjamin, arrives at Fredericktown....i. 117
opinion of Braddock and the expedition....i. 118
departs for Lancaster....i. 118
sends conveyances to Braddock....i. 124
observation on Braddock's defeat..i. 142
in London, as American agent....i. 221
before the House of Commons....i. 226
on committee to confer with Washington....i. 372
on committee to confer with Lord Howe....ii. 144
acquaintance with Howe....ii. 144
to Howe, referring to past acquaintance....ii. 144
and Lord Howe, anecdote....ii. 146
exertions for aid from France....iv. 42
anecdote....iv. 105
Fraser, General, in the invasion from Canada....ii. 314
at Three Mile Point....ii. 319
in Ticonderoga....ii. 327
pursues the Americans....ii. 327
overtakes and attacks St. Clair's rear-guard....ii. 330
in the attack on Gates....iii. 22
commands the advance....iii. 23
shot down....iii. 26
dying request....iii. 26
death....iii 26
burial of....iii. 27
Frazer, General, at Three Rivers....ii. 77
captures General Thompson....ii. 78
Frazier, John, an Indian trader....i. 48
at Turtle Creek....i. 61
at Venango....i. 64
Washington with....i. 74
Fraunces, Samuel, steward of the Presidential household....iv. 131
Freemasons' Tavern, Washington's headquarters....iii. 259
French claim the Ohio Valley....i. 43
prepare for hostilities....i. 53
launch an armed vessel on Lake Ontario....i. 53
influence with Indians increasing..i. 59
deserters....i. 62
Creek....i. 66
surprised by Washington....i. 86
relax their vigilance....i. 101
bravado....i. 129
attack Braddock's advance guard..i. 135
defeat Braddock....i. 135
force engaged....i. 142
attack General Johnson's camp....i. 151
menace Forts Ontario and Oswego..i. 170
fire their camp and retreat....i. 182
defeated by regulars and Indians..i. 196
during the war....i. 219
fleet, arrival of....iii. 142
off Sandy Hook....iii. 143
off Point Judith....iii. 145
return to Newport....iii. 147
scattered by a storm....iii. 148

French—*Continued.*
arrive at Rhode Island....iii. 234
sail from Newport....iii. 364
officers, their camp....iii. 377
reception of Washington....iii. 378
troops cross to Stony Point....iii. 397
move toward Virginia....iii. 397
pass through Philadelphia....iii. 401
revolution....iv. 143
Freneau, Philip, edits the National Gazette....iv. 189
and Hamilton....iv. 201
Frestel, M., arrives with George Washington Lafayette....iv. 269
departs from New York....iv. 292
Frothingham, Richard, jr., history of the siege of Boston, (note)....i. 313
Fry, Colonel, makes a treaty with the Delawares, Shawnees, and Mingoes, on behalf of Virginia....i. 58
Fry, Colonel Joshua,....i. 78
death of....i. 91

G.

Gabrouski, Count, in the expedition to Fort Montgomery....iii. 16
his death....iii. 18
Gadsden, Colonel, commands Fort Johnson....ii. 109
Gadsden, Lieutenant Governor, in Charleston....iii. 219
Gage, General Thomas....i. 132
crosses the Monongahela with the advance....i. 133
wounded....i. 135
to take command of the siege of Fort Niagara....i. 195
military commander of Massachusetts....i. 252
history of....i. 252
erroneous opinion of Americans....i. 252
issues a proclamation....i. 253
perplexities....i. 258
at a loss how to act....i. 258
on the feeling in Berkshire County.i. 259
on the General Congress....i. 259
military measures....i. 267
orders all munitions of war to Boston....i. 267
fortifies Boston Neck....i. 268
to Dartmouth....i. 268
issues writs for a general election..i. 273
countermands the writs....i. 273
enters into explanations with the Assembly....i. 273
critical situation....i. 273
resolves to destroy the magazine at Concord....i. 279
astonishment....i. 284
issues a proclamation....i. 298
astonishment at the fortifications on Breed's Hill....i. 304
determines to carry the works....i. 304
calls a council of war....i. 304
in Boston....i. 325
correspondence with Washington on treatment of prisoners....i. 340
connection with the burning of Falmouth....i. 371
sails for England....i. 371
to Lord Dartmouth....i. 372
Gall, Brigadier General, commands redoubts....iii. 22
Gambier, Admiral, commands the British fleet....iii. 152
Gamble, Captain....ii. 269
Gansevoort, Colonel, commands Fort Schuyler....ii. 358
sends for succor....ii. 363
Garth, Brigadier General, expedition against Connecticut....iii. 174
Gates, Horatio....i. 119
before Fort Duquesne....i. 132
at Mount Vernon....i. 275

Gates, Horatio—*Continued.*
birth....i. 275
education....i. 275
serves under Cornwallis....i. 275
captain of an independent company of New York....i. 275
in Braddock's campaign....i. 275
with General Monckton in the West Indies....i. 275
at the capture of Martinico....i. 275
despatched to London....i. 275
promotion....i. 275
sells out on half-pay....i. 275
emigrates to Virginia....i. 275
purchases an estate....i. 275
appearance and manners....i. 275
receives the news of Lexington....i. 285
appointed adjutant general....i. 295
arrival in camp....i. 333
services....i. 333
estrangement from Washington....i. 333
sent to Congress with Canadian despatches....ii. 66
promoted....ii. 66
appointed to the command in Canada....ii. 77
question of command with Schuyler....ii. 101
arrives at Crown Point....ii. 101
at Ticonderoga....ii. 102
question of command settled....ii. 102
strengthens his works....ii. 189
in New Jersey with reinforcements....ii. 217
joins Washington....ii. 224
declines to co-operate with Washington....ii. 227
criticism of Washington....ii. 227
question of command....ii. 293
to Mr. Lovell on the command....ii. 294
petulant letter to Washington....ii. 295
to Mr. Lovell, charging Washington with sectional partialities....ii. 295
sets out for Philadelphia....ii. 296
before Congress....ii. 297
ordered to withdraw....ii. 298
commands at Ticonderoga....ii. 277
disappointment....ii. 277
tendered the office of adjutant general....ii. 279
rejects the proposal....ii. 279
committee appointed to confer with him....ii. 280
to command at Ticonderoga....ii. 281
arrives at Albany....ii. 281
on the alert for a command....ii. 340
urged for command of Northern Department....ii. 342
appointed by Congress....ii. 342
to Washington, in high spirits....ii. 375
conduct to Schuyler....ii. 375
correspondence with Burgoyne....ii. 376
anecdote (note)....ii. 376
at Bemis' Heights....ii. 399
provokes Arnold....ii. 402
jealousy of Arnold....ii. 403
quarrel with Arnold....ii. 404
bides his time....iii. 22
begins the battle....iii. 23
plan of attack....iii. 23
sends to recall Arnold....iii. 24
in Burgoyne's camp....iii. 26
measures to insure a surrender....iii. 26
terms of Burgoyne's capitulation..iii. 32
number of troops....iii. 33
humanity and forbearance....iii. 33
meeting with Burgoyne....iii. 34
appearance of his camp....iii. 34
elation at his success....iii. 50
disrespect to Washington....iii. 50
indisposition to reinforce Washington....iii. 58
president of the Board of War....iii. 66
in the ascendant....iii. 76
the Conway letter....iii. 76
perplexities....iii. 77

Gates, Horatio—*Continued.*
to Washington on the Conway letter....iii. 77
projects an invasion of Canada....iii. 81
correspondence with Washington.iii. 81
at Yorktown....iii. 82
on Stark....iii. 82
to Washington on the Conway correspondence....iii. 83
to Washington concerning Conway....iii. 86
to Wilkinson about the Conway letter....iii. 92
reconciliation with Wilkinson....iii. 93
to resume command of the Northern Department....iii. 109
sent to Danbury....iii. 157
to command the Southern Department....iii. 234
meeting with De Kalb....iii. 244
march to Camden....iii. 245
amount of force under....iii. 246
encounters Cornwallis....iii. 246
council of war....iii. 216
battle of Camden....iii. 247
retreats....iii. 247
proceeds towards Charlotte....iii. 248
makes a stand at Hillsborough....iii. 250
to Washington on his defeat....iii. 251
altered fortunes....iii. 293
collects his army at Hillsborough.iii. 312
advances to Charlotte....iii. 312
sympathizing letter from Washington....iii. 313
change of feeling toward Greene..iii. 314
reception by the General Assembly of Virginia....iii. 314
presides over committee of officers....iv. 54
Genet, Edmund Charles, minister to the United States....iv. 215
lands at Charleston....iv. 215
issues commissions for privateers.iv. 216
journey to Philadelphia....iv. 216
described....iv. 216
reception at Philadelphia....iv. 216
presents his letter of credence....iv. 219
diplomatic speech....iv. 219
takes umbrage....iv. 221
dissatisfaction with government..iv. 221
demands the release of two Americans....iv. 222
case of the Little Sarah....iv. 223
at New York....iv. 231
grievances of....iv. 233
complains of Jefferson....iv. 233
appeal to the people....iv. 233
to Jefferson on enlistments....iv. 242
his recall....iv. 243
Gentlemen Associators....i. 163
George II., anecdote....i. 90
on Lord Howe....ii. 55
George III., plan of invasion....ii. 314
Georgia joins the league....i. 291
expedition against....iii. 161
reduced to submission....iii. 161
Gerard, Monsieur, arrival of....iii. 142
Germain, Lord George, plan of invasion....ii. 314
on the surrender of Cornwallis....iv. 88
Germantown, Washington's camp at.ii. 338
situation of....iii. 33
battle of....iii. 40
Wayne's attack....iii. 40
Greene's attack....iii. 42
panic in the American army....iii. 42
loss on both sides....iii. 42
Washington on....iii. 43
Captain Heth on....iii. 43
Wayne on....iii. 43
effect of....iii. 44
English opinion of....iii. 44
effect in France....iii. 44
effect on the American army....iii. 44
Gerry, Elbridge, anecdote of Warren....i. 312
Gerry, Elbridge—*Continued.*
suggested to accompany Gen. Lee..*i.* 339
envoy to France....iv. 295
Gibbon, Lieutenant, leads forlorn hope at Stony Point....iii. 177
Giles, Mr., moves resolutions concerning Hamilton....iv. 208
speech concerning Washington's administration....iv. 288
Gimat, Lieutenant Colonel, to lead the advance....iv. 31
Gist, Christopher, despatched to explore the Ohio....i. 47
threatened by traders....i. 48
his reception at Muskingum....i. 48
visits the Shawnees on the Scioto...i. 49
arrives at Piqua....i. 49
forms an alliance with two Miami tribes....i. 49
returns to the Shawnee town....i. 50
is deterred from descending to Great Falls....i. 50
returns across Kentucky....i. 51
arrives at his home on the banks of the Yadkin....i. 51
his home has been desolated by Indians, but his family are saved....i. 51
rejoins them....i. 51
proceeds to survey the lands of the Ohio Company....i. 53
builds a fort at Chartier's Creek....i. 58
commences a settlement near Laurel Hill....i. 58
accompanies Washington....i. 61
at Murdering Town....i. 71
crosses the Allegany River....i. 74
hands and feet frozen....i. 74
joins Washington....i. 86
sets off as scout....i. 130
his report....i. 130
to Washington....i. 155
to co operate with Rodney....ii. 380
skirmishes....iii. 68
Gloucester Point fortified....iv. 20
Glover, General, with Massachusetts regiment....ii. 134
harasses the British....ii. 171
crosses the Delaware....ii. 230
to reinforce Schuyler....ii. 335
to move to Red Bank....iii. 62
Gooch, Captain, takes a message to Magaw....ii. 195
Gouvion, Colonel, reconnoitres the British posts....iii. 298
Grafton, Duke of, resigns....i. 236
Graham, Sergeant, employed by Governor Tryon....ii. 81
Granby captured by Lee....iii. 389
Grant, Major, foolhardiness....i. 190
defeated....i. 191
misrepresentations of America....i. 278
his bruggart speech....i. 278
Grant, General, on Long Island....ii. 123
drives in the picket....ii. 128
pushes Stirling....ii. 131
warns Rahl of the attack....ii. 231
commands expedition against St. Lucia....iii. 161
commands the right wing....iii. 39
Graves, Admiral, connection with the burning of Falmouth....i. 371
arrives at New York....iii. 237
off the capes of Virginia....iv. 16
action with De Grasse....iv. 16
bears away for New York....iv. 17
Gray's Elegy, anecdote of Wolfe....i. 201
Graydon, Alexander, at New York...ii. 105
characterizes Mifflin....ii. 105
appearance of Maryland troops....ii. 105
Pennsylvania troops....ii. 105
Connecticut light horse....ii. 105
at the American camp....ii. 311
account of Wayne....ii. 312
shabby clothing of the troops....ii. 313
Grayson, Colonel, reconnoitering....ii. 135
to Lee on crossing the Hudson....ii. 199

Great Tree, at the seat of government ..... iv. 173
Great Britain, aggressive measures towards the United States ..... iv. 243
excitement on account of ..... iv. 243
treaty with ratified ..... iv. 265
Great Meadows ..... i. 85, 95
affair of the ..... i. 96, 101
Greene, Colonel Christopher, commands Fort Mercer ..... iii. 46
repulses Count Donop ..... iii. 47
receives thanks of Congress ..... iii. 49
surprised by Delancey ..... iii. 373
death and history of ..... iii. 373
Greene, Nathaniel, appointed brigadier general ..... i. 295
commanding Rhode Island troops ..... i. 327
birth and parentage ..... i. 327
early education ..... i. 327
military taste ..... i. 327
addresses Washington ..... i. 327
appearance and manner ..... i. 327
under Major General Lee ..... i. 334
on the destruction of Falmouth ..... i. 370
respect for Franklin ..... i. 372
veneration for Washington ..... i. 377
sympathizes with Washington ..... ii. 18
to Henry Ward on the disposition to disband ..... ii. 18
cheerfulness ..... ii. 18
stationed on Long Island ..... ii. 58
pushes the works ..... ii. 74
meets Alexander Hamilton ..... ii. 85
becomes acquainted ..... ii. 87
at Brooklyn ..... ii. 121
illness ..... ii. 122
a soldier's yearnings for home ..... ii. 142
relative to abandoning New York ..... ii. 148
on the retreat from New York (note) ..... ii. 150
to Washington offering aid ..... ii. 167
promoted ..... ii. 159
attack on the British frigates ..... ii. 173
precautions against the enemy ..... ii. 180
to Washington against abandoning Fort Washington ..... ii. 181
reinforces Fort Washington ..... ii. 191
reinforces Mugaw ..... ii. 192
on the movements of Lee ..... ii. 213
ardor for the attack on Trenton ..... ii. 229
harasses the enemy's advance ..... ii. 246
at Morristown ..... ii. 258
despatched to Philadelphia ..... ii. 275
inspects the Highland forts ..... ii. 300
advance to the relief ..... ii. 387
desperate conflict ..... ii. 387
at the battle of Germantown ..... iii. 42
to repair to Red Bank ..... iii. 62
on exploit of Lafayette ..... iii. 65
appointed quartermaster-general ..... iii. 106
detached to flank the enemy ..... iii. 129
repulses the enemy ..... iii. 131
detached to the expedition against Rhode Island ..... iii. 144
on board of the French fleet ..... iii. 145
interview with D'Estaing ..... iii. 148
in command at Short Hills ..... iii. 229
fight at Springfield ..... iii. 231
difficulty with Congress ..... iii. 239
resignation accepted ..... iii. 239
presides over board of general officers ..... iii. 278
meets the British commissioners ..... iii. 282
ordered to West Point ..... iii. 291
appointed to command the southern army ..... iii. 294
arrives at Charlotte ..... iii. 313
delicacy to Gates ..... iii. 313
to Washington on Gates ..... iii. 314
number of troops ..... iii. 314
military aphorisms ..... iii. 314
state of the country ..... iii. 315
reorganizes the army ..... iii. 316
at Cheraw Hills ..... iii. 316
to Washington on the state of the army ..... iii. 316
Greene—Nathaniel—*Continued.*
to Washington on the battle of the Cowpens ..... iii. 341
hastens to Morgan's camp ..... iii. 342
to Huger on Cornwallis's move ments ..... iii. 342
his Fabian policy ..... iii. 342
disposition of his troops ..... iii. 342
Mrs. Steele, anecdote ..... iii. 345
at Guilford Court House ..... iii. 346
summons a council of war ..... iii. 345
amount of force ..... iii. 346
pushes for the Dan ..... iii. 346
masterly retreat ..... iii. 347
crosses the Dan ..... iii. 347
to Jefferson on his retreat ..... iii. 348
to Washington on the same ..... iii. 348
recrosses the Dan ..... iii. 350
at Troublesome Creek ..... iii. 352
reinforced ..... iii. 353
number of troops ..... iii. 353
at Guilford ..... iii. 353
disposition of troops ..... iii. 354
battle of Guilford Court House ..... iii. 354
orders a retreat ..... iii. 356
to Washington on Cornwallis ..... iii. 357
pursues Cornwallis ..... iii. 358
at Deep River ..... iii. 358
reduction of force ..... iii. 359
change of plans to Washington ..... iii. 359
to Lafayette on Cornwallis ..... iii. 360
discharges his militia ..... iii. 360
sets out for Camden ..... iii. 360
at Hobkirk's Hill ..... iii. 388
retreats before Lord Rawdon ..... iii. 388
on the Wateree ..... iii. 388
gloomy prospects ..... iii. 388
before the fortress of Ninety-Six ..... iii. 389
retreats across the Saluda ..... iii. 389
to Washington on cavalry ..... iii. 389
pursued by Rawdon ..... iii. 389
on the Waterlee ..... iii. 390
to Sumter urging active measures ..... iii. 390
from Washington concerning reinforcements ..... iii. 394
on the hills of Santee ..... iv. 23
marches against Colonel Stuart ..... iv. 24
battle of Eutaw Springs ..... iv. 24
resumes his position ..... iv. 27
follows Stuart ..... iv. 28
to Washington on the battle of Eutaw Springs ..... iv. 28
Washington in the dance ..... iv. 92
death of ..... iv. 96
Green Mountain Boys ..... i. 287
fresh corps to be raised ..... i. 346
elect Warner lieutenant-colonel ..... i. 351
arrival at camp ..... i. 360
Greenway Court ..... i. 41
menaced by Indians ..... i. 158
Gregg, Colonel, in quest of Indians ..... ii. 368
Grenville, George, advises American taxation ..... i. 220
dismissed from the Cabinet ..... i. 226
explanation of British measures ..... iv. 244
Grey, Major General Sir Charles, sent to surprise Wayne ..... ii. 392
presses the American troops ..... iii. 42
on a ravaging expedition ..... iii. 151
surprises Baylor's dragoons ..... iii. 157
raised to the peerage ..... iii. 160
Gridley, Colonel, commanding artillery ..... i. 299
reconnoitres Charlestown Neck ..... i. 301
accompanies detachment for Bunker's Hill ..... i. 301
plans fortifications ..... i. 302
superintends fortification of Dorchester Heights ..... ii. 44
Gridley, Captain Samuel, commands artillery ..... i. 301
Griffin, Colonel, co-operates with Washington ..... ii. 228
decoys Donop ..... ii. 240
Griffith, Colonel, joins Washington at New York ..... ii. 103

Guilford Court House, battle of.....iii. 354
after the battle.....iii. 356
loss on both sides.....iii. 356

H.

Hackensack, American army at.....ii. 201
Haff, James, confession.....ii. 84
Hale, Colonel, gives way.....ii. 330
death.....ii. 331
Hale, Nathan, sketch of (note).....iii. 276
Half Town, at the seat of government.....iv. 173
Halifax intrenched by Kosciuszko..iii. 348
Halket, Sir Peter.....i. 125
Hall, Colonel, at McGowan's Ford..iii. 343
Hamilton, Governor.....i. 47
Hamilton, Brigadier General, in the invasion from Canada.....ii. 314
command of Burgoyne's camp....iii. 22
Hamilton, Alexander, commands a provincial company.....ii. 86
birth and early days.....ii. 86
education.....ii. 86
addresses a public meeting.....ii. 87
captain of artillery.....ii. 87
acquaintance with General Greene.ii. 87
brings up the rear in the retreat...ii. 136
interview with Washington.....ii. 153
at the Raritan.....ii. 208
on the situation of Cornwallis.....ii. 255
rapid rise.....ii. 312
despatched to Congress.....ii. 348
mission to Gates.....iii. 51, 57
concludes his mission.....iii. 59
and Putnam's hobby-horse.....iii. 59
emphatical letter to Putnam.....iii. 60
on the reluctance of the troops....iii. 60
reasons against the abduction of Sir Henry Clinton.....iii. 108
on the decision of council of war.iii. 125
boards the French fleet.....iii. 143
to Washington on the enemy.....iii. 228
breakfasts with Arnold.....iii. 268
learns of Arnold's treason.....iii. 270
sent in pursuit of Arnold.....iii. 270
return to Washington with letters.iii. 271
describes interview between Washington and Mrs. Arnold.....iii. 273
account of André's conduct.....iii. 279
at dinner with Chastellux.....iii. 308
eulogium of Washington.....iii. 329
misunderstanding with Washington.....iii. 330
dislike of the office of aide-de-camp.....iii. 332
ambitious for distinction.....iii. 332
reconciliation with Washington ..iii. 333
leads the advance on the redoubts.iv. 31
enters the redoubts.....iv. 31
at Washington's inauguration.....iv. 117
and the new constitution.....iv. 123
on presidential etiquette.....iv. 127
on the French revolution.....iv. 144
report on the national debt.....iv. 154
plan for its liquidation.....iv. 154
opposition to.....iv. 155
monarchical views.....iv. 158
conversation with Jefferson.....iv. 159
urges a national bank.....iv. 171
on the British constitution.....iv. 191
on monarchy and stock gambling.iv. 197
urges Washington to serve another term.....iv. 199
attack on Jefferson.....iv. 201
to Washington on dissension with Jefferson.....iv. 202
on the French revolution.....iv. 217
concerning French prizes.....iv. 221
case of the Little Sarah.....iv. 223
intention to resign.....iv. 229
on war with Great Britain.....iv. 245
recommends Jay.....iv. 246
plan for the redemption of the public debt.....iv. 256
Hamilton, Alexander—*Continued.*
sends in his resignation.....iv. 256
to Washington on his resignation.iv. 256
on Rufus King.....iv. 275
to Washington, his farewell address.....iv. 280
to Washington on threatened war with France.....iv. 297
to Washington on his appointment as commander-in-chief.....iv. 299
second in command.....iv. 300
Hammond, Mr., British minister and Genet.....iv. 216
Hampton, Colonel.....ii. 292
Hampton, Colonel Henry, to watch Orangeburg.....iii. 390
Hampton, Col. Wade, at Dorchester.iii. 390
before Charleston.....iii. 390
at Eutaw Springs.....iv. 26
rallies the cavalry.....iv. 26
Hamtramck, Major, sent after deserters.....iv. 183
Hancock, John, president of the provincial Congress.....i. 273
ap rised of the movements of troops.....i. 279
president of Congress.....i. 291
ambition to be commander-in-chief.i. 293
mortification.....i. 294
excepted from proffered pardon...i. 298
invites Washington to be his guest.....ii, 67
ordering Gates to the command of the northern department.....ii. 281
invitation to Washington.....iv. 145
observance of etiquette.....iv. 146
reception of Washington, point of etiquette.....iv. 147
waives the point.....iv. 147
visit to Washington.....iv. 148
Hand, Colonel, retreats before the enemy at Gravesend.....ii. 123
prepared for defence.....ii. 123
watches the central road.....ii. 124
holds the bridge at Throg's Neck...ii. 166
intercepts the Hessians.....ii. 234
society of the Cincinnati.....iv. 62
Hanging Rock successfully attacked by Sumter.....iii. 244
Harcourt, Colonel, joins Howe.....ii. 172
captures General Lee.....ii. 219
Hardin, Col., scouring the country..iv. 23
decoyed into an ambush.....iv. 169
battle with Indians.....iv. 169
Harmer, Brigadier General, leads an expedition against the Indians..iv. 168
destroys Miami village.....iv. 169
expedition reported to Congress..iv. 173
Harnage, Major.....ii. 402
Harrison, Benjamin, delegated to the General Congress.....i. 257
on committee to confer with Washington.....i. 372
on the bombardment of Boston....i. 372
member of the board of war and ordnance.....ii. 68
Harrison, Robert, secretary to Washington.....i. 373
characterized.....ii. 258
referee for exchange of prisoners.....ii. 265
to Congress predicting the enemy's repulse.....ii. 384
appointment of.....iv. 137
Hartshorn, Ensign, decoyed into an ambush.....iv. 169
Haslet, Colonel John, joins Lord Stirling's brigade.....ii. 126
statement of.....ii. 130
attempt to take Rogers the renegade.....ii. 171
publicly thanked.....ii. 171
detached to Chatterton's Hill.....ii. 174
killed at Princeton.....ii. 251
Hay, Colonel, to Washington on the protection of the Highlands.....ii. 67

Haviland, Colonel, crosses Lake Champlain ..... i. 205
Hazard, postmaster, to Gates concerning Lee ..... ii. 164
on the Hessians (note) ..... iii. 257
Hazelwood, Commodore, in the Delaware ..... iii. 46
receives thanks of Congress ..... iii. 49
Heath, General, takes command of the minute men ..... i. 282
brings them to a halt ..... i. 283
appointed brigadier general ..... i. 295
to fortify Lechmere Point ..... i. 394
despatched to New York ..... ii. 56
on the discipline of Mifflin's troops. ii. 121
preparations to receive the enemy. ii. 121
retreat from Long Island ..... ii. 138
to keep guard on New York island. ii. 149
landing of the British at Throg's Neck ..... ii. 166
skilful distribution of his troops ... ii. 166
appearance of the enemy at White Plains ..... ii. 175
the two armies at White Plains .... ii. 176
American defences ..... ii. 176
to secure the Highlands ..... ii. 182
in command at the Highlands ..... ii. 184
described ..... ii. 184
refuses to obey Lee ..... ii. 203
to Washington for instructions .... ii. 205
refuses to order troops for Lee ..... ii. 212
military punctilio ..... ii. 212
on the conduct of Lee ..... ii. 213
to march into the Jerseys ..... ii. 242
advances towards New York ..... ii. 254
pompous summons to Fort Independence ..... ii. 255
rebuked by Washington ..... ii. 255
stationed in the Highlands ..... iii. 188
charmed with the French officers. iii. 236
commands West Point ..... iii. 396
Henderson, Lieutenant Colonel, joins Greene ..... iv. 24
at Eutaw Springs ..... iv. 24
severely wounded ..... iv. 25
Hendrick, Mokawk warrior, slain .... i. 152
Henfield, Gideon, case of ..... iv. 226
Henry, Patrick, introduces his resolutions ..... i. 222
speech on his resolutions ..... i. 222
anecdote ..... i. 222
delegate to the General Congress ... i. 257
sets out for Philadelphia ..... i. 259
sectional distinctions ..... i. 260
speech at the opening of the General Congress ..... i. 262
opinion of Washington ..... i. 264
speech before the convention at Richmond ..... i. 277
letter to against Washington ..... iii. 79
declines appointment ..... iv. 308
Herkimer, General, commands in Tryon County ..... ii. 320
at Oriskany ..... ii. 358
dispute with his officers .... ii. 359
attacked by the enemy ..... ii. 360
wounded ..... ii. 360
death ..... ii. 361
Herrick, Colonel, at Bennington ..... ii. 369
Hertburn, William de, progenitor of the Washingtons ..... i. 16
Hessians hired by England ..... ii. 60
in Canada ..... ii. 60
arrive in America ..... ii. 115
sanguinary fury ..... ii. 130
reinforce Howe ..... ii. 172
American opinion of ..... ii. 224
stationed at Trenton ..... ii. 225
captured by Washington .... ii. 234
treatment ..... ii. 237
plunder both sides ..... ii. 238
described by Hazard (note) ..... ii. 258
tactics ..... ii. 263
Heth, Captain, on the battle of Germantown ..... iii. 43
to Colonel Lamb, on the same .... iii. 44
Hickey, Thomas, Washington's body guard ..... ii. 81
convicted and hanged ..... ii. 82
Highlands, state of defences ..... iii. 13
Hill, Lieutenant Colonel, attacks Colonel Long ..... ii. 329
Hinman, Colonel, to reinforce Ticonderoga ..... i. 345
arrives at Ticonderoga ..... i. 346
difficulties with Arnold ..... i. 347
in command of Ticonderoga ..... i. 349
Hitchcock, Colonel, reinforces Cadwalader ..... ii. 224
Hobkirk's Hill, affair at ..... iv. 388
Holbourne, Admiral, demonstration against Louisburg ..... i. 175
Holmes, Rear Admiral ..... i. 199, 200
Hood, Commodore, on the troubles in Boston ..... i. 228
to Grenville on the sedition ..... i. 235
Hotham, Commodore, convoys expedition against St. Lucia ..... iii. 161
Houdon's bust of Washington (appendix) ..... i. 324
takes a model of Washington ..... iv. 88
House of Representatives on the public credit ..... iv. 136
opposition to Washington ..... iv. 273
make provision for the treaty ..... iv. 274
reply to Washington's last address ..... iv. 282
Howard, Major, retreating ..... iii. 130
Howard, Colonel, under Morgan .... iii. 316
at the battle of the Cowpens ..... iii. 336
Howe, Lord, in the expedition against Ticonderoga ..... i. 182
dies while leading the van ..... i. 182
Howe, Admiral Lord, fondness for business ..... ii. 53
character and services .... ii. 53
arrives at New York ..... ii. 94
proclamation of ..... ii. 94
comes as a mediator ..... ii. 95
sends flag of truce ..... ii. 96
sends General Sullivan on parole to Congress with overtures ..... ii. 143
plan of compromise ..... ii. 143
to Franklin on re-union of Great Britain and America ..... ii. 145
conference with Commissioners .. ii. 145
and Franklin, anecdote ..... ii. 146
conflagration in New York ..... ii. 156
issues proclamation .... ii. 210
to Washington on the treatment of prisoners ..... ii. 269
gets his fleet into the Delaware .... iii. 98
at Sandy Hook .. .. iii. 135
brings his fleet to the relief of R.I. iii. 146
manœuvres of the fleets ..... iii. 146
bears away to New York ..... iii. 148
returns to England ..... iii. 152
Howe, General Robert, at Savannah ..... iii. 161
defeated by the British ..... iii. 161
Howe, Major General, quells mutiny ..... iii. 326
despatched to quell a mutiny ..... iv. 66
Howe, Sir William, in the expedition against Quebec ..... i. 197
ascends the heights of Abraham .... i. 201
arrives at Boston ..... i. 297
lands with troops at Moulton's Point ..... i. 306
reconnoitres the American works .. i. 306
sends for reinforcements .... i. 306
prepares for the assault ..... i. 308
advances against the fence ..... i. 308
troops thrown into confusion ..... i. 309
makes a feint of attacking the fence ..... i. 310
wounded ..... i. 310
description of .... i. 323
reproached by Congress ..... i. 323
intrenched ..... i. 325
measures taken ..... i. 374
issues proclamations ..... i. 374

Howe, Sir William—*Continued.*
to Washington concerning Ethan Allen....i. 392
measures to repress excesses....ii. 39
perplexed....ii. 46
declines attacking Dorchester Height....ii. 47
retreat from Boston....ii. 49
steers for Halifax....ii. 53
indolent disposition....ii. 53
arrives at New York....ii. 84
to his government on the state of affairs....ii. 84
plans for the battle of Long Island.ii. 126
accompanies division from Flatlands....ii. 127
at Throg's Neck....ii. 170
lands on Pell's Point....ii. 171
at New Rochelle....ii. 171
postpones the assault....ii. 177
plan of attack on Fort Washington....ii. 193
the attack....ii. 193
conduct of the seamen....ii. 199
hears of the capture of the Hessians....ii. 244
on the march....ii. 245
contrasted with Washington....ii. 261
to Washington concerning Lee....ii. 265
to Lord Germaine, relative to Lee..ii. 265
prepares to attack Peekskill....ii. 275
crosses to the Jerseys....ii. 303
sallies from Brunswick....ii. 304
endeavors to draw Washington out....ii. 307
another attempt....ii. 308
evacuates the Jerseys....ii. 309
leaves New York....ii. 337
enters the Delaware....ii. 338
sails out of the capes....ii. 338
lands from the fleet....ii. 378
issues proclamation....ii. 379
at Elkton....ii. 382
battle of Brandywine....ii. 384
neglects to pursue his advantage..ii. 389
pushes for Philadelphia....ii. 393
halts at Germantown....ii. 393
detaches a force against Billingsport....iii. 38
headquarters....iii. 39
constructing redoubts on Province Island....iii. 55
attacks Fort Mifflin....iii. 55
expedition against Fort Mercer....iii. 62
preparing to drive Washington beyond the mountains....iii. 67
meditates attack on the American camp....iii. 67
manœuvres....iii. 68
retires to Philadelphia....iii. 69
excesses of foraging parties....iii. 108
resignation accepted....iii. 114
the Mischianza....iii. 114
Hubbard, Colonel, at Bennington....ii. 369
Huddy, Captain Joseph, murdered in revenge for Philip White....iv. 43
Hudson River, defences of....ii. 38
strategetical position....ii. 98
defences....ii. 159
British ships move up....ii. 159
new obstructions....ii. 161
opened for the British....iii. 19
Huger, Brigadier General, at Monk's Corner....iii. 219
surprised by Tarleton....iii. 220
in command on the Pedee....iii. 342
at Guilford Court House....iii. 345, 354
Hughes, Colonel, ordered to impress water-craft....ii. 136
Humphreys, Colonel, on preparation for attacking the British posts...iii. 298
accompanies Washington to Mt. Vernon....iv. 404
to Washington on the troubles in Massachusetts....iv. 102
meets Washington....iv. 105
Humphreys, Colonel—*Continued.*
inauguration of Washington....iv. 117
Washington's first levee, anecdote.iv. 128
Huntington, Colonel, hangs on the enemy's rear....ii. 289
Huntington, Major....ii. 212
Huntington, General, to join Varnum....iii. 62
on the destitution of the troops...iii. 71
society of the Cincinnati....iv. 62

I.

Independence, dawning spirit of....i. 219
Indian council at Logstown....i. 57, 62
Indian traders, described....i. 44
Indian warfare....iii. 154
Indian war dance....i. 39
Indians, leave Braddock....i. 124
retreat....i. 149
outrages of....i. 158
troubles with....i. 239
visit Washington at Cambridge....i. 353
with Burgoyne....ii. 352
murder Miss McCrea....ii. 353
desert Burgoyne....ii. 356
described by a Hessian....ii. 366
oblige St. Leger to decamp....ii. 373
difficulties with....iv. 168
hostilities north of the Ohio....iv. 235
treaty with Wayne....iv. 271
Innes, Colonel, at Winchester....i. 91
concerning the Indians....i. 124
Iredell, James, judge of supreme court....iv. 187
Iroquois, stand aloof....i. 183
Irvine, Colonel, taken prisoner....ii. 78
Irvine, James, Brigadier-General, taken prisoner....iii. 67

J.

Jack, Captain, commands hunters....i. 116
at Little Meadows....i. 127
departs with his band....i. 127
Jackson, Andrew....iv. 283
Jackson, Major, accompanies Washington....iv. 146
Washington's reception at Boston....iv. 147
Jacobin Club....iv. 151
Jacobs, Captain, Indian sachem....i. 164
killed....i. 165
Jameson, Lieutenant-Colonel, sends papers found on André to Washington....iii. 265
informs Arnold of the capture of André....iii. 265
Jay, John, drafts address to the people of Great Britain....i. 264
and the conspiracy in New York..ii. 80
to Rutledge....ii. 163
to Gouverneur Morris, on the defence of New York....ii. 163
to Rutledge, concerning Lee....ii. 164
on the opposition to Washington (note)....iii. 96
approves of Arnold's plan of settlement in New York....iii. 197
correspondence with Washington.iv. 110
at the head of affairs....iv. 123
appointed chief justice....iv. 137
on republicanism....iv. 158
concerning Genet....iv. 233
envoy to Great Britain....iv. 246
progress of negotiations....iv. 278
his treaty with France....iv. 280
return to America....iv. 280
elected Governor of New York....iv. 280
Jefferson, Thomas, Arnold's invasion....iii. 327
correspondence with Washington.iii. 329
escapes to Carter's Mountain....ii. 383
on Knox and Humphreys....iv. 128

Jefferson, Thomas—*Continued.*
anecdotes related by....iv. 128
sketch of character and opinions.iv. 138
in Paris....iv. 139
opinions on the new constitution.iv. 140
re-eligibility of the President....iv. 140
horror of kingly rule....iv. 140
on titles....iv. 140
Washington's election to the Presidency....iv. 140
on French politics....iv. 141
and the leading patriots....iv. 142
to Paine on the National Assemsembly....iv. 142
on the French revolution....iv. 143
appointed secretary of state....iv. 151
arrives at New York....iv. 157
impressions concerning the political tone of society....iv. 157
conversation with Hamilton....iv. 159
remonstrates with Washington on ceremonials....iv. 161
discords in Congress....iv. 163
concerning Hamilton....iv. 163
accompanies Washington to Rhode Island....iv. 167
opposed to a national bank....iv. 171
rivalry with Hamilton....v. 172
sympathy with the French revolution....iv. 178
hatred of royalty....iv. 179
intention of retirement....iv. 189
concerning Hamilton....iv. 190
appreciation of Hamilton....iv. 190
conversation between Hamilton and Adams....iv. 191
urging Washington not to retire..iv. 194
to Lafayette, suspicions....iv. 196
conversation with Washington on political matters....iv. 197
to Washington on dissensions with Hamilton....iv. 203
concerning Gouverneur Morris....iv. 209
on the atrocities of the French revolution....iv. 211
to Madison, on the war between England and France....iv. 216
to Madison on Genet's speech....iv. 219
conversation with Washington on attacks of the press....iv. 220
on Freneau's paper....iv. 220
concerning French prizes....iv. 221
relative to Washington's illness...iv. 222
case of the Little Sarah....iv. 223
concerning recall of Genet....iv. 227
intention to resign....iv. 229
interview with Washington....iv. 229
to Genet, announcing application for his recall....iv. 232
report on the state of trade....iv. 237
rebuke to Genet....iv. 238
retirement from office....iv. 238
at Monticello....iv. 239
character of Washington....iv. 240
on war with Great Britain....iv. 244
to Tench Coxe, from Monticello...iv. 247
to Monroe, on Washington's influence....iv. 276
on breach of official trust....iv. 276
elected vice-president....iv. 284
takes the oath of office....iv. 286
Jeskakake, Shannoah sachem....i. 64
Johnson family, power in New York.i. 317
style of living....i. 318
adherents....i. 318
incite the Indians to hostility....i. 344
Johnson, Colonel Guy, supports the royal cause....i. 318
fortifies Guy's Park....i. 318
holds an Indian council....i. 318
doubtful intentions....i. 318
at Montreal....i. 351
contemplates hostilities....ii. 72
Johnson, Sir John, supports the royal cause....i. 318
fortifies the family hall....i. 318
Johnson, Sir John—*Continued.*
fortifies Johnson Hall....ii. 35
prepares for hostilities....ii. 35
surrenders to General Schuyler....ii. 35
contemplates hostilities....ii. 72
retreats among the Indians....ii. 72
rumored to be in the field....ii. 72
contemplated inroad of....iii. 307
on his way to attack Fort Schuyler....ii. 317
depredations....iii. 294
Johnson, Sir William....i. 114
expedition against Crown Point....i. 150
defeats the French....i. 152
erects Fort William Henry....i. 152
made baronet and superintendent of Indian affairs....i. 152
joins Abercrombie....i. 183
to attack Fort Niagara....i. 195
conducts the siege....i. 195
captures the fort....i. 196
before Montreal....i. 205
influence with the Six Nations....i. 216
concern at the difficulties....i. 31
death....i. 317
Johnson, of Maryland, nominates Washington commander-in-chief.i. 294
Johnstone, George, commissioner from Great Britain....iii. 119
Fox's opinion of....iii. 119
on the state of Philadelphia....iii. 120
attempt to bribe General Reed....iii. 121
to Robert Morris, attempts at corruption....iii. 121
Joncaire, Captain....i. 51
his history....i. 51
appears at Logstown....i. 52
addresses the chiefs....i. 52
writes to the Governor of Pennsylvania....i. 52
interview with Washington....i. 64
entertains Washington at supper..i. 65
his diplomacy with the Indians....i. 65
Jones, David, Lieutenant, and Miss McCrea....ii. 353
Jones, Honorable Joseph, letter on army grievances....iv. 56
Jumonville, his death....i. 87
instructions found upon him....i. 87
Junius, description of Lord Botetourt....i. 232

K.

Kane, Major, letter to, intercepted..i. 367
Kelly, Major, destroys bridge at Stony Brook....ii. 250
Kentucky admitted into the Union.iv. 173
Keppel, Commodore, arrives with his squadron....i. 110
furnishes cannon....i. 110
Kiashuta, a Seneca sachem....i. 242
King, Rufus, concerning Genet....iv. 233
character of....iv. 275
minister to Great Britain....iv. 275
King's bridge to be fortified....ii. 40
reconnoitred by Washington....ii. 74
works at....ii. 74
fortified camp at....ii. 152
demonstration at....iii. 379
relinquished by the British....iv. 70
King's County committee, accusing Schuyler....ii. 65
disaffected....ii. 118
King's Mountain, situation....iii. 307
battle of....iii. 307
its effect....iii. 307
Kingston burnt by the British....iii. 21
Kingston, Lieutenant, bears a note to Gates....iii. 32
Kinlock, Captain, takes summons to Colonel Buford....iii. 223
Kip's Bay, landing of British....ii. 150
anecdote of Washington....ii. 150
Kirkwood at Eutaw Springs....iv. 26

Kitchel, Anna (note).....iii. 191
Kittanning, taken and burned.....i. 164
Knowlton, Captain, joins Putnam...i. 286
leads a fatigue party.....i. 301
puts up a rampart.....i. 307
repulses General Howe.....i. 308
maintains his position.....i. 311
promoted to major.....i. 334
captures a British guard.....ii. 42
to attack Staten Island.....ii. 114
gallant affair at an outpost.....ii. 154
wounded.....ii. 155
death.....ii. 155
Knox, Henry, offers to obtain artillery and ordnance stores.....i. 375
account of.....i. 375
instruction.....i. 376
sets off on his errand.....i. 376
to Washington concerning artillery and stores.....ii. 20
arrival at camp.....ii. 40
stentorian lungs.....ii. 230
promoted.....ii. 258
sent to Massachusetts.....ii. 272
inspects the forts of the Highlands.ii. 300
objects to leave Chew's house garrisoned.....iii. 41
accompanies Washington.....iii. 267
described by Chastellux.....iii. 300
despatched to the eastern States..iii. 322
and Washington, anecdote.....iv. 33
moves patriotic resolutions.....iv. 57
suggests the society of the Cincinnati.....iv. 62
at Harlem.....iv. 70
enters New York.....iv. 71
parting with Washington.....iv. 71
to Washington concerning Massachusetts insurgents.....iv. 102
meets Washington.....iv. 105
reception of Washington.....iv. 115
at Washington's inauguration.....iv. 115
officiates as secretary of war.....iv. 125
described.....iv. 124
presidential etiquette.....iv. 127
appointed secretary of war.....iv. 135
in favor of a national bank.....iv. 172
sides with Hamilton.....iv. 172
concerning French prizes.....iv. 221
case of the Little Sarah.....iv. 223
concerning recall of Genet.....iv. 227
and Washington, anecdote.....iv. 228
to Washington resigning.....iv. 257
position assigned to.....iv. 300
to Washington on his appointment.....iv. 300
to Washington on his reply.....iv. 301
Knox, Lieutenant, leads forlorn hope at Stony Point.....iii. 177
Knyphausen, Gen., reinforces Howe.ii. 172
menaces Fort Washington.....ii. 180
at Cecil Court House.....ii. 382
attempts to cross Chadd's Ford.....ii. 386
moves with the British vanguard.iii. 128
sent into Westchester County.....iii. 157
left in command of New York.....iii. 188
prepares for defence.....iii. 191
sends expeditions against Newark and Elizabethtown.....iii. 192
plans descent into the Jerseys.....iii. 226
passes through Elizabethtown.....iii. 226
sack of Connecticut farms.....iii. 227
presses on toward Morristown.....iii. 227
halt before Springfield.....iii. 227
retreat.....iii. 227
indecision.....iii. 228
assailed for the murder of Mrs. Caldwell.....iii. 229
moves against Springfield.....iii. 229
engages the Americans.....iii. 230
retreat.....iii. 231
Kosciuszko, Thaddeus, joins the army.....i. 284
fortifies Bemis' Heights.....ii. 308
advances to the Dan.....iii. 346
intrenches Halifax.....iii. 344

L.

Lafayette, George Washington.....iv. 212
arrives in America.....iv. 269
accompanies Washington.....iv. 287
departs from New York.....iv. 292
rejoins his family.....iv. 292
Lafayette, Madame de.....iv. 212
Lafayette, Marquis de, at Philadelphia.....ii. 347
offers letters of recommendation..ii. 347
his appeal.....ii. 347
appointed major general.....ii. 347
meets Washington.....ii. 347
description of American army.....ii. 348
modest reply to Washington.....ii. 348
nature of his appointment.....ii. 348
joins Sullivan's division.....ii. 386
wounded.....ii. 386
on Howe's neglect.....ii. 390
to Washington, account of skirmish.....iii. 66
appointed to a division.....iii. 96
proceed to Yorktown.....iii. 81
toasts the commander-in-chief....iii. 82
sets out for Albany.....iii. 82
to Washington, anticipations.....iii. 82
perplexities.....iii. 89
to Washington on his troubles.....iii. 89
returns to Valley Forge.....iii. 90
keeps watch in Philadelphia.....iii. 116
encamps on Barren Hill.....iii. 116
nearly surrounded.....iii. 117
extricates himself.....iii. 117
commands the advance.....iii. 126
resigns command to Lee.....i i. 127
detached to the expedition against Rhode Island.....iii. 144
interview with D'Estaing.....iii. 148
sets out for Boston to see D'Estaing.....iii. 149
returns to the American camp....iii. 151
brings off the pickets and covering parties.....iii. 151
asks leave of absence.....iii. 163
project for the conquest of Canada.....iii. 163
arrival at Boston.....iii. 211
reaches the American camp.....iii. 212
reception by Congress.....iii. 212
despatched to the French commanders.....iii. 236
accompanies Washington.....iii. 267
proposes exchange of André for Arnold.....iii. 280
commands the advance guard.....iii. 296
attempted enterprise.....iii. 297
anxious for action.....iii. 297
in the camp of the Pennsylvania mutineers.....iii. 323
to Washington on Hamilton.....iii. 333
in command of detachment.....iii. 363
instructions.....iii. 363
sets out on his march.....iii. 363
further instructions.....iii. 364
forced marches for Virginia.....iii. 365
at the head of Elk.....iii. 366
arrives at York.....iii. 366
marches to join Greene.....iii. 366
saves Richmond.....iii. 369
to Washington on Lund Washington's compromise.....iii. 370
refuses to correspond with Arnold.iii. 382
retires from before Cornwallis....iii. 382
assumes the aggressive.....iii. 383
joined by Steuben.....iii. 384
follows Cornwallis.....iii. 385
retreats to Green Springs.....iii. 386
account of his campaign.....iii. 387
to Washington on the embarkation of the British.....iii. 395
measures to cut off Cornwallis's retreat.....iii. 402
to Washington urging him to command.....iii. 406
prevails on De Grasse to remain...iv. 19

Lafayette, Marquis de—*Continued.*
to storm a redoubt....iv. 31
carries the works....iv. 32
false statement concerning (note)..iv. 32
concerning Hamilton....iv. 33
asks leave of absence....iv. 39
to Congress with news of peace....iv. 59
at Mount Vernon....iv. 81
on the French revolution....iv. 150
to Washington on the same....iv. 164
to Washington presenting the key of the Bastille....iv. 166
on affairs in France....iv. 177
downfall of....iv. 210
prisoner at Rochefort....iv. 210
on his way to Paris....iv. 292
correspondence with Washington..iv. 66
La Force, accompanies Washington..i. 66
prowling about the country....i. 83
Washington's opinion of....i. 86
in Washington's power....i. 87
kept in prison....i. 105
his fortunes....i. 105
Lake of the Dismal Swamp....i. 215
Lamb, Colonel, arrives before St. Johns with artillery....i. 362
before Quebec....ii. 28
effective fire from the ice battery..ii. 28
relative to Aaron Burr....ii. 28
in the attack....ii. 31
wounded....ii. 32
assists Arnold....ii. 289
wounded....ii. 290
receives Washington at West Point....iii. 269
Lameth, Chevalier de, wounded in the attack....iv. 32
Langdon, President, offers prayers...i. 301
Langlade, commands the Indians....ii. 352
Laurens, Col., duel with Lee....iii. 139
boards the French fleet....iii. 143
carries a protest to D'Estaing....iii. 149
informs Washington of affairs in Charleston....iii. 207
on André's fate....iii. 288
special minister to France....iii. 319
visits the camp of the Pennsylvania mutineers....iii. 323
arrives from France with the loan.iii. 401
capitulation of Yorktown....iv. 35
Laurens, Mr., remits letter to Washington....iii. 80
Lauzun, Duke de, at Newport....iii. 236
to join the American army....iii. 375
skirmish with Tarleton....iv. 22
Lawrence, Colonel....i. 114
Lawrence, Colonel John, judge advocate general....iii. 278
Lawson, General, reinforces Greene.iii. 351
at Guilford Court House....iii. 354
Lear, Tobias, Washington's private secretary....iv. 87
on Washington's character....iv. 90
at the inauguration of Washington....iv. 117
accompanies Washington....iv. 146
Washington's state coach....iv. 170
concerning St. Clair's defeat....iv. 185
Washington's illness....iv. 311
last hours of Washington....iv. 312
death of Washington....iv. 313
Learned, Col., receives flag of truce..ii. 47
Lechmere Point, fortified by Putnam.i. 394
Ledyard, Colonel William, defence of Fort Griswold....iii. 299
Lee, Arthur, in the treasury board..iv. 123
Lee, General Charles, at Boston....i. 263
history....i. 269
his birth....i. 269
serves in America....i. 269
adopted by the Mohawks....i. 269
wounded at the battle of Ticonderoga....i. 269
at the siege of Fort Niagara....i. 269
joins Amherst at Crown Point....i. 270
at the surrender of Montreal....i. 270
Lee, General Charles—*Continued.*
in Portugal....i. 270
brave conduct....i. 270
opposes the ministry....i. 270
received by Frederick the Great....i. 270
at Warsaw....i. 270
accompanies the Polish ambassador to Constantinople....i. 271
dangers and escapes....i. 271
again in England....i. 271
reception....i. 271
censured by a friend....i. 271
embittered against the king and ministers....i. 271
returns to Poland....i. 271
hopes of active service....i. 271
major general in the Polish Army..i. 271
restless life....i. 272
affairs of honor....i. 272
attacks upon the ministry....i. 272
advocates the cause of the colonies.i. 272
visits America....i. 272
reputation....i. 272
to Edmund Burke....i. 272
at Mount Vernon....i. 275
purchases an estate....i. 276
cultivates the acquaintance of leading men....i. 276
efficient in organizing the Maryland militia....i. 276
manners....i. 276
fondness for dogs....i. 276
to Adams....i. 276
at Philadelphia....i. 293
appointed major general....i. 295
elected third in command....i. 295
accepts appointment....i. 295
sets out from Philadelphia....i. 314
anecdote....i. 315
description by Mrs. Adams....i. 323
Washington's military counsellor..i. 332
commands left wing....i. 334
strict discipline....i. 334
profanity....i. 334
correspondence with Burgoyne ...i. 339
declines an interview with Burgoyne....i. 339
on the bombardment of Boston....i. 373
and Mrs. Adams....i. 399
to Richard H. Lee, giving his policy....ii. 16
sets out for Rhode Island....ii. 16
test oath....ii. 16
legislative censures....ii. 17
to Washington relative to the defence of New York....ii. 22
at New Haven....ii. 24
military notions....ii. 24
reply to New York Committee of Safety....ii. 25
to Washington on recruiting success....ii. 26
on the disposition of New York....ii. 26
arrives at New York....ii. 36
to Washington, on a resolve of Congress....ii. 36
on the arrival of Sir Henry Clinton....ii. 37
characteristic menace....ii. 37
plans of defence....ii. 38
measures against Tories....ii. 39
defiance of Governor Tryon and Captain Parker....ii. 39
removal of cannon....ii. 40
strengthens New York....ii. 40
ordered to Canada....ii. 40
to Washington on affairs in New York....ii. 41
contempt for titles....ii. 41
appointed to command the southern department....ii. 54
to Washington on his appointment....ii. 54
sets out for the south....ii. 55
opinion of Washington....ii. 55
to Washington from the south....ii. 55

Lee, General Charles—*Continued.*
to Washington on Clinton's expedition....ii. 108
foils Clinton....ii. 108
arrives at Charleston....ii. 109
to Washington on the condition of Charleston....ii. 109
encamps on Haddrell's Point....ii. 109
describes the attack on Sullivan's Island....ii. 110
receives thanks of Congress....ii. 112
to Washington for cavalry....ii. 112
expected in camp....ii. 164
to President of Congress on the designs of the British....ii. 165
arrives in camp....ii. 167
to Gates on the meddling of Congress....ii. 167
arrives at White Plains....ii. 173
commands at Northcastle....ii. 182
to Washington on his position....ii. 196
allusion to Greene....ii. 196
to Reed explaining his projects....ii. 202
to Bowdoin, plans and schemes....ii. 202
to Washington on removing troops across the Hudson....ii. 203
to Heath on his right to command..ii. 204
to Reed disparaging Washington..ii. 206
to Washington on his delay....ii. 211
interview with General Heath....ii. 212
question of authority....ii. 212
changes his mind....ii. 213
crosses the Hudson, lagged march..ii. 214
on military greatness....ii. 214
at Morristown....ii. 216
to Congress on his plans....ii. 216
correspondence with Washington..ii. 216
to Heath to forward troops....ii. 217
tardiness of his march....ii. 217
and the militia....ii. 218
to Gates disparaging Washington..ii. 219
captured by Colonel Harcourt....ii. 219
effect of his loss....ii. 220
secret of his conduct....ii. 221
character of....ii. 221
treatment of....ii. 264
to Congress from New York....ii. 265
to Washington on the refusal of Congress....ii. 265
actual treatment of....ii. 266
diminished importance....ii. 267
to Washington on his captivity...iii. 100
exchanged for General Prescott..iii. 117
in command of a division....iii. 123
to Washington on the enemy's plans....iii. 123
opposed to attack....iii. 124
relinquishes the command of the advance to Lafayette....iii. 126
military punctilio....iii. 126
commands the advance....iii. 127
encamps at Englishtown....iii. 127
advances against the enemy....iii. 128
manœuvre....iii. 128
retreat....iii. 129
angry meeting with Washington..iii. 130
battle of Monmouth Court House..iii. 131
conduct....iii. 131
cause of retreat....iii. 132
correspondence with Washington....iii. 135
charges against....iii. 137
court-martialled....iii. 137
concerning Washington....iii. 137
sentenced....iii. 138
sentence approved by Congress...iii. 139
abuse of Washington....iii. 139
duel with Colonel Laurens....iii. 139
retires to his estate....iii. 139
style of living....iii. 140
queries political and military....iii. 140
insolent note to Congress....iii. 140
dismissed the service....iii. 140
to Congress, apologetic....iii. 140
his character....iii. 141
his death....iii. 141

Lee, General Charles—*Continued.*
his will....iii. 141
burial....iii. 141
his manuscripts....iii. 142
to Wayne applauding his capture of Stony Point....iii. 178
caution to Gates....iii. 234
Lee, Charles, attorney general....iv. 269
Lee, Henry, "Light Horse Harry"...ii. 381
repulses a surprise....iii. 99
promoted....iii. 100
surprises a party of Hessians....iii. 159
proposes an attack on Paulus Hook....iii. 182
sets out for Paulus Hook....iii. 183
surprises the post....iii. 183
difficult retreat....iii. 183
rewarded with a gold medal by Congress....iii. 184
joins Washington....iii. 229
fight at Springfield....iii. 230
concerning Arnold's conspiracy..iii. 291
escape of Champe....iii. 292
on the reception of Gates by the General Assembly of Virginia...iii. 314
crosses the Dan....iii. 349
affair with Pyle's loyalists....iii. 350
on Tarleton's escape....iii. 351
skirmish with Tarleton....iii. 354
at Guilford Court House....iii. 354
joins Marion....iii. 387
capture of Fort Watson....iii. 388
capture of Fort Motte....iii. 389
captures Granby....iii. 389
exploits of....iii. 390
pursues Colonel Coates....iii. 391
detached to operate with Sumter..iv. 23
at Eutaw Springs....iv. 23
anecdote of Washington....iv. 94
communicates the death of Greene....iv. 96
to Washington on the presidency..iv. 109
commands the army....iv. 251
puts down the insurrection....iv. 252
Lee, Richard Henry, delegate to General Congress....i. 257
speech before the General Congress..i. 263
drafts memorial to British colonies..i. 264
urging Washington's presence in Virginia....iii. 378
Legislatures dissolved....i. 228
Leitch, Major, commands Virginia troops....ii. 104
joins Knowlton in an attack....ii. 154
wounded....ii. 155
death....ii. 156
Lempriere's Point, works thrown up....iii. 219
Leslie, Captain, killed at Princeton..ii. 251
Leslie, General, attack on Chatterton's Hill....ii. 175
at Malden Head....ii. 246
advancing to reinforce Cornwallis..iii. 334
at Guilford Court House....iii. 355
ordered to Portsmouth....iii. 382
Lewis, Colonel....i. 213
Lewis, Major Andrew....i. 145
taken prisoner....i. 191
Lewis, Major Geo., attends on Mercer....ii. 254
Lewis, Lawrence, aide-de-camp to Morgan....iv. 250
invited to Mount Vernon....iv. 289
affection for Miss Custis....iv. 290
marries Miss Custis....iv. 306
Lewis, Robert, Washington's agent..iii. 260
Lexington, battle of....i. 280
loss of Americans and British....i. 284
Liberty Tree....i. 259
Light House Point surprised by Wolfe..i. 181
Lincoln, General, contemplates a descent on Long Island....ii. 158
at Bennington....ii. 305
at Manchester....ii. 324
to Schuyler on Stark's victory....ii. 371
joins Gates....ii. 404

Lincoln, General—*Continued.*
wounded....iii. 26
commands the southern department....iii. 162
unsuccessful siege of Savannah...iii. 187
to Washington in his perplexity...iii. 204
strengthens Charleston....iii. 205
remains within the city....iii. 206
to Washington on the unwillingness of troops to remain....iii. 217
replies to summons to surrender..iii. 219
in favor of evacuating Charleston.iii. 221
skirmish with the British....iii. 317
grand reconnoissance....iii. 379
opens the first parallel before Yorktown....iv. 29
receives the submission of the royal army....iv. 36
returns north with the army....iv. 40
Lippencott, Captain, hangs Captain Huddy....iv. 43
tried and acquitted....iv. 44
Liston, Mrs., at Washington's farewell dinner....iv. 286
Little Egg Harbor, expedition against....iii. 158
Little Meadows....i. 83
Braddock's expedition encamped..i. 126
Little Sarah, case of....iv. 223
Little Turtle decoys Colonel Hardin into an ambush....iv. 168
Lively, ship of war, fires on Breed's Hill....i. 303
Livingston, Brockholst, in correspondence with Schuyler....ii. 397
to Schuyler on the prospect of a battle....ii. 397
Livingston, Major, and Major Brown take Fort Chamblee....i. 378
drive Colonel Maclean back....i. 380
Livingston, Colonel, joins Schuyler.ii. 374
cannonades the Vulture....iii. 259
Livingston, Henry Brockholst, on the state of affairs at Ticonderoga....ii. 318
Livingston, Peter R....ii. 161
Livingston, Peter Van Burgh, address to Washington....i. 319
Livingston, Judge Robert R....i. 352
suggests Arnold as commander of West Point....iii. 233
at the inauguration of Washington....iv. 117
Livingston, Walter, in the treasury board....iv. 123
Livingston, William, Brig. Gen.....ii. 87
sends word of the British plans....ii. 122
to Washington....ii. 208
Logstown, Council of Indians at.i. 58, 62, 240
London Chronicle, remarks on General Burgoyne....ii. 39
Long, Colonel, commands the batteaux....ii. 326
arrives at Fort Anne....ii. 328
retreats to Fort Edward....ii. 329
Long Island, battle of....ii. 121
landing of the British....ii. 122
British occupy Flatbush....ii. 123
reinforced by Hessians....ii. 126
De Heister reaches Flatbush....ii. 126
plan of the British....ii. 126
nocturnal march....ii. 127
occupy the Bedford Pass....ii. 127
Gen. Grant engages Lord Stirling..ii. 129
Sir Henry Clinton turns the American left....ii. 129
Sullivan's division defeated....ii. 129
Lord Stirling surrounded....ii. 131
forbearance of the British....ii. 132
killed and wounded....ii. 132
fatal neglect....ii. 133
retreat from....ii. 136
described by a witness....ii. 137
midnight gun....ii. 137
Long Island tradition....ii. 138
alarm of the British....ii. 138
Long Island—*Continued.*
in possession of the British....ii. 139
Lossing, Benson J., on portraits of Washington, (appendix,)....i.
Loudon, Earl of....i. 156
implied censure of Washington....i. 169
arrives at Albany....i. 170
in winter quarters....i. 171
reception of Washington....i. 172
sets sail for Halifax....i. 173
joins Admiral Holbourne at Halifax....i. 174
returns to New York....i. 175
relieved from command....i. 178
Louisburg to be attacked....i. 178
another attempt to be made....i. 178
invested....i. 180
captured....i. 181
Lovel, General, commands expedition against Penobscot....iii. 180
at first repulsed, but effects a landing....iii. 181
besieges the fort....iii. 181
sends for reinforcements....iii. 181
disastrous retreat....iii. 181
Lovell, James, to Gates on the command....ii. 293
to Gates on his position....ii. 296
to Gates....iii. 61
invocation to Gates....iii. 67
Lowantica Valley....ii. 259
Loyalists in the revolution....ii. 158
Luzerne, Chevalier de la, visits Washington....iii. 186
and Arnold....iii. 242
requests ships to oppose Arnold....iii. 362
banquet to the officers....iv. 117
to Washington on the position of Lafayette....iv. 164
Lyman, General....i. 150
Lynch, Thomas, on committee to confer with Washington....i. 372
on the bombardment of Boston....i. 372

M.

McCall, Major, at the battle of the Cowpens....iii. 337
McCrea, Jane....ii. 352
murdered by Indians....ii. 353
its effect....ii. 354
the story of her murder, (note,)....ii. 354
McDougall, General, strengthens Heath's position....ii. 167
in command at Chatterton's Hill...ii. 174
at Morristown....ii. 242
commands at Peekskill....ii. 275
fires the barracks and retires....ii. 275
commands at Peekskill....ii. 298
commands in the Highlands....iii. 362
joins Gates....iii. 157
commands at West Point....iii. 173
death of....iv. 97
McDowell, Colonel, in the battle of King's Mountain....iii. 307
McGillivray, represents the Creeks..iv. 161
McGowan's Ford, affair at....iii. 343
McGowan's Pass, relinquished by the British....iv. 70
McHenry, Major James, breakfasts with Arnold....iii. 263
secretary of war....iv. 269
to Washington on the command of the army....iv. 293
Mackay, Captain....i. 92
arrives at Washington's camp....i. 94
Mackenzie, Captain Robert, to Washington....i. 265
McLane, Captain Allen, brings word of intended attack....iii. 67
attacks the enemy's van....iii. 67
routs the picket guard....iii. 68
expedition against Paulus Hook..iii. 182
Maclean, Colonel, and his Highland emigrants....i. 378

Maclean, Colonel—*Continued.*
driven back by Majors Brown and Livingston....i. 391
at Quebec....i. 401
loyalty....i. 403
McLeod, Captain, attempt to surprise Jefferson....iii. 383
McPherson, Major, to intercept Simcoe....iii. 384
skirmish with Captain Shank....iii. 384
Madison, James, member of Congress....iv. 124
ceremonials of the government...iv. 161
remonstrates with Washington on his intention to retire....iv. 191
prepares a valedictory address for Washington....iv. 194
debate on Jefferson's report....iv. 241
Magaw, Colonel....ii. 104
commands Fort Washington....ii. 169
cannonades the British frigates....ii. 173
in favor of holding Fort Washington....ii. 191
refuses to surrender....ii. 192
disposition for defence....ii. 192
Majoribanks, Major, at Eutaw Springs....iv. 25
falls back....iv. 26
Malmedy, Col., at Eutaw Springs....iv. 24
Manchester, British maraud....iii. 369
Manchester, Duke of, compares the conduct of Clinton and Dunmore.ii. 38
remarks on siege of Boston....ii. 52
Manly, Captain, captures munitions of war....i. 396
Marbois, Barbé....iii. 186
Marion, Francis, his character....iii. 310
bye-names....iii. 310
pursued by Tarleton....iii. 311
capture of Fort Watson....iii. 388
capture of Fort Motte....iii. 389
attack on Colonel Coates....iii. 393
controls the lower Santee....iv. 24
joins Greene....iv. 24
at Eutaw Springs....iv. 24
Markoe, Capt., escorts Washington....i. 314
Marsh, Rev. John, letter relative to plot in New York, (note,)....ii. 83
Marshall, Judge, on Lee's retreat...iii. 138
envoy to France....iv. 295
Martha's Vineyard ravaged by the British....iii. 151
Martin, Colonel....i. 158
Maryland, General Assembly, confidence in Washington....iv. 268
Maryland troops described....i. 335
sharpshooting....i. 335
described by Graydon....ii. 105
Mason, Mr., divulges terms of treaty.v. 127
Mason, George, friend of Washington....i. 226
to Washington on non-importation....i. 231
drafts plan of association for the non-importation and use of British goods subject to duty....i. 232
Massachusetts, General Court of, advise a Congress....i. 224
petition the king for relief....i. 228
urge the other colonial Legislatures to join for redress....i. 228
refuse to rescind the resolution....i. 228
protest against military occupation....i. 235
refuse to transact business....i. 235
transferred to Cambridge....i. 235
resolution against a standing army.i. 235
refuse to provide for the troops....i. 236
prorogued....i. 236
Assembly recommend a General Congress....i. 251
general election....i. 273
semi-belligerent state of affairs....i. 274
Congress of, raises troops....i. 286
prepare to receive Washington....i. 320
Massachusetts—*Continued.*
send a deputation to meet Washington....i. 320
address of welcome to General Lee....i. 321
number of troops....i. 325
their destitution....i. 328
Washington's apology....i. 328
liberality....i. 330
ask for troops....i. 335
Rhode Island and Connecticut fit out armed vessels....i. 369
pass an act for fitting out armed vessels....i. 371
insurrection....iv. 100
quelled....iv. 105
Mathew, General, in the attack on Fort Washington....ii. 194
expedition against the Chesapeake....iii. 171
takes Portsmouth....iii. 171
ravages the neighborhood....iii. 171
Mathews, Colonel, taken prisoner...iii. 43
Mathews, John, on committee to confer with Washington....iii. 210
Matson's Ford, Lafayette posted on.iii. 117
Matthews, David, mayor of New York, apprehended....ii. 81
detained for trial....ii. 82
Mawhood, Colonel, at Princeton....ii. 248
attacks Mercer....ii. 249
retreats towards Trenton....ii. 250
Maxwell, General, at Morristown....ii. 242
commands light troops....ii. 380
skirmish with the British....ii. 382
engages the enemy's vanguard....ii. 384
sent to the Jerseys....iii. 118
ordered to harass the enemy....iii. 124
Maynards, Judge....i. 55
Meade, Colonel, Washington's aide-de-camp....ii. 258
Mecklenburg, spirit of the inhabitants....iii. 303
Meigs, Colonel, enterprise against Sag Harbor....ii. 290
struck while attempting to suppress a mutiny....iii. 214
Mercer, Captain George, Washington's aide-de-camp....i. 154
Mercer, George, declines to act as distributor of stamps....i. 225
Mercer, Hugh, account of....i. 119
with Colonel Armstrong....i 164
wounded....i. 164
accompanies Washington on a tour of inspection....i. 166
a visitor at Mount Vernon....i. 208
disciplines militia....i. 275
about marching to Williamsburg....i. 285
made brigadier-general....ii. 87
joins the army....ii. 87
appointed to a command....ii. 87
on the abandonment of New York.ii 147
conversation with Washington on resistance....ii. 210
leads the advance on Princeton....ii. 248
encounters Colonel Mawhood....ii. 249
wounded....ii. 249
death....ii. 254
character....ii. 254
Middleton, Cornet, sent in pursuit of Champe....iii. 292
Mifflin, General, urges Lee's appointment as second in command....i. 295
aide-de camp to Washington....i 331
secretary to Washington....i. 373
suggests a name for the captured mortar....i. 391
Adjutant-General, manners and entertainments....i. 399
promoted....ii. 66
encamped near Kingsbridge....ii. 74
characterized by Graydon....ii. 105
discipline of his troops....ii. 121
arrives with troops....ii. 134

Mifflin, General—*Continued.*
observes movement among the British ships....ii. 135
premature retreat....ii. 137
returns to the lines....ii. 137
retreats in safety....ii. 138
sent to Philadelphia for aid....ii. 202
at Philadelphia....ii. 215
supports the claims of Conway....iii. 50
opposition to Washington....iii 50
member of the Board of War....iii. 66
to Gates on Conway's letter....iii. 76
meets Washington....iv. 105
receives Washington....iv. 113
case of the Little Sarah....iv. 223
Miles, Colonel, commands battalion....ii. 106
at Brooklyn....ii. 125
Militia system, its inefficiency....i. 166
organization of, in Massachusetts....i. 274
Ministerial Army....i. 294
Minute men rally under Gen. Heath....i. 233
form a camp....i. 286
Mirepoix, Marquis de....i. 107
Mischianza in honor of Sir William Howe....iii. 114
Mississippi, navigation of....iv. 122
Monckton, Brigadier, in the expedition against Quebec....i. 197
commands battery at Point Levi....i. 197
wounded....i. 203
Monckton, Col., killed in an attack on Wayne....iii. 132
burial....iii. 134
Monk's Corner, Brigadier-General Huger at....iii. 219
surprised by Tarleton....iii. 220
Monmouth Court House, battle of....iii. 131
killed and wounded....iii. 133
Monro, Colonel, in command of Fort William Henry....i. 175
Monroe, James, in the advance against Trenton....ii. 232
takes two cannon....ii. 233
remonstrates against Hamilton....iv. 245
minister to France....iv. 247
reception in France....iv. 248
recalled....iv. 278
to Washington on an intercepted letter....iv. 278
address to by M. Barras....iv. 293
Montcalm, his operations....i. 170
takes Oswego....i. 171
returns in triumph to Montreal....i. 171
again takes the field....i. 174
attacks Fort William Henry....i. 174
captures and destroys it....i. 174
returns to Canada....i. 174
prepares his defence....i. 183
repulses Abercrombie....i. 183
in command of Quebec....i. 197
abandons his intrenchments....i. 201
sends for reinforcements....i. 201
advances against Wolfe....i. 202
receives his death wound....i. 203
to General Townshend....i. 203
to De Ramsay....i. 203
his death....i. 203
Montgomery, Richard, at the landing before Louisburg....i. 180
appointed brigadier general....i. 295
at Ticonderoga....i. 352
birth and services....i. 352
emigrates to New York and marries....i. 352
appointed brigadier general....i. 352
appearance and manners....i. 352
embarkation for the Isle aux Noix....i. 354
invests St. Johns....i. 362
presses the siege of St. Johns....i. 378
to Carleton on the treatment of prisoners....i. 378
takes St. Johns....i. 380
treatment of prisoners....i. 380
proceeds to Montreal....i. 380
takes Montreal....i. 383
Montgomery, Richard—*Continued.*
prepares to descend the St. Lawrence....i. 384
to Schuyler on insubordination of troops....i. 384
annoyances....i. 384
intention to resign....i. 386
joins Arnold....ii. 18
arrives before Quebec....ii. 27
plan of attack....ii. 27
strength of force....ii. 27
o Arnold and his troops....ii. 27
summons Quebec to surrender....ii. 27
to Carleton....ii. 27
prepares to attack....ii. 27
efforts to incite the inhabitants....ii. 28
anecdote....ii. 28
project of an escalade....ii. 29
plan of attack....ii. 29
the attack....ii. 30
leads his men....ii. 30
surprises the picket....ii. 30
death....ii. 30
burial....ii. 33
Montgomery, Major, attack on Fort Griswold....iii. 400
Montour, Andw., acts as interpreter....i. 47
accompanies Adjutant Muse....i. 92
Montreal, capitulates to Amherst....i. 205
taken by Montgomery....i. 383
Montresor, Captain, enters the deserted American works....ii. 138
bearer of flag to Washington....ii. 156
Morgan, Daniel, arrives at camp....i. 335
in the attack on Quebec....ii. 31
takes command....ii. 32
carries two batteries....ii. 32
hemmed in, brave defence and surrender....ii. 33
exchanged....ii. 157
recommended to the command of a rifle regiment....ii. 157
mans the lines....ii. 173
sent to fight the Indians....ii. 346
attacks the enemy....ii. 401
effect of his corps on the enemy....ii. 403
to attack Burgoyne....iii. 23
harasses the enemy....iii. 24
to reinforce Maxwell....iii. 125
at Charlotte....iii. 312
detached to South Carolina....iii. 316
on his way to Ninety-Six....iii. 334
retreats from Tarleton....iii. 335
at the Cowpens....iii. 336
reasons for selecting....iii. 336
disposition of troops....iii. 336
battle of the Cowpens....iii. 337
spoils taken....iii. 338
pushes for the Catawba....iii. 338
crosses the Catawba....iii. 340
approach of Cornwallis....iii. 341
pushes for the Yadkin....iii. 345
correspondence with Washington....iv. 250
left with detachment....iv. 252
Morocco, treaty with....iv. 122
Morris, Captain, arrives at Fort Cumberland, wounded....i. 140
wins Miss Phillpse....i. 157
wounded at Sullivan's Island....ii. 111
Morris, Governor, appoints commissioners....i. 109
at Alexandria....i. 113
to Croghan....i. 115
Morris, Gouverneur, on Gates....ii. 376
on Pennsylvania....iii. 98
on the French crisis....iv. 141
differs from Jefferson....iv. 142
to Washington on the French revolution....iv. 143
on the same....iv. 164
to Washington on Lafayette....iv. 165
to Washington on affairs in France....iv. 176
minister to France....iv. 209
representation of affairs in France....iv. 209

Morris, Gouverneur—*Continued.*
concerning Lafayette and the Reign of Terror.....iv. 210
relative to Louis XVI.....iv. 211
on the successes of France.....iv. 212
to Jefferson on Genet.....iv. 215
recalled.....iv. 247
Morris, Robert, sends money to Washington.....ii. 243
patriotic exertions.....iii. 375
entertains Washington.....iii. 405
Morris, Colonel Roger.....ii. 153
Morristown, its position.....ii. 258
sufferings of the American army at.....iii. 389
Mothe, Admiral de Bois de la, arrives at Louisburg.....i. 175
Moulder, Captain, at Princeton.....ii. 250
Moultrie, Colonel Wm., commands at Sullivan's Island.....ii. 109
glorious defence.....ii. 112
receives thanks of Congress.....ii. 112
proclamation.....iv. 242
Mount Defiance, strategetical position.....ii. 102
Mount Hope, fortified by Burgoyne..ii. 324
Mount Independence, evacuated.....ii. 325
Mount Vernon, named in honor of Admiral Vernon.....i. 28
quiet disturbed.....i. 111
situation of.....i. 207
assumes a military tone.....i. 274
in danger.....i. 396
saved from ravage.....iii. 370
revisited by Washington.....iii. 404
Mowat, Lieut., destroys Falmouth....i. 370
Moylan, Colonel, and Wilkinson....iii. 94
Muhlenberg, Gen., near Suffolk.....iii. 366
encounters General Phillips.....iii. 369
Mulgrave, Major, to embark.....ii. 46
Murdering Town.....i. 71
Murray, Brigadier, with Wolfe.....i. 197
detached to operate against shipping above Quebec.....i. 199
breaks the French centre.....i. 203
attacks De Levi.....i. 204
is repulsed.....i. 204
retreats into Quebec.....i. 204
desperate condition.....i. 204
arrival of a British fleet.....i. 204
ordered to advance against Montreal.....i. 205
ascends the river.....i. 205
Murray, William Vans, minister to France.....iv. 307
Murray, Mrs., anecdote.....ii. 152
Muse, Major, teaches Washington the art of war.....i. 54
arrives in camp.....i. 92
charged with cowardice.....i. 99
obtains grant of land (note).....i. 243
Musgrave, Colonel, encamped.....iii. 39
takes post in Chew's house.....iii. 41
Muskingum.....i. 48
Mutiny of American troops.....iii. 214

N.

Nash, Gen., killed at Germantown..iii. 43
National Bank.....iv. 171
National Gazette, edited by Philip Freneau.....iv. 189
Navigation Laws.....i. 217
Nelson, Gen. Thos., opposes Arnold.iii. 328
called on for troops.....iii. 432
patriotism.....iv. 21
another proof.....iv. 29
Nelson, Mr., Secretary, anecdote....iv. 29
Neutral ground.....iii. 261
Nevil, General, house of, assailed...iv. 248
Newark surprised by the British....iii. 192
New Bedford ravaged by the British.iii. 151
New England resists the project of taxation.....i. 220
continues the disuse of tea.....i. 237
army, its situation.....i. 292
New Hampshire sends volunteers....i. 286
grants.....i. 287
New Haven taken by the British....iii. 174
New Jersey, opinion of the revolution.....ii. 209
prison ship.....ii. 270
militia turn out with alacrity.....ii. 307
troops, discontent of.....iii. 167
Legislature of, satisfies the troops.iii. 169
invaded by Knyphausen.....iii. 226
evacuated.....iii. 232
troops, mutiny of.....iii. 326
New London, expedition against....iii. 399
taken by Arnold.....iii. 399
New Orleans.....iv. 122
Newport, s tuation of.....iii. 145
Newtown, battle at.....iii. 170
New York resents the attempt against the independence of the judiciary.....i. 219
proceedings in regard to stamp act.i. 225
resists the mutiny act.....i. 227
powers of Governor and Assembly suspended.....i. 227
at the revolution.....i. 316
events in.....i. 344
in a panic at Lee's approach.....ii. 24
adverse influences in.....ii. 36
arrival of Sir Henry Clinton.....ii. 37
its effects.....ii. 37
letters descriptive of.....ii. 57
batteries at (note).....ii. 67
alarm of conspiracy.....ii. 80
arrival of British troops.....ii. 83
further arrivals.....ii. 84
popular joy at the declaration of independence.....ii. 90
destruction of the statue of George III.....ii. 90
arrival of more ships.....ii. 90
panic of the people.....ii. 91
convention at White Plains.....ii. 91
arrival of Lord Howe.....ii. 94
station secret committee in New York.....ii. 94
military measures.....ii. 98
arrival of a hundred sail.....ii. 115
forces collected in and about.....ii. 116
convention order out levies.....ii. 118
panic and distress.....ii. 124
terror of the inhabitants.....ii. 129
question of its destruction.....ii. 140
letters of British officers relative to.ii. 140
British ships come opposite.....ii. 141
question of abandonment.....ii. 147
left by Congress to the discretion of Washington.....ii. 149
agitations in.....ii. 149
more ships move up the Sound.....ii. 149
evacuated by Putnam.....ii. 151
conflagration in.....ii. 156
ascribed to American incendiaries.ii. 156
Committee of Safety, to Washington on the defence of the Highlands.....ii. 161
in perturbation on account of French fleet.....iii. 143
bay frozen over.....iii. 191
scarcity of food and fuel.....iii. 191
reduction of, meditated.....iii. 212
to be attacked.....iii. 374
failure of intended attack on....iii. 377
alarm in.....iv. 43
preparations to evacuate.....iv. 61
evacuated.....iv. 71
excitement concerning the French war.....iv. 231
Niagara, expeditions against....i. 150, 195
rallying place for Indians, Tories, etc.....iii. 154
Nichols, Colonel, at Bennington.....ii. 369
Nicholson, John, Indian interpreter..i. 240
Nicholson, Commodore, reception of Washington at New York. ...iv. 115
Nicola, Colonel Lewis, extraordinary letter of.....iv. 47

Noailles, Viscount de, capitulation of Yorktown....iv. 35
Non-importation Associations, effect on British commerce....i. 236
Nooks Hill, attempt to fortify....ii. 48
North, Lord, premier....i. 236
repeals duties except on tea....i. 236
on the right of taxation....i. 237
bill favoring the export of tea....i. 248
surrender of Cornwallis....iv. 38
North Carolina to be invaded....iii. 241
the people and country....iii. 241
North Church used for fuel....i. 374
Norwalk devastated by the British..iii. 174

O.

Ogden, Capt. Aaron, concerning the exchange of Arnold for André..iii. 280
Ogden, Colonel Matthias, project to capture Prince William Henry..iv. 42
O'Hara, General, at the Yadkin....iii. 344
surrenders the garrison of Yorktown....iv. 37
Ohio Company, formation of....i. 45
despatch Christopher Gist to explore the Ohio....i. 47
establish a trading company at Will's Creek....i. 58
Ohio Tribes incensed at the French..i. 58
Ohio, expedition to the....i. 238
Old South Church, desecration of....ii. 374
Oldham, Colonel, with St. Clair....iv. 183
killed....iv. 186
Olney, Mrs., and Washington....iv. 93
Onondagas, settlement destroyed by the Americans....iii. 170
Oriskany, battle of....ii. 360
killed and wounded....ii. 361
Orme, Capt. Robert, hopes of success..i. 111
to Washington....i. 111
Osgood, Samuel, in the treasury board....iv. 123
Oswald, secretary to Arnold in the attack on Quebec....ii. 31
leads forlorn hope....ii. 31
marches to Danbury....ii. 287
at Monmouth Court House....iii. 131
Otis, James, against writs of assistance....i. 219

P.

Paine, Mr....i. 293
Paine, Thomas....i. 173
on Washington's retreat across the Jerseys....ii. 221
moral qualities of Washington....ii. 222
to Washington on the key of the Bastille....iv. 166
Rights of Man reprinted....iv. 179
Palfrey, Colonel William, substitutes an original prayer....i. 398
Palmer, Edmund, a spy....ii. 345
Paris, treaty of peace signed at....iv. 59
Paris, Colonel, dispute with Herkimer....ii. 359
killed by Red Jacket....ii. 361
Parker, Colonel, debate on Jefferson's report....iv. 241
Parker, Daniel, commissioner to New York....iv. 61
Parker, Commodore Hyde, expedition against Georgia....iii. 156
Parker, Sir Peter, attacks Sullivan's Island....ii. 110
is repulsed....ii. 111
burns the Actæon....ii. 111
Parliament taxes America....i. 220
imposes fresh duties on American imports....i. 227
extends the mutiny act to America..i. 227
importuned by British merchants..i. 236
passes the Boston Port Bill....i. 249
other acts to the injury of Boston..i. 249
Parsons, General, sent to Peekskill..ii. 310
at West Point....iii. 107
Patterson, Colonel, interview with Washington....ii. 96
Patterson, Brigadier-General, moves from Savannah....iii. 217
Paulding, John, and André....iii. 253
Paulus Hook, situation of....iii. 182
carried by Major Lee....iii. 183
relinquished by the British....iv. 70
Peabody, Nathaniel, on committee to confer with Washington....iii. 210
Peale, Charles Wilson, portrait of Washington (appendix)....i. 310
Peekskill, attack on....ii. 275
Pellew, Edward, Lord Exmouth on Lake Champlain....ii. 189
Pendleton, Edmund, delegate to the General Congress....i. 257
sets out for Philadelphia....i. 259
against Washington as commander-in-chief....i. 293
Pennsylvania troops described....i. 335
sharpshooting....i. 335
described by Graydon....ii. 105
Legislature of, remonstrate against the army going into winter-quarters....iii. 72
troops, their grievances....iii. 320
revolt....iii. 320
march towards Philadelphia....iii. 321
at Princeton....iii. 323
British emissaries in camp....iii. 324
accept propositions offered....iii. 325
mutiny of....iv. 66
Council of, offer to Washington...iv. 76
insurrection in....iv. 248
quelled....iv. 252
Penobscot, Bay of, British fort at...iii. 180
expedition against....iii. 181
Percy, Lord, advances to reinforce Colonel Smith....i. 282
continues the retreat....i. 283
conduct of soldiers....i. 288
sharp skirmishing....i. 288
narrow escape....i. 283
failure of ammunition....i. 288
to lead the attack against Dorchester Heights....ii. 47
on Long Island....ii. 123
leaves Flatlands in Clinton's division....ii. 127
attacks the American lines....ii. 173
to reinforce Howe....ii. 177
menaces Fort Washington....ii. 180
Peters, Richard, secretary to Governor Morris....i. 115
in camp....i. 121
secretary to board of war and ordnance....ii. 68
Peters, Judge, receives Washington..iv. 113
Petersburg, ravaged by the British..iii. 369
Peyrouney, Chevalier de....i. 97
Philadelphia during the battle of Brandywine....ii. 388
strength of the British....iii. 63
question of attack on....iii. 63
British defences....iii. 64
British army described....iii. 98
number of British in....iii. 115
preparations to evacuate....iii. 123
evacuated by the British....iii. 123
Phillipse, Miss Mary....i. 157
Phillips, General, commands artillery....ii. 314
fortifies Sugar Hill....ii. 325
demurs to the expedition against Bennington....ii. 366
in the attack on Gates....iii. 22
covers Burgoyne's retreat....iii. 25
visits Baroness de Riedesel....iii. 32
sails from New York....iii. 368
arrives at Portsmouth....iii. 368
marauds the country....iii. 369
regains Petersburg....iii. 370
death of....iii. 371

Phipps' Farm, battery erected on....i. 395
Phœnix ship of war sails up the Hudson....ii. 91
move up near Fort Montgomery....ii. 99
and Rose retreat....ii. 120
Plankeshas, king of....i. 49
interview with the French ambassadors....i. 49
Pichon, M., to Wm. Vans Murray....iv. 309
Pickens, General, crosses the Dan....iii. 349
affair with Fyle's loyalists....iii. 350
joins Greene....iv. 24
at Eutaw Springs....iv. 24
Pickering, Colonel, Timothy, with the Essex militia....i. 283
quartermaster general....iii. 280
secretary of war....iv. 257
to Washington urging his return..iv. 264
secretary of state....iv. 269
recommends Hamilton as second in command....iv. 300
Piel, Lieutenant, character of Rahl..ii. 235
account of treatment of Hessian prisoners....ii. 237
Pierce, Leigh, anecdote of Washington....iv. 105
Pigot, Gen., ascends Breed's Hill....i. 308
orders a retreat....i. 308
Pigott, General Sir Robert, commands at Rhode Island....iii. 145
amount and disposition of force..iii. 145
Pilgrims....i. 218
Pinckney, Colonel, commands Fort Moultrie....iii. 206
cannonades the British fleet....iii. 218
withdraws with part of the garrison from Fort Moultrie....iii. 218
Pinckney, Mr., concerning British aggressions....iv. 244
Pinckney, Charles Cotesworth, minister to France....iv. 273
dismissed by the French Government....iv. 294
envoy to France....iv. 295
appointed major general....iv. 301
his acceptance....iv. 304
Pinckney, Thomas, wishes to be relieved....iv. 275
Pine, portrait of Washington (appendix)....iv. 321
Pine's Bridge....ii. 177
Piqua, Indian Town....i. 49
Pitcairn, Major, sent forward to Concord....i. 280
enters Lexington....i. 280
orders the American yeomanry to disperse....i. 280
puts them to flight....i. 281
slain at Bunker's Hill....i. 312
Pitt, William, administration....i. 178
Pittsburg, embryo city....i. 239
Plains of Abraham....i. 198
taken possession of by Wolfe....i. 201
battle....i. 202
victory of the English....i. 202
Pomeroy, Seth, nominated general officer....i. 274
appointed brigadier-general....i. 295
in favor of occupying Charlestown heights....i. 300
sharpshooting....i. 311
attempts to rally the troops....i. 311
Pontiac's War....i. 316
Pontiac and Colonel Croghan....i. 240
Poor, General, to attack Burgoyne..iii. 23
attacks the enemy....iii. 23
Porterfield, Colonel, commands Virginia troops....iii. 244
joins Gates....iii. 245
mortally wounded....iii. 246
Portraits of Washington (appendix)..i. 311
Port Royal Island landing of Tarleton....iii. 205
Portsmouth, expedition against....iii. 364
Posey, Major, at the storming of Stony Point....iii. 147
Potomac river....i. 213
Powder, scarcity of....i. 337
Powel, Brigadier-General, in the invasion from Canada....ii. 314
Prayers in Washington's camp....i. 93
Prescott, Colonel William....i. 300
to fortify Bunker's Hill....i. 301
leaves Cambridge....i. 302
crosses the Neck....i. 302
ascends Bunker's Hill....i. 302
anxiety....i. 303
inspires confidence....i. 304
sends for reinforcements....i. 305
tenders the command to Warren...i. 307
encourages his men....i. 309
orders a retreat....i. 311
services at Bunker's Hill....i. 312
at Trog's Neck....ii. 167
Prescott, General, and Ethan Allen ..i. 364
confined in jail....i. 393
commands British forces in Rhode Island....ii. 332
exchanged for Lee....iii. 117
Preston, Major, in command of St. Johns....i. 362
manful resistance....i. 378
capitulates....i. 380
Prevost, Bishop....iv. 118
Prevost, General, ordered to attack Georgia....iii. 161
takes Sunbury....iii. 162
arrives at Savannah and takes command....iii. 162
Prideaux, Brigadier-General, to attack Fort Niagara....i. 195
embarks at Oswego....i. 195
besieges Fort Niagara....i. 195
is killed....i. 195
Prince William Henry, project to capture....iv. 42
Princeton, British forces assembled at....ii. 244
action at....ii. 249
killed and wounded....ii. 250
Pringle, Captain, conducts British armament on Lake Champlain..ii. 186
engages Arnold....ii. 187
draws off for the night....ii. 188
Prisoners, exchange of....ii. 263
Province Island, fortified by General Howe....iii. 55
Pulaski, Count, a volunteer....ii. 380
obtains command....ii. 389
infantry massacred by Ferguson..iii. 159
Pusaz, Hugh de, Bishop of Durham, his wealth and retinue....i. 18
prepares to join the crusade, but is induced to remain....i. 18
Putnam, Captain, despatched to Cambridge....i. 307
Putnam, Israel, detached to reconnoitre....i. 181
at Boston....i. 269
his history....i. 268
hears of the battle of Lexington....i. 284
in command of a regiment....i. 286
appointed major-general....i. 295
in command of Connecticut troops.i. 298
in favor of occupying Charleston heights....i. 300
opinion of American soldiers....i. 300
joins Prescott....i. 302
advises fortifying Breed's Hill....i. 302
asks for reinforcements....i. 305
arrives at the redoubt....i. 305
words with Prescott....i. 305
orders a breastwork on Bunker's Hill....i. 306
suggests a novel rampart....i. 306
rallies the reinforcements....i. 309
attempts to rally the troops....i. 311
a leading spirit at Bunker's Hill....i. 313
at Prospect Hill....i. 325
his merits....i. 330
complimented by Washington....i. 333
commands the centre....i. 334

Putnam, Israel—*Continued.*
and his female prize....i. 368
christens the captured mortar....i. 391
takes possession of Cobble Hill....i. 394
fortifies Lechmere Point....i. 394
anecdote of....i. 395
treats his men to an exploit....ii. 42
ready to attack Boston....ii. 46
appointed to command in New York....ii. 56
military rule....ii. 57
military devices....ii. 113
to Gates on the British force....ii. 114
in command of Long Island....ii. 125
crosses to Long Island....ii. 125
in favor of abandoning New York..ii. 147
to be stationed in New York....ii. 148
retreat from New York....ii. 151
described by Colonel Humphreys..ii. 151
traditional anecdote....ii. 152
lost in the retreat....ii. 152
at McGowan's Pass....ii. 153
commands troops in the Jerseys..ii. 182
takes command of Philadelphia...ii. 215
ordered to Princeton....ii. 259
amount of force....ii. 259
stratagem to conceal his weakness.ii. 259
to command the Hudson....ii. 301
on the alert....ii. 345
to Sir Henry Clinton on Edmund Palmer....ii. 345
force at Peekskill....iii. 14
to Clinton, on the designs of the enemy....iii. 14
to Clinton, on the movements of the enemy....iii. 15
prepares for an attack....iii. 15
outmanœuvred by Sir Henry Clinton....iii. 18
to Washington on the movements of the British....iii. 19
desires to attack New York....iii. 57
his "hobby-horse"....iii. 59
goes to Connecticut on private matters....iii. 107
at West Point....iii. 137
near West Point....iii. 137
commands at Danbury....iii. 163
at Smith's Clove....iii. 173
seconds the resolutions of Knox..iv. 57
Putnam, Colonel Rufus, directs the works about Kingsbridge....ii. 74
Pyle, Colonel, defeated by Lee and Pickens....iii. 351

Q.

Quaker Hill occupied by the British.iii. 150
Quebec, its situation....i. 197
capitulates....i. 204
alarm caused by Arnold....i. 403
besieged by Montgomery....ii. 27
the assault....ii. 30
arrival of reinforcements....ii. 62
blockade raised....ii. 63
Quincy, Josiah, at town meetings....i. 258

R.

Rahl, Colonel, attack on Chatterton's Hill....ii. 175
attack on Fort Washington....ii. 193
drives in Colonel Rawlings....ii. 194
in command of Trenton....ii. 225
described....ii. 225
reconnoitres the banks of the Delaware....ii. 226
warned of the attack....ii. 231
alarm at an outpost....ii. 231
relaxes his vigilance....ii. 231
bewildered by the attack....ii. 231
rush charge....ii. 234
wounded....ii. 234
taken prisoner....ii. 235
Rahl, Colonel—*Continued.*
his character....ii. 236
dying request....ii. 237
death and burial....ii. 237
Ramsey, Colonel, at Monmouth Court House....iii. 131
Randolph, Edmund, nominated attorney-general....iv. 136
opinions and presence....iv. 137
opposed to a national bank....iv. 171
to Washington, urging a continuance of office....iv. 199
concerning French prizes....iv. 221
succeeds Jefferson as secretary of state....iv. 239
Fauchet's despatch....iv. 264
correspondence with Washington.iv. 265
resigns....iv. 266
his vindication....iv. 268
to Bushrod Washington, his contrition....iv. 269
Randolph, Peyton, heads a company of volunteers....i. 163
elected moderator....i. 234, 251
delegate to General Congress....i. 257
president of second Congress....i. 291
return to Virginia Assembly....i. 291
Randolph of Tuckahoe, and his horse Shakespeare....i. 209
Rank of officers....i. 104
Rapelye, Mrs., betrays the Americans....ii. 138
Rawdon, Lord....iii. 16
embarks from New York....iii. 207
at Camden....iii. 242
concentrates his forces at Camden....iii. 246
on the American yeomanry....iii. 309
affair at Hobkirk's Hill....iii. 338
evacuates Camden....iii. 338
enters Ninety-Six....iii. 339
pursues Grant....iii. 339
at Orangeburg....iii. 339
departs for Europe....iii. 394
Rawlings, Colonel, at Fort Washington....ii. 193
driven in by Rahl....ii. 194
Rawlins bleeds Washington....iv. 312
Red Hook, battery erected at....ii. 122
cannonaded....ii. 129
Red Jacket at Oriskany....ii. 361
Reed, Colonel Joseph, ordered to assist Prescott....i. 305
repulses General Howe....i. 308
maintains his position....i. 311
Washington's secretary....i. 331
remonstrance of friends....i. 321
on scarcity of powder....i. 338
on reserve of ammunition....i. 355
departs for Philadelphia....i. 373
meets Lieutenant Brown....ii. 95
recognition of Washington's rank.ii. 95
declines to receive the letter....ii. 95
on sectional jealousies....ii. 104
on the policy of remaining in New York....ii. 115
relative to Clinton's arrival at New York....ii. 115
on the British....ii. 117
on Putnam's happiness....ii. 125
to his wife....ii. 140
on the awkward position of the army....ii. 141
concerning desertions....ii. 142
to his wife, anxieties....ii. 149
reports a skirmish....ii. 154
insolence of British troops....ii. 154
to his wife, from Harlem Heights..ii. 163
opposed to holding Fort Washington....ii. 191
to Lee, disparaging to Washington.ii. 200
despatched to Burlington....ii. 201
rebuke from Washington....ii. 207
reconciliation (note)....ii. 208
on Washington's return to Princeton....ii. 213

Reed, Colonel Joseph—*Continued.*
stationed at Bristol....ii. 224
marches to Bordentown....ii. 240
to Washington from Trenton....ii. 241
sends in pursuit of Donop....ii. 242
surprises a British picket....ii. 245
scours the country....ii. 254
appeal to Washington....ii. 305
to Gates, comparing exploits....iii. 63
to Wharton, relative to attack on Philadelphia....iii. 65
narrow escape of....iii. 68
on keeping the field....iii. 70
reply to Johnstone....iii. 121
drafts proclamation for Arnold...iii. 196
to Greene, on Arnold's conduct...iii. 197
president of the executive council of Pennsylvania....iii. 197
increased powers....iii. 216
revolt of the Pennsylvania line...iii. 324
arrives at Princeton....iii. 324
propositions to the troops....iii. 324
Reign of Terror, commencement of.iv. 210
Reparti, Captain....i. 67, 69
Republicans, party formed....iv. 173
Revolution commenced....i. 286
trials of the....iii. 189
Reynell, Lieutenant....ii. 402
Rhode Island, sends volunteers....i. 286
troops, their fine condition....i. 326
Massachusetts and Connecticut fit out armed vessels....i. 369
(proper), situation of....iii. 145
plan of attack....iii. 145
siege abandoned....iii. 149
retreat from....iii. 150
evacuated by the British....iii. 185
Richardson, Colonel, joins Washington at New York....ii. 143
Richmond in Arnold's possession...iii. 328
Riedesel, Baron, in Canada....ii. 77
in the invasion from Canada....ii. 314
attacks St. Clair's rear guard....ii. 329
demurs to the expedition against Bennington....ii. 366
in the attack on Gates....ii. 22
covers Burgoyne's retreat....iii. 25
Riedesel, Baroness de, with Burgoyne's army....ii. 396
account of movement....ii. 396
dines in camp....iii. 25
during the battle....iii. 25
describes burial of General Fraser.iii. 26
exposed to the horrors of war....iii. 31
scarcity of water....iii. 31
reception by Schuyler....iii. 35
Rifle dress, origin of....i. 187
Riker, Lieutenant....i. 385
Robertson, miniature of Washington (appendix)....i. 328
Robertson, General, communicates with General Howe....ii. 47
Robertson, Lieutenant General, on commission concerning André...iii. 231
to Washington on André....iii. 232
Robinson, Col. Beverly, and Washington....i. 157
in the attack against Fort Montgomery....iii. 16
connection with Arnold's treason.iii. 257
attempted interview....iii. 257
to Washington, interceding for André....iii. 271
accompanies commission....iii. 282
Robinson, Speaker, thanks Washington on behalf of the colony....i. 206
objects to Patrick Henry's resolutions....i. 222
Rochambeau, Count de, expected...iii. 211
arrives at Newport....iii. 234
past history....iii. 234
to Vergennes on the state of affairs....iii. 235
his troops....iii. 236
informs Washington of ships to be sent to the Chesapeake....iii. 362
Rochambeau—*Continued.*
arranges plan of campaign with Washington....iii. 364
interview with Washington....iii. 374
arrival with troops....iii. 375
at Dobb's Ferry....iii. 377
reconnoitres....iii. 379
awkward predicament....iii. 380
breaks up his camp....iii. 397
visits West Point with Washington....iii. 398
pecuniary assistance....iii. 401
accompanies Washington....iii. 404
addresses the Gatlnais grenadiers.iv. 31
at Williamsburg....iv. 40
at Verplanck's Point....iv. 49
retrospect of....iv. 295
Rochefoucauld, Liancourt, and Louis XVI....iv. 142
Rockaway Bridge, Washington at...iii. 229
Rocky Mount attacked by Sumner..iii. 244
Rodney, to advance against the British....ii. 379
Rogers, Col. Robert, the renegade...ii. 158
at Mamaroneck....ii. 171
Romilly, Sir Thomas, on Arnold's conduct (note)....iii. 288
Rose, ship of war, sails up the Hudson....ii. 91
moves up near Fort Montgomery..ii. 99
and Phœnix retreat....ii. 120
Ross, Major, capitulation of Yorktown....iv. 35
Rugeley, Colonel, taken by Colonel Washington....iii. 315
Rush, Dr. Benjamin, at Mercer's deathbed....ii. 254
Russell, Lieutenant Colonel, takes command of Fort Mifflin....iii. 56
Rutledge, Edward, member of the board of war and ordnance....ii. 68
on committee to confer with Lord Howe....ii. 144
clothed with dictatorial powers...iii. 206
endeavors to rouse the militia....iii. 219
to Washington imploring aid for South Carolina....iii. 317
Rutledge, John, judge of supreme court....iv. 137

S.

Sackville, Lord George, and General Lee....i. 271
Sag Harbor, expedition against....ii. 291
Saltonstall, Commodore, convoys expedition against Penobscot...iii. 180
Saratoga occupied by Burgoyne....iii. 29
Sargent, Colonel, estimate of St. Clair's loss....iv. 185
Saunders, Admiral....i. 200
Savage Mountain....i. 125
Savannah besieged by D'Estaing and Lincoln....iii. 187
besiegers repulsed....iii. 187
killed and wounded....iii. 187
Scammel, Colonel Alexander, mistake....ii. 137
vigilant guard over André....iii. 277
capture and death....iv. 21
Scarooyadi accompanies the half-king....i. 86
arrives in camp....i. 91
at Braddock's camp....i. 121
taken by the French....i. 127
his release....i. 128
son killed by mistake....i. 131
remains true to the English....i. 149
accounts for Braddock's defeat....i. 149
opinion of British soldiers....i. 149
Schuyler, Philip, appointed major general....i. 295
sets out from Philadelphia....i. 314
his origin and education....i. 314
in the old French war....i. 314

Schuyler, Phillip—*Continued.*
in the expedition against Ticonderoga....i. 314
delegate to Congress....i. 314
sympathy with Washington....i. 314
recollections with Lee....i. 315
letters from....i. 344
ordered to Ticonderoga....i. 348
arrives at Ticonderoga....i. 349
to Washington, picture of a frontier post....i. 349
complaints to Washington....i. 350
to Washington....i. 350
to Washington on invasion of Canada....i. 351
repairs to Albany....i. 352
to Washington recommending the employment of savages....i. 354
to Washington on the expedition to Quebec....i. 354
returns to Ticonderoga....i. 354
illness....i. 354
arrives at the Isle aux Noix....i. 355
sends Allen and Brown to reconnoitre....i. 359
skirmish before St. John's....i. 359
information of the fort....i. 359
return to the Isle aux Noix....i. 359
arrival of reinforcements....i. 359
prepares to invest St. John's....i. 360
illness....i. 360
return to Ticonderoga....i. 360
meets Colonel Warner....i. 360
on Allen's imprudence....i. 365
to Washington on his annoyances.i. 365
to Washington on the Canada expedition....i. 378
to Congress on the conduct of troops....i. 385
indignation....i. 385
high-minded rebuke....i. 385
intention to retire....i. 386
to Congress....i. 386
to Washington....i. 387
annoyance from sectional prejudice....i. 388
to Washington on the disasters in Canada....ii. 34
urges reinforcements for Canada....ii. 35
besieges and captures Sir John Johnson....ii. 35
conduct applauded by Congress....ii. 36
prejudice against....ii. 64
demands a court of inquiry....ii. 65
question of command with Gates.ii. 100
to Washington concerning the command....ii. 101
arrives at Crown Point....ii. 101
at Ticonderoga....ii. 102
returns to Albany....ii. 102
question of command settled....ii. 102
on the security of the Northern department....ii. 273
direction of affairs....ii. 276
asks a court of inquiry....ii. 277
tenders his resignation....ii. 277
resignation not excepted....ii 278
to Congress on its resolve....ii. 278
misunderstandings with Congress.ii. 279
reprimanded by Congress....ii. 280
in Philadelphia....ii. 281
takes his seat in Congress....ii. 281
services at Philadelphia....ii. 282
on the point of resigning....ii. 292
report of committee of inquiry....ii. 292
memorial to Congress....ii. 292
reinstated in his command....ii. 296
reception at Albany....ii. 296
on fortifying Mount Independence....ii. 297
enforces cleanliness....ii. 297
at Ticonderoga....ii. 315
hastens to Fort George....ii. 316
to Congress on the invasion from Canada....ii. 316

Schuyler, Phillip—*Continued.*
to Washington, with St Clair's letter....ii. 317
hopeful letters....ii. 320
to General Herkimer....ii. 320
to Washington on the evacuation of Ticonderoga....ii. 321
throws up works on Moses Creek...ii. 333
to Washington on the enemy's movements....ii. 335
slanders against....ii. 340
desires a scrutiny....ii. 341
summoned to Congress....ii. 342
cause of prejudice against (note)...ii. 343
retires to Fort Miller....ii. 352
takes post at Stillwater....ii. 355
appeals for reinforcements....ii. 363
recalled to attend court of inquiry.ii. 364
sends relief to Ganseyoort....ii. 364
moves from Stillwater....ii. 365
to Duane on the appointment of Gates....ii. 365
to Lincoln on Stark's victory....ii. 371
to Stark on his victory....ii. 371
means augmenting....ii. 374
returns to Albany....ii. 397
promotes the success of the campaign....ii. 397
benevolent conduct....iii. 36
on committee to confer with Washington....iii. 210
to Arnold on Washington's disposition....iii. 213
Schuyler, Mrs., anecdote....i. 315
Scott, Captain, wounded at Sullivan's Island....ii. 111
Scott, General Charles, expedition against Indians....iv. 180
Seat of government....iv. 161
Sectional jealousies, Washington to Schuyler....ii. 104
John Adams on....ii. 108
Washington's general order upon..ii. 116
Washington relative to....ii. 274
Sevier, Colonel, in the battle of King's Mountain....iii. 307
Seymour, Colonel Thomas, commands Connecticut light-horse.ii... 106
to Washington, for a discharge of troops....ii. 107
to Gov. Trumbull, explanatory....ii. 107
Shank, Captain, skirmish with McPherson....iii. 384
Sharpe, Governor....i. 104
to furnish wagons....i. 119
Sharpless, portrait of Washington (appendix)....i. 321
Shaw, Captain, society of the Cincinnati....iv. 62
Shaw, Major, to his father....iii. 44
Washington and the army....iv. 62
Shee, Colonel....ii. 104
Shelburne, Major, and detachment captured....ii. 70
Shelby, Colonel, in the battle of King's Mountain....iii. 307
Shenandoah, Valley of....i. 37
ravaged by Indians....i. 158
instigates outrages on the colonists.i. 149
at Kittanning....i. 164
Shepard, Colonel, wounded....ii 171
Sherman, Roger, member of the board of war and ordinance....ii. 68
introduces Gates to Congress....ii. 297
at Washington's inauguration....iv. 117
Shingis, chief of the Delawares....i. 62
blockades Fort Pitt....i. 216
Shippen, Edward....iii. 196
Shippen, Miss Margaret....iii. 197
Shirley, Governor of Massachusetts...i. 113
Shirley, William, to Gov. Morris....i. 124
Shirley, General, expedition against Niagara....i. 150
referred to on a point of rank....i. 154
plan of campaign....i. 155
recalled to England....i. 156

Short Hills, Washington posted at...iii. 227
Shreve, Colonel, retreating.....iii. 125
in the fight at Springfield.....iii. 230
Shuldham, Admiral.....ii. 47
Silliman, Gen., rouses the country...ii. 287
joined by Arnold and Wooster.....ii. 288
Silver Heels in Braddock's camp.....i. 122
Simcoe, Col., accompanies Arnold..iii. 318
devastates Westham.....iii. 328
deceives Steuben.....iii. 383
ravages.....iii. 384
skirmish with Butler.....iii. 384
Streuil, Captain de, slain.....iv. 32
Skene, Colonel, joins Burgoyne.....ii. 351
suggests an expedition to Bennington.....ii. 357
to accompany the expedition.....ii. 366
Skenesborough, arrival of flotilla from Ticonderoga.....ii. 328
Skinners.....iv. 340
Slavery, Washington concerning....iv. 315
Smallwood, Colonel.....ii. 104
equipment of his battalion.....ii. 105
reinforces Washington.....ii. 118
bravery of his macaronis.....ii. 152
wounded.....ii. 176
to co-operate with Rodney.....ii. 380
his new militia.....ii. 392
stationed on the Catawba.....iii. 312
Smith, Joshua Hett, delivers Arnold's letter to Col. Robinson....iii. 258
takes André ashore.....iii. 259
accompanies André.....iii. 260
parts with André.....iii. 261
sent a prisoner to West Point.....iii. 274
acquitted.....iii. 287
Smith, Lieut. Col., commands expedition against Concord.....i. 279
sets out on his march.....i. 280
people rising.....i. 280
sends for reinforcements.....i. 280
sends Major Pitcairn forward.....i. 280
arrives at Lexington.....i. 280
enters Concord.....i. 281
retreats on Boston.....i. 282
harassed by the Americans.....i. 282
reinforced by Lord Percy.....i. 282
Smith, Lieut. Col. Samuel, commands Fort Mifflin.....iii. 46
receives thanks of Congress.....iii. 49
on the defence of Fort Mifflin.....iii. 55
disabled.....iii. 56
voted a sword by Congress.....iii. 57
Smith, Lieutenant, killed while bearing flag.....iii. 41
Smith, William, the historian, on Gage.....i. 252
Smith, Chief Justice, William, on commission concerning André...iii. 281
Smith, William S., commissioner to New York.....iv. 62
Soldier's claims.....i. 238
adjusted (note).....i. 243
South Carolina, invasion of.....iii. 188
condition and population.....iii. 203
symptoms of revolt.....iii. 242
lower part described.....iii. 243
Spain and the Mississippi.....iv. 122
Specht, Brigadier-General, in command of Burgoyne's camp.....iii. 22
Spencer, Joseph, appointed brigadier general.....i. 295
offended on a question of rank.....i. 330
at Roxbury.....i. 334
at Harlem.....ii 153
Spicer, Major, at Brandywine.....ii. 385
Spotswood, Colonel Alexander, forms Washington's guard.....ii. 285
Springfield, N. J., American troops at.....iii. 227
fight at.....iii. 230
burned by the British.....iii. 231
Stamp Act projected.....i. 220
its passage.....i. 221
first opposition to.....i. 221
preparations to enforce it.....i. 224
Stamp Act—*Continued.*
popular agitation.....i. 225
repealed.....i. 227
Stanislaus, King, makes General Lee his aid de-camp.....i. 270
friendship for General Lee.....i. 271
Stanwix, Colonel.....i. 133
Stark, John, carries the alarm.....i. 124
arrives with troops from New Haven.....i. 298
to reinforce Prescott.....i. 305
arrives at Bunker's Hill.....i. 307
anecdote.....i. 307
repulses General Howe.....i. 308
maintains his position.....i. 311
leads the advance guard.....ii. 232
at Bennington.....ii. 346
appeal to his patriotism.....ii. 365
at Bennington.....ii. 367
serves on his own responsibility....ii. 367
insubordination.....ii. 368
sallies out and meets the enemy....ii. 368
attacks Baum.....ii. 369
defeats Brum.....ii. 370
to Lafayette.....iii. 89
forage in Westchester county.....iii. 301
Staten Island, British throwing up works.....ii. 88
treachery of the people.....ii. 88
St. Clair, Colonel, detached to Three Rivers.....ii. 75
takes command of Ticonderoga....ii. 296
announces the appearance of the enemy.....ii. 310
to Schuyler on Burgoyne's force...ii. 317
on desperate state of Ticonderoga.ii. 318
his garrison.....ii. 319
evacuates Ticonderoga.....ii. 321
calls a council of war.....ii. 326
evacuates Ticonderoga and Mount Independence.....ii. 326
his retreat.....ii. 327
attacked by General Fraser.....ii. 329
reaches Fort Edward.....ii. 331
summoned to Congress.....iii. 312
insinuations against.....iii. 291
in the camp of the Pennsylvania mutineers.....iii. 323
sent to reinforce Greene.....iv. 39
receives Washington.....iv. 113
at Washington's inauguration.....iv. 117
commands Indian expedition.....iv. 174
cautioned by Washington.....iv. 174
his army.....iv. 180
character and equipment.....iv. 181
on his march.....iv. 181
desertions.....iv. 182
his encampment.....iv. 182
surprised by Indians.....iv. 183
conduct in the battle.....iv. 184
flight of.....iv. 185
reach Fort Jefferson.....iv. 185
arrives at Fort Washington.....iv. 185
asks for a court of inquiry.....iv. 191
resigns his commission.....iv. 192
exculpated by House of Representatives.....iv. 198
St. Clair, Sir John, precedes Braddock.....i. 109
to Governor Morris.....i. 109
engages wagons and horses.....i. 110
his wrath at Fort Cumberland.....i. 115
in the advance to Fort Duquesne....i. 133
orders Washington to Williamsburg.....i. 186
Steele, Mrs. Elizabeth, and General Greene.....iii. 345
Stephen, Col. Adam, joins Washington.....i. 79
promoted by Washington.....i. 92
with Washington.....i. 145
at Princeton.....ii. 209
at the battle of Germantown.....iii. 41
dismissed.....iii. 66
Sterling, Colonel, lands at Fort Washington.....ii. 194

Sterling, Colonel—*Continued.*
at Princeton....ii. 209
mortally wounded....iii. 246
Steuben, Baron, arrival in camp....iii. 102
his history....iii. 103
to Washington, on his desire to serve America....iii. 103
proceeds to Congress....iii. 104
appointed inspector-general....iii. 104
disciplines the army....iii. 105
anecdotes of, (note)....iii. 105
character and habits....iii. 106
effect of his discipline....iii. 131
to preside over court of inquiry....iii. 294
commands in Virginia....iii. 327
opposes Arnold....iii. 333
at York....iii. 366
obliged to withdraw....iii. 368
deceived by Simcoe....iii. 383
opens second parallel before Yorktown....iv. 30
society of the Cincinnati....iv. 62
at Washington's inauguration....iv. 117
Stevens, General, joins Gates....iii. 245
at the council of war....iii. 246
at the battle of Camden....iii. 247
takes charge of Morgan's prisoners....iii. 341
at Guilford Court House....iii. 344
orders a retreat....iii. 345
Stewart, Captain, assists Braddock....i. 137
accompanies Braddock....i. 139
Stewart, Colonel, at Monmouth Court House....iii. 131
accompanies Wayne....iii. 321
Stewart, Colonel, at Guilford Court House....iii. 335
Stickney, Colonel, at Bennington....ii. 369
Stirling, Lord, in command at New York....ii. 56
report on the condition of the Highlands....ii. 73
moves against General Grant....ii. 128
holds him in check....ii. 129
attacks Cornwallis....ii. 131
surrenders himself....ii. 132
exchanged....ii. 157
resolves to entrap Rogers....ii. 171
to cross at King's Ferry....ii. 182
crosses the Hudson....ii. 183
falls back on Trenton....ii. 214
at Matouchin Church....ii. 309
driven in by Cornwallis....ii. 309
in favor of attacking Philadelphia....iii. 63
correspondence with Wilkinson on the Conway letter....iii. 90
appeases the honor of Wilkinson....iii. 95
at Monmouth Court House....iii. 131
encamps at the New Bridge....iii. 183
unsuccessful descent on Staten Island....iii. 192
retreats to Elizabethtown....iii. 192
St. Johns, Canada, expedition against....i. 290
surprised by Arnold....i. 290
General Schuyler appears before it....i. 359
invested by Montgomery....i. 362
its resistance....i. 362
capitulates....i. 380
St. John's Island, landing of Sir Henry Clinton....iii. 205
St. Leger, Colonel, to make a diversion....ii. 315
invests Fort Schuyler....ii. 357
summons it to surrender....ii. 358
tries to intimidate the garrison....ii. 362
makes regular approaches....ii. 363
presses the siege....ii. 373
obliged to decamp....ii. 374
St. Luc commands Indians....ii. 352
reputation....ii. 366
St. Lucia, expedition against....iii. 161
Stobo, Captain, left as hostage....i. 98
letter from Fort Duquesne....i. 101
imprisoned in Quebec....i. 106
Stobo, Captain—*Continued.*
his escape....i. 108
obtains grant of land (note)....i. 233
Stockwell, Lieutenant, guides Col. Willett....iii. 333
Stoddart, Capt., and Wilkinson....iii. 91
Stonington cannonaded....i. 367
Stony Point, landing of the British....iii. 15
being fortified....iii. 172
taken by the British....iii. 173
position of....iii. 176
garrison of....iii. 176
plan of attack....iii. 176
stormed by the Americans....iii. 177
killed and wounded....iii. 178
conduct of the Americans....iii. 178
evacuated and destroyed by the Americans....iii. 179
fortified and garrisoned by the British....iii. 179
St. Pierre, Chevalier Legardeur de, reception of Washington....i. 67
gives Washington his reply to Gov. Dinwiddie....i. 69
his reply to Governor Dinwiddie....i. 75
commands Canadians and Indians....i. 151
slain....i. 152
Stringer, Doctor, dismissed....ii. 279
St. Simon, Marquis, lands with troops....iii. 404
embarks his troops....iv. 89
Stuart, Col., joins Lord Rawdon....iii. 390
encamps on the Congaree....iii. 394
moves to Eutaw Springs....iv. 23
battle of Eutaw Springs....iv. 24
decamps....iv. 27
retreats to Monck's Corner....iv. 28
Stuart, Doctor, to Washington on sectional interests....iv. 156
to Washington on ceremonials....iv. 162
Stuart, Gilbert, portrait of Washington (appendix)....iv. 338
Sugar Hill commands Ticonderoga....ii. 325
fortified by the British....ii. 326
Sugar House....ii. 270
Sulgrave, "Washington's Manor," described....i. 22
Sullivan, General, under Major-General Lee....i. 334
sent to Portsmouth....i. 374
despatched to New York....ii. 56
despatched to Canada....ii. 59
takes command....ii. 75
to Washington, hopeful....ii. 75
mistakes the enemy's force....ii. 78
to Washington on Thompson's expedition....ii. 77
retreats....ii. 79
joined by Arnold....ii. 79
embarks for Crown Point....ii. 79
requests leave of absence....ii. 102
tenders his resignation....ii. 104
in temporary command....ii. 122
reconnoitres....ii. 129
retreats....ii. 129
taken prisoner....ii. 130
at Vealtown....ii. 218
hastens to join Washington....ii. 220
joins Washington....ii. 224
ordered to advance and charge....ii. 231
attacks Trenton....ii. 233
at Morristown....iii. 258
behind the Sourland Hills....ii. 307
to advance to the Highlands....ii. 310
joins Washington....ii. 380
attempts to surprise the enemy....ii. 380
at Brandywine....ii. 386
at the battle of Germantown....iii. 31
describes Washington at Germantown....iii. 43
to attack Rhode Island....iii. 144
moves from Providence....iii. 146
occupies abandoned works....iii. 146
before Newport....iii. 146
at Honeyman's Hill....iii. 147

Sullivan, General—*Continued.*
protest against D'Estaing's proceeding to Boston....iii. 148
general order on the departure of the French fleet....iii. 149
retreats to Batt's Hill....iii. 150
commands expedition against the Indians....iii. 170
battle at Newtown....iii. 170
lays the Indian country waste....iii. 170
thanked by Congress....iii. 170
retires from the service....iii. 171
Hamilton's talent for finance....iv. 111
Sullivan's Island fortified....ii. 108
battle of....ii. 110
bravery of troops....ii. 110
British account....ii. 110
deficiency of powder....ii. 111
enemy repulsed....ii. 111
loss of the Americans....ii. 112
Sumner, Gen., at Eutaw Springs....iv. 24
gives way....iv. 25
Sumter, Thomas, character and services....iii. 243
chosen leader....iii. 243
attacks the British at Rocky Mount....iii. 244
successful attack on Hanging Rock....iii. 244
sends to Gates for reinforcements....iii. 246
reduces redoubt on the Wateree....iii. 248
surprised by Tarleton....iii. 249
again in the field....iii. 311
menaces the British posts....iii. 311
fight at Black Stock Hill....iii. 311
detached to scour the country....iii. 390
pursues Colonel Coates....iii. 391
attacks on Colonel Coates....iii. 391
rejoins Greene....iii. 393
Sutherland, Major, commands at Paulus Hook....iii. 182
Symonds, Colonel, joins Stark....ii. 369

T.

Talbot, Captain, at Fort Mifflin....iii. 56
wounded....iii. 57
Talleyrand and the American envoys....iv. 265
amicable overtures....iv. 307
Tallmadge, Major, and André....iii. 296
escorts André to the Robinson House....iii. 274
fascinated by André....iii. 274
conversation with André....iii. 275
predicts André's fate....iii. 276
to Colonel Webb, commiserating André....iii. 281
account of André's execution....iii. 285
successful exploit....iii. 301
Tanacharisson, a Seneca chief....i. 47
accompanies Washington to the French post....i. 64
letter to Washington....i. 85
prepares for battle....i. 89
opinion of white men's warfare....i. 99
his death....i. 100
Tarleton, Lieutenant Colonel Banastre, on the expedition to South Carolina....iii. 203
description of....iii. 205
obtains horses for his dragoons....iii. 205
joins General Patterson....iii. 217
surprises General Huger's camp....iii. 220
surprises Americans at Laneau's Ferry....iii. 221
pursues Colonel Buford....iii. 222
butchery at Waxhaw....iii. 224
his excuse....iii. 224
pursues Sumter....iii. 248
surprises Sumter....iii. 249
in quest of Marion....iii. 310
fight at Black Stock Hill....iii. 311
sent in quest of Morgan....iii. 331
at Pacolet....iii. 333
Tarleton, Lieut. Colonel—*Continued.*
battle of the Cowpens....iii. 337
detached to Beattie's Ford....iii. 343
surprise at Tarrant's Tavern....iii. 344
recruiting expedition....iii. 350
recalled to Hillsborough....iii. 351
skirmish with Lee....iii. 353
in Virginia....iii. 382
skirmish with the French....iv. 22
Tarrant's Tavern, militia surprised by Tarleton....iii. 344
Tash, Colonel, ordered to Fishkill....ii. 162
Tate, Captain, under Morgan....iii. 3 6
Taxation of American colonies....i. 218
Ten Broeck, General....ii. 376
arrives on the field....iii. 24
Ternant, M., inspector....iii. 104
Ternay, Chevalier de, to command French fleet....iii. 211
arrives at Newport....iii. 224
Thayer, commands Fort Mifflin....iii. 56
evacuates the fort....iii. 57
Thicketty Run, Braddock encamps at....i. 130
Thomas, John, appointed brigadier general....i. 295
commands the right wing....i. 299
fortifies Roxbury Neck....i. 325
offended on a question of rank....i. 330
at Roxbury....i. 334
sets out for Dorchester Heights....ii. 44
reinforced....ii. 46
commands in Canada....ii. 54
promotion....ii. 54
headquarters at Albany....ii. 55
arrives at Quebec....ii. 62
sends a fire-ship....ii. 62
prepares to retreat....ii. 62
at Point Deschambault....ii. 64
retreats to the mouth of the Sorel....ii. 75
illness and death....ii. 75
Thompson, Brig. Gen., despatched to Canada....ii. 59
at the mouth of the Sorel....ii. 75
eparing to retreat....ii. 75
captured at Three Rivers....ii. 78
Thompson, Col., at Sullivan's Island....ii. 109
repulses Sir Henry Clinton....ii. 111
receives thanks of Congress....ii. 112
Three Mile Run, skirmish at....iii. 67
Throg's Neck, position of....ii. 167
landing of the British....ii. 166
Ticonderoga, to be reduced....i. 178
dismantled....i. 196
expedition against....i. 286
surprised by Ethan Allen....i. 288
strength of garrison....i. 349
preparations for defence....ii. 186
threatened....ii. 308
approach of Burgoyne....ii. 316
thickening alarms....ii. 318
enemy advancing....ii. 319
evacuated....ii. 320
Burgoyne fortifies Mount Hope....ii. 324
invested....ii. 324
commanded by Sugar Hill....ii. 325
evacuated....ii. 326
effects of evacuation....ii. 331
surprised by Colonel Brown....ii. 403
evacuated by the British....iii. 86
Tilghman, Colonel Tench, on General Lee....ii. 169
rival generalship....ii. 178
enemy at Dobb's Ferry....ii. 180
to R. R. Livingston, relative to Greene....ii. 196
Washington's aide de-camp....ii. 258
Washington's festive gayety....iv. 93
death of....iv. 97
Tilly, M. de, detached to the Chesapeake....iii. 362
failure of the enterprise....iii. 363
Townsend, Brigadier, in the expedition to Quebec....i. 197
sent against Montcalm....i. 202
in command....i. 203

Townsend, Brigadier—*Continued.*
advances to meet De Bougainville..i. 203
and General Lee.....i. 271
Travelling in 1756.....i. 154
Treasury, secretary of the, importance of the post.....iv. 136
Treat, Capt., killed at Fort Mifflin...iii. 56
Treaty with France.....iii. 111
ratified by Congress.....iii. 113
rejoicings in the United States....iii. 113
with England (Jay's).....iv. 258
debated in the Senate.....iv. 259
ratified.....iv. 260
public outcry against.....iv. 260
Washington concerning.....iv. 261
Trent, Captain William, sent to expostulate with the French.....i. 59
returns home unsuccessful.....i. 60
despatched to the frontier.....i. 76
his behavior.....i. 82
Trenton, in command of Col. Rahl...ii. 225
projected attack on.....ii. 228
alarm at an outpost.....ii. 231
march of American troops.....ii. 231
picket driven in.....ii. 232
the attack.....ii. 232
surrender of the Hessians.....ii. 235
number of prisoners.....ii. 235
Triplet, Captain, under Morgan.....iii. 316
Troup, Major.....ii. 294
Truman, Captain, with General St. Clair.....iv. 182
Trumbull, Colonel John, portraits of Washington (appendix).....iv. 325
aide-de-camp to Washington.....i. 331
his duties.....i. 331
selects site for a fort.....ii. 102
arrives from Europe.....iv. 149
message from Lafayette to Washington.....iv. 149
Trumbull, Jonathan, patriotism.....i. 328
to Washington.....i. 329
asks protection for New London...i. 335
to Washington, on desertion of Connecticut troops.....i. 390
aids General Lee.....ii. 24
concerning Schuyler and Gates....ii. 105
patriotism of.....ii. 339
Trumbull, Joseph, appointed commissary general.....i. 334
to Gates concerning Schuyler.....ii. 103
to Gates concerning Lee.....ii. 164
accusing Schuyler.....ii. 278
resigns.....ii. 343
Tryon, Governor, absent in England..i. 318
in New York harbor.....i. 319
reception in New York.....i. 320
letter concerning.....ii. 57
in New York bay.....ii. 58
conspiracy in New York.....ii. 80
offers bounty to recruits.....ii. 81
on colonial loyalty (note).....ii. 84
conducts an expedition against Danbury.....ii. 287
lands at Canepo Hill.....ii. 287
destroys Danbury.....ii. 288
commences the retreat.....ii. 288
intrenched at Ridgefield.....ii. 289
reaches Canepo Hill.....ii. 290
sends Lord North's bills to Washington.....iii. 111
commands expedition against Connecticut.....iii. 174
lands near New Haven.....iii. 174
takes New Haven.....iii. 174
destroys Fairfield.....iii. 174
devastates Norwalk.....iii. 174
Tupper, Colonel, attacks the Rose and Phœnix.....ii. 116
bravery of the Americans.....ii. 116
Turtle Bay cannonaded.....ii. 150
Tuttle, Rev., Joseph F., anecdotes (note).....iii. 191

U.

United Colonies.....i. 291

V.

Valley Forge, march to.....iii. 70
disposition of the army.....iii. 71
condition of the troops.....iii. 98
described by British historian.....iii. 98
amount of American troops.....iii. 115
Van Braam, Jacob, Washington's fencing master.....i. 54
accompanies Washington as interpreter.....i. 60
made captain.....i. 79
recommended by Washington for promotion.....i. 92
treats with the French.....i. 97
left as hostage.....i. 98
accused of treachery.....i. 99
imprisoned in Quebec.....i. 106
escape and recapture.....i. 106
sent to England.....i. 106
obtains grant of land (note).....i. 243
to Washington, relating his history.....iv. 77
Van Cortlandt, Pierre, to General Lee.....ii. 25
patriotic zeal.....ii. 98
family (note).....ii. 100
joins Schuyler.....ii. 374
Van Rensselaer, General, drives back the marauders.....iii. 295
Van Schaick, Colonel.....ii. 321
expedition against the Onondagas.iii. 170
Van Wart, Isaac, and André.....iii. 262
and the death of André.....iii. 287
Varick, Colonel, in correspondence with Schuyler.....ii. 397
fears Burgoyne will decamp.....ii. 397
to Schuyler, on Burgoyne's surrender.....iii. 88
Varnum, General.....ii. 210
reinforces Washington.....iii. 45
at Red Bank.....iii. 55
on the destitution of the troops...iii. 71
meets Washington.....iv. 105
Vaughan, General, to move up the Hudson.....iii. 19
expedition up the Hudson.....iii. 172
Venango.....i. 64
Vergennes, Count de, prediction concerning the American colonies....i. 206
on the battle of Germantown.....iii. 44
solicits the liberation of Capt. Asgill.....iv. 45
Vermont admitted into the Union..iv. 173
Verplanck's Point, landing of the British.....iii. 15
fort erected on.....iii. 172
Villiers, Captain de, sallies from Fort Duquesne.....i. 95
his account of the affair at Great Meadows (note).....i. 100
Vincent, Earl St., in the expedition against Quebec.....i. 197
Vlomenil, General, the Baron de, embarked.....iii. 364
to storm a redoubt.....iv. 31
carries the redoubt.....iv. 3
Virginia divided into military districts.....i. 53
House of Burgesses convened.....i. 77
vote thanks to Washington and his officers.....i. 99
grant £20,000 for the public service.....i. 103
recruits, their appearance and discipline.....i. 120
troops, effective mode of fighting..i. 136
Legislature, reform the militia laws.....i. 153
Assembly, vote measures of relief..i. 161
troops, gallant conduct.....i. 192
aristocratical days.....i. 208
style of living.....i. 209
love of horses.....i. 209
estate, a little empire.....i. 210
Legislature, their proceedings.....i. 233

Virginia—*Continued.*
sympathy with the patriots of New England.....i. 233
address to the King.....i. 234
dissolved by Lord Botetourt.....i. 234
adjourn to a private house.....i. 234
Peyton Randolph moderator.....i. 234
pledge themselves not to use or import taxed British goods.....i. 234
public discontents.....i. 237
Board of Commissioners.....i. 238
renewed public irritation.....i. 244
Legislature, call the Earl of Dunmore to account.....i. 244
prorogued by the governor.....i. 244
convened.....i. 245
corresponding committee.....i. 245
aristocracy.....i. 249
House of Burgesses (in session).....i. 249
splendid opening.....i. 250
indignation at the Boston port bill..i. 250
protest against obnoxious acts of Parliament.....i. 250
appoint a day of fasting and prayer.i. 250
dissolved.....i. 250
adjourn to the Raleigh tavern.....i. 250
resolutions.....i. 250
recommend a General Congress.....i. 251
meeting called.....i. 274
military preparations.....i. 274
second convention at Richmond....i. 277
in combustion.....i. 285
troops described.....i. 335
sharpshooting.....i. 335
General Assembly of, conduct toward Gates.....iii. 314
defenceless state.....iii. 327
Assembly, reception of Washington.....iv. 83
appropriation to Washington.....iv. 85
Van Dechow, Major, and Col. Rahl..ii. 226
mortally wounded.....ii. 235

W.

Wadworth, Colonel, resigns.....iii. 190
Wainwood, Mr., intercepts a treasonable letter.....i. 367
Walcott, Col., referee for exchange of prisoners.....i. 265
Waldeckers join General Howe.....ii. 172
Wales, Judge, on the bombardment of Boston.....i. 372
Walker, Capt., interprets for Steuben.....iii. 105
Walker, Thomas, and General Prescott (note).....i. 394
Wallace, Captain, piratical reputation.....i. 367
harasses Rhode Island.....i. 16
before New York.....ii. 91
Wallace, Sir James, to go up the Hudson.....iii. 19
Walpole, Horace, opinion of Washington.....i. 98
anecdotes of Braddock.....i. 108
satirical remark on Braddock's delay.....i. 132
on Granville.....i. 221
on Lord Botetourt.....i. 232
on Horatio Gates.....i. 275
on Burgoyne's plays.....i. 394
concerning General Gage.....i. 372
on Lord Howe.....ii. 53
Walpole, Sir Robert, on American taxation.....i. 218
Wando, works thrown up.....iii. 219
Ward, Artemas, nominated general officer.....i. 274
commands American camp.....i. 286
his services.....i. 286
sustained in Congress.....i. 294
appointed major general.....i. 295
elected second in command.....i. 295
headquarters at Cambridge.....i. 299
Ward, Artemas—*Continued.*
disposition of troops.....i. 299
doubts the expediency of occupying Charlestown Heights.....i. 300
reinforces Prescott.....i. 305
commands right wing.....i. 334
enters Boston.....ii. 51
Ward, Henry, transmits treasonable letter to General Greene.....i. 368
Warner, Seth, Ethan Allen's lieutenant.....i. 287
in the expedition against Ticonderoga.....i. 288
surprises Crown Point.....i. 289
repairs to Congress.....i. 346
repairs to New York Convention....i. 346
elected Lieutenant Colonel.....i. 351
arrives at camp.....i. 360
detached to intercept relief.....i. 362
attacks General Carleton.....i. 375
in St. Clair's retreat.....ii. 329
at Manchester.....ii. 355
joins Stark.....ii. 367
arrives at the scene of action.....ii. 370
Warren, Dr. Joseph, member of Committee of Safety.....i. 279
gives the alarm.....i. 279
arrives from Boston.....i. 283
doubts the expediency of occupying Charlestown Heights.....i. 300
arrives at the heights.....i. 307
noble conduct.....i. 307
declines the command.....i. 307
death.....i. 311
public loss.....i. 312
Washington, modifications of the name.....i. 22
Washington, Augustine, father of George, born.....i. 25
marries Jane Butler, and afterwards Mary Ball.....i. 25
his death.....i. 28
Washington, George, genealogy of...i. 1
birth of.....i. 25
the house of his boyhood.....i. 26
his early education.....i. 26
his martial spirit.....i. 28
school exercises.....i. 29
physical strength.....i. 30
his code of morals and manners....i. 31
influence of soldier's tales.....i. 31
obtains a midshipman's warrant...i. 32
relinquished on his mother's remonstrance and returns to school.i. 32
studies and exercises.....i. 32
school-boy passion.....i. 33
attempts at poetry.....i. 33
appearance and character at sixteen.....i. 35
letters to friends.....i. 36
engaged as surveyor.....i. 37
expedition beyond the Blue Ridge..i. 37
life in the wilderness.....i. 38
completes his surveys and returns home.....i. 40
appointed public surveyor.....i. 41
appointed adjutant general.....i. 54
prepares himself for his new duties.....i. 54
accompanies Lawrence to the West Indies.....i. 54
arrives at Barbadoes.....i. 54
witnesses a dramatic performance for the first time.....i. 55
attacked with small pox.....i. 55
recovery.....i. 55
returns to Virginia.....i. 56
appointed executor of his brother Lawrence's will.....i. 57
chosen to negotiate with the Indians.....i. 60
his instructions.....i. 60
departs on his mission.....i. 60
arrives at Wills' Creek.....i. 61
meets Mr. Gist, whom he engages...i. 61
his description of the country.....i. 61

Washington, George—*Continued.*
invites Shingis, chief of the Delawares, to the council at Logstown....i. 62
arrives at Logstown....i. 62
interview with the half king....i. 62
meets the Indians in council....i. 63
first lesson in Indian diplomacy....i. 63
sets out for the French post....i. 64
arrives at Venango....i. 64
meets Captain Joncaire....i. 64
at supper with Joncaire....i. 65
sets out from Venango....i. 66
reaches the French fort....i. 66
his reception....i. 67
communication with the French officers....i. 67
takes observations of the fort, &c..i. 68
prepares to return....i. 69
receives the reply of the Chevalier de St. Pierre to Gov. Dinwiddie....i. 69
reaches Venango....i. 70
sets out from Venango homeward..i. 70
severe cold, travel on foot....i. 71
arrives at Murdering Town....i. 71
engages an Indian guide to Shannopins Town....i. 72
treachery of the guide....i. 72
crosses the Alleghany River, imminent peril....i. 73
arrives at Frazier's....i. 74
appeases the anger of Queen Alliquippa....i. 74
reaches Williamsburg....i. 75
his conduct through the expedition....i. 75
made lieutenant colonel....i. 78
on recruiting service....i. 78
sets out with two companies to the fork of the Ohio....i. 79
toilful march to Wills' Creek....i. 79
calls a council of war....i. 81
writes to Governor Dinwiddie....i. 81
at Little Meadows....i. 83
arrives at the Youghiogeny River...i. 84
remonstrates against the insufficient pay....i. 84
his motives of action....i. 84
explores the river in a canoe....i. 85
letter from the half-king....i. 85
rumors of advancing French....i. 85
takes a position at the Great Meadows....i. 85
interview with the half-king....i. 86
surprises the French....i. 87
letters to Governor Dinwiddie....i. 88
expects to be attacked....i. 89
his military excitement....i. 90
whistling of bullets....i. 90
to Croghan for supplies....i. 91
to Governor Dinwiddie in behalf of Van Braam....i. 92
to Governor Dinwiddie in reference to Captain Mackay's company....i. 92
delivers presents to the Indians....i. 93
receives the name of Connotaucarius....i. 93
to Governor Dinwiddie about French prisoners....i. 94
to Governor Dinwiddie concerning Capt. Mackay....i. 94
resumes his march to Redstone Creek....i. 94
retreats....i. 95
reaches Great Meadows....i. 95
strengthens Fort Necessity....i. 96
deserted by the Indians....i. 96
attacked by French and Indians....i. 97
capitulates to the French....i. 97
destroys military stores....i. 98
returns to Williamsburg....i. 99
receives a vote of thanks....i. 99
to William Fairfax about Croghan and Montour....i. 99
rejoins his regiment....i. 101

Washington, George—*Continued.*
from Governor Dinwiddie ordering an advance to Wills' Creek...i. 102
his objections to the project....i. 102
leaves the service....i. 104
is urged by Governor Sharpe to continue....i. 104
his reply....i. 104
visits his mother....i. 107
takes up his abode at Mount Vernon....i. 107
his excitement at the military preparations under Braddock....i. 111
desires to join as a volunteer....i. 111
is invited to join Braddock's staff..i. 112
accepts the appointment....i. 112
resists the appeals of his mother...i. 112
arrives at Braddock's headquarters....i. 112
his reception....i. 112
his predictions....i. 114
horses disabled....i. 119
sent for the military chest....i. 123
notions of frugality outraged by officers of Braddock's expedition.i. 125
counsels Braddock....i. 126
personal example....i. 126
his disappointment with their movements....i. 128
illness....i. 128
rests at the great crossings of the Youghiogeny....i. 128
from Captain Morris....i. 131
rejoins Braddock....i. 132
cordial reception....i. 132
delighted with the appearance of the army....i. 133
in battle....i. 136
danger and preservation....i. 137
sent to Colonel Dunbar's camp for aid....i. 138
returns with supplies....i. 138
reads the funeral service over Braddock....i. 139
reaches Fort Cumberland....i. 140
to his mother and brother....i. 140
at Mount Vernon....i. 143
to Augustine....i. 143
prepares for the public safety....i. 144
his willingness to serve his country....i. 144
declines to solicit the command....i. 144
to his mother....i. 145
appointed commander-in-chief....i. 145
popularity among trials and reverses....i. 145
fixes his headquarters at Winchester....i. 146
panic at Winchester....i. 146
his difficulties....i. 147
"insolence of the people."....i. 147
increased alarms....i. 148
ludicrous result....i. 148
appreciation of Indian aid....i. 149
disciplines his troops....i. 153
questions of precedence....i. 154
sets out for Boston....i. 154
his equipment....i. 154
aristocratical order for clothes (note)....i. 155
the journey....i. 155
interview with Governor Shirley...i. 125
disappointment in not being put upon the regular establishment..i. 155
return to New York....i. 156
meets Miss Mary Philipse....i. 157
admiration of her....i. 157
return to Virginia....i. 157
repairs to Winchester....i. 158
inhabitants in dismay....i. 159
appealed to for protection....i. 160
to Governor Dinwiddie....i. 160
attacked by the press....i. 160
his indignation....i. 160
opposes the plan of defence devised by Governor Dinwiddie....i. 161

Washington, George—*Continued.*
plan proposed....i. 161
recommendations with respect to military laws....i. 162
superintends the measures taken for frontier security....i. 166
tour of inspection....i. 166
the irregulars....i. 168
cross purposes with Governor Dinwiddie....i. 168
to Mr. Speaker Robinson....i. 169
asks permission to visit Philadelphia....i. 172
to Lord Loudon in vindication of his conduct....i. 172
his reception by Lord Loudon....i. 173
stationed at Winchester....i. 173
misunderstanding with Dinwiddie.i. 174
appeal to Dinwiddie....i. 176
illness....i. 176
retires to Mount Vernon....i. 176
state of health....i. 177
to Colonel Stanwix....i. 177
improved health....i. 177
resumes command of Fort Loudon.i. 177
satisfaction at the decision to reduce Fort Duquesne....i. 178
to Colonel Stanwix....i. 179
to Major Halket....i. 179
orders out the militia....i. 185
sets off for Williamsburg....i. 186
meets Mrs. Martha Custis....i. 186
is smitten....i. 186
courtship....i. 186
engagement....i. 187
military conference....i. 187
arrives at Winchester....i. 187
ordered to Fort Cumberland....i. 187
alters the military dress....i. 187
annoyed by Indians....i. 188
efficiency of Indian scouts....i. 188
discountenances a project of Col. Bouquet....i. 188
proposed as representative to the House of Burgesses....i. 188
elected and chaired....i. 188
hears of Amherst's success....i. 189
to Colonel Bouquet....i. 189
remonstrates against opening a new road....i. 189
ordered to Raystown....i. 190
to Governor Fauquier....i. 192
given command of a division....i. 192
arrives before Fort Duquesne....i. 193
occupies the ruins of Fort Duquesne....i. 193
resigns his commission....i. 194
marries Mrs. Custis....i. 194
at the "White House"....i. 206
takes his seat in the House of Burgesses....i. 206
first effort....i. 206
intrusted with the care of the property of Mr. Custis's children....i. 207
intimates a desire to visit England.i. 207
happiness in retirement....i. 207
vestryman....i. 208
deportment in church....i. 208
his fortune....i. 209
horses....i. 209
dogs....i. 209
riding equipments (note)....i. 209
management of his estate....i. 210
business habits....i. 210
the reputation of his brand....i. 211
domestic habits....i. 211
treatment of negroes....i. 211
anecdote....i. 212
his new plough....i. 212
fox-hunting....i. 212
hunting dinners....i. 212
hunting memoranda (note)....i. 212
fishing and shooting....i. 213
defiant oysterman....i. 213
duck shooting....i. 213
chastises a poacher....i. 213

Washington, George—*Continued.*
aquatic recreations....i. 214
visits to Annapolis....i. 214
amusements....i. 214
dancing....i. 214
domestic life....i. 214
project to drain Dismal Swamp....i. 215
in the House of Burgesses....i. 221
Stamp Act discussed....i. 221
to Francis Dandridge on the Stamp Act....i. 223
management of his estate....i. 224
conduct towards his wife's son....i. 224
letters to London agents....i. 224
on the Stamp Act....i. 224
life at Mount Vernon....i. 229
to Geo. Mason on non-importation..i. 230
introduces resolutions of non-use and importation....i. 234
on Botetourt....i. 237
expedition to the Ohio....i. 238
arrives at Fort Pitt....i. 239
meets Colonel Croghan....i. 239
interview with Indian chiefs....i. 240
embarks on the Ohio....i. 240
voyage down the river....i. 241
lands at Mingotown....i. 241
arrives at Captema Creek....i. 241
visits Kiashuta, a Seneca sachem...i. 242
encamps at the mouth of the Great Kanawhe....i. 242
visited by an old sachem....i. 243
escape at Braddock's defeat....i. 243
return home....i. 243
to Colonel Muse (note)....i. 243
attends the Assembly....i. 245
friendly relations with Lord Dunmore....i. 245
affliction at the death of Miss Custis.i. 245
guardianship of John Parke Custis.i. 246
opposed to premature marriage....i. 246
accompanies John P. Custis to New York....i. 246
to President Cooper (note)....i. 247
to Jonathan Boucher on premature travel (note)....i. 247
to Benedict Calvert on premature marriage (note)....i. 247
intimacy with Lord Dunmore....i. 251
attends meeting at Williamsburg...i. 251
presides at a political meeting....i. 253
chairman of committee on resolutions....i. 253
to Bryan Fairfax on a petition to the Throne....i. 254
reports patriotic resolutions....i. 254
delegate to General Convention....i. 255
to Fairfax....i. 256
on non-importation....i. 256
presents resolutions to the convention....i. 256
enthusiasm....i. 257
delegate to the General Congress....i. 247
to Bryan Fairfax....i. 257
sets out for Philadelphia....i. 259
during prayer in the General Congress....i. 262
to Captain Mackenzie on the independence....i. 265
returns to Mount Vernon....i. 266
reviews military companies....i. 274
visit of Lee and Gates....i. 275
fox-hunting....i. 277
attends convention at Richmond...i. 277
one of a committee to prepare for war....i. 277
offers to command a company....i. 277
concerning the retreat from Concord....i. 283
hears of the affair at Lexington....i. 285
to George William Fairfax....i. 285
hopes of a reconciliation....i. 291
chairman of committees on military affairs....i. 292
urged as commander-in-chief....i. 292
modesty....i. 294

Washington, George—*Continued.*
opposed ..... i. 294
elected commander-in-chief ..... i. 295
acceptance ..... i. 295
to his wife ..... i. 296
to his brother ..... i. 296
receives his commission ..... i. 297
beau ideal of a commissioner ..... i. 297
sets out from Philadelphia ..... i. 314
harmony with Schuyler ..... i. 314
news of the battle of Bunker's Hill ..... i. 316
determines to intrust Schuyler with the command of New York .. i. 319
at Newark ..... i. 319
reply to President Livingston's address ..... i. 319
instructions to General Schuyler .... i. 320
leaves New York ..... i. 320
at the American camp ..... i. 321
effect of personal appearance ..... i. 321
to Governor Trumbull ..... i. 322
portraits of (Appendix) ..... i. 322
takes command of the army ..... i. 322
visits the American posts ..... i. 323
at Prospect Hill ..... i. 324
reconnoitres the British posts ..... i. 325
opinion of American troops ..... i. 326
to the President of Congress ..... i. 328
requests a supply of money ..... i. 328
advises hunting shirts for the troops ..... i. 328
apology for Massachusetts troops ... i. 328
headquarters (note) ..... i. 329
style of living in camp ..... i. 330
friendship for Joseph Reed ..... i. 332
summons council of war ..... i. 333
improves the defences ..... i. 333
compliments General Putnam ..... i. 333
distribution of the army ..... i. 333
respect for religion ..... i. 335
declines to detach troops ..... i. 335
reply to Gen. Assembly of Mass .... i. 336
reply to Gov. of Conn ..... i. 336
distresses Boston ..... i. 337
scarcity of powder ..... i. 337
to Gov. Cooke ..... i. 338
arrival of supplies ..... i. 338
poverty in ammunition ..... i. 339
correspondence with Gen. Gage on the treatment of prisoners ..... i. 340
confines British officers in jail ..... i. 343
revokes the order ..... i. 343
to Schuler recommending patience . i. 350
reception of Indians ..... i. 353
to Schuyler ..... i. 353
to Schuyler recommending the attack of Quebec ..... i. 353
endeavors to bring on an engagement ..... i. 355
on the reluctance of the British to engage ..... i. 355
apprehension of a winter's campaign ..... i. 356
summons a council ..... i. 356
to President of Congress ..... i. 357
detaches troops for the expedition against Canada ..... i. 357
to Arnold on the conduct of the expedition ..... i. 358
to Arnold concerning Lord Chatham's son ..... i. 358
opinion of Gen. Wooster ..... i. 360
concern at Schuyler's illness ..... i. 360
to Schuyler concerning Arnold ..... i. 360
solicitude for Arnold ..... i. 360
on Allen's imprudence ..... i. 365
to Schuyler about Arnold ..... i. 365
treasonable letter ..... i. 367
orders the equipment of vessels .... i. 369
on the destruction of Falmouth .... i. 370
measures of retaliation ..... i. 375
to Gov. Trumbull on the seizure of Tories ..... i. 375
orders Gen. Sullivan to seize public enemies ..... i. 374

Washington, George—*Continued.*
want of artillery and ordnance stores ..... i. 376
to the President of Congress on the re-enlistment of troops ..... i. 376
to the same on the want of public spirit ..... i. 376
to Reed ..... i. 376
confidence in Arnold ..... i. 382
to Schuyler on Arnold and the conquest of Canada ..... i. 386
to Schuyler on his resigning ..... i. 386
summons a council to provide for defence of the lines ..... i. 389
to Gov. Trumbull on the desertion of Connecticut troops ..... i. 390
arrival of captured munitions ..... i. 390
orders restoration of pillage ..... i. 391
to Gen. Howe on the treatment of Ethan Allen ..... i. 391
to Congress concerning Allen ..... i. 392
to Levi Allen ..... i. 393
prepares to bombard Boston ..... i. 394
correspondence with Lund Washington ..... i. 396
asks Mrs. Washington to join him at camp ..... i. 396
to Lund Washington on his affairs .. i. 397
directions concerning Mount Vernon ..... i. 397
to Reed on invitations to dinner .... i. 398
attentions to General Court ..... i. 398
relieved from his perplexity ..... i. 398
religious duties ..... i. 398
quells a brawl ..... i. 400
to Arnold concerning capture of Quebec ..... i. 404
on Lord Dunmore ..... ii. 15
to Gov. Cooke on Lee's proceedings in Rhode Island ..... ii. 17
appeals to the soldiers' patriotism . ii. 17
cheering news from Canada ..... ii. 18
strength of the army ..... ii. 19
to Reed on the critical state of the army ..... ii. 19
anxious vigils, to Reed ..... ii. 20
to Reed concerning attack on Boston ..... ii. 20
from Knox ..... ii. 21
apprehensions for the safety of New York ..... ii. 21
authorizes Lee to carry out his plans ..... ii. 23
despatches from Schuyler ..... ii. 27
to Schuyler on the death of Montgomery ..... ii. 35
solicitude about New York ..... ii. 36
to Lee relative to Tories ..... ii. 38
to Lee on Capt. Parker's passivity . ii. 38
anxiety to attack Boston ..... ii. 42
to Reed, confidential ..... ii. 39
to Reed in favor of attacking Boston ..... ii. 40
proposes an attack in council ..... ii. 40
arrival of Knox ..... ii. 40
active measures ..... ii. 41
public gloom ..... ii. 41
plan of operations ..... ii. 42
fortifies Dorchester Heights ..... ii. 44
effect on the enemy of the fortification of Dorchester Heights .... ii. 45
address to his troops ..... ii. 46
communication from the "select men" of Boston ..... ii. 47
enters Boston ..... ii. 51
on Howe's retreat ..... ii. 51
throws up works on Fort Hill ..... ii. 52
national applause ..... ii. 52
receives a vote of thanks—gold medal commemorative of the evacuation of Boston ..... ii. 52
on the destination of the British .. ii. 53
to Lee on his appointment to command the Southern Department . ii. 54
on the character of Lee ..... ii. 55
sends detachments to New York .. ii. 58

Washington, George—*Continued.*
arrives at New York....ii. 58
to the committee of safety....ii. 58
occupations....ii. 59
to Congress on the defence of Canada and New York....ii. 59
secret designs of the enemy....ii. 60
to Schuyler on affairs in Canada....ii. 64
to Schuyler on charges against....ii. 65
sends Gates to Congress....ii. 66
summoned before Congress....ii. 66
general orders....ii. 67
instructions to Putnam....ii. 67
leaves New York....ii. 67
guest of Hancock....ii. 67
conferences with Congress....ii. 67
conferences with George Clinton..ii. 68
affairs in Canada....ii. 72
to Schuyler concerning Indians....ii. 73
to Augustine—bloody prospects....ii. 73
reconnoitres Kingsbridge....ii. 74
reply to Sullivan....ii. 77
to Congress on Sullivan....ii. 77
conspiracy in New York....ii. 82
arrival of British troops....ii. 83
general orders....ii. 83
calls upon the troops to prepare for a momentous conflict....ii. 85
concerning Amboy and Staten Island....ii. 88
joy at the declaration of independence....ii. 89
causes it to be read at the head of each brigade....ii. 89
censures the destruction of the statue of George III....ii. 90
to Clinton on the safety of the Highlands....ii. 92
advises precautions against the Tories....ii. 94
British recognition of his rank....ii. 95
receives Col. Patterson....ii. 96
declines the letter to George Washington, Esq....ii. 96
conduct applauded....ii. 97
sectional jealousies....ii. 104
on Connecticut light-horse....ii. 106
to Gov. Trumbull on the Connecticut troops....ii. 106
concerning Connecticut light-horse....ii. 107
to Schuyler on Sir Peter Parker's repulse....ii. 112
general order concerning Sir Peter Parker's repulse....ii. 112
general order relative to sectional jealousies....ii. 116
to the army on the observance of the Sabbath and blasphemy....ii. 117
to Mercer for reinforcements....ii. 118
general orders on the approach of the struggle (note)....ii. 118
preparations for the conflict....ii. 118
paternal cares....ii. 119
plans of defence....ii. 121
landing of the British on Long Island....ii. 123
sends reinforcements to Brooklyn..ii. 123
exhortation to the troops....ii. 123
concerning the burning of New York....ii. 123
urges the removal of the helpless..ii. 123
crosses to Brooklyn....ii. 124
instructions to Putnam....ii. 125
reinforces Long Island....ii. 126
visits Brooklyn....ii. 126
returns to New York....ii. 127
at Brooklyn....ii. 129
American left turned....ii. 130
prepares to retreat....ii. 136
plan of retreat....ii. 136
and Gen. Mifflin's premature retreat....ii. 137
successful retreat....ii. 138
to Pres. of Congress on distressed situation of the army....ii. 139
question of destroying New York..ii. 140
removes the sick and wounded....ii. 141
concerning desertions....ii. 142
to Pres. of Congress on the intentions of the enemy....ii. 146
defensive policy....ii. 147
question of abandoning New York.ii. 147
plan adopted....ii. 148
prepares for evacuation....ii. 149
baggage removed to King's Bridge..ii. 149
British crossing the river....ii. 149
rage at the cowardice of the troops....ii. 150
perilous situation....ii. 151
headquarters....ii. 153
fortifies the approaches to his camp....ii. 153
on the conduct of his troops....ii. 153
interview with Hamilton....ii. 154
successful skirmish....ii. 154
general orders, reference to Knowlton....ii. 155
on the reorganization of the army.ii. 157
exchange of prisoners....ii. 157
uncertainty of the enemy's intentions....ii. 159
ceaseless vigilance....ii. 159
reconnoitrings....ii. 159
to Congress on the safety of the Highlands....ii. 162
measures taken....ii. 169
accident on board his yacht....ii. 164
enemy lands at Throg's Neck....ii. 166
reconnoitres Throg's Neck....ii. 166
throws up works....ii. 167
receives Lee....ii. 168
council of war....ii. 169
forms four divisions of the army..ii. 170
at White Plains....ii. 170
offers reward for troopers....ii. 172
movement of the enemy....ii. 172
draws his troops into White Plains....ii. 172
situation of the camp....ii. 174
reconnoitring....ii. 174
British advance....ii. 174
sick and wounded removed....ii. 176
strengthens his position....ii. 176
condition of troops....ii. 177
shifts position to Northcastle....ii. 178
British retire....ii. 179
to Gen. Wm. Livingston, intentions of the enemy....ii. 179
advises the evacuation of Fort Washington....ii. 181
advises removal of stores from Fort Lee....ii. 181
disposition of troops....ii. 182
instructions to Lee....ii. 182
at Peekskill....ii. 183
visits the Highland posts....ii. 183
reconnoissance....ii. 183
to Lee respecting new levies....ii. 184
leaves Heath in command of the Highlands....ii. 185
intelligence from the Northern army....ii. 185
crosses the Hudson....ii. 190
arrives at Fort Lee....ii. 191
question of abandoning Fort Washington....ii. 191
urges the increase of ordnance and artillery....ii. 292
attack on Fort Washington....ii. 194
Hessian cruelties, anecdote....ii. 195
sends a message to Magaw....ii. 195
surrender of Fort Washington....ii. 195
to Lee on the defence of the Highlands....ii. 196
to Augustine on the loss of Fort Washington....ii. 197
gloomy anticipations....ii. 197
arrives at Fort Lee....ii. 199
retreats from Fort Lee....ii. 199
crosses the Hackensack river....ii. 199

Washington, George—*Continued.*
to Lee ordering him to cross the Hudson....ii. 200
further retreat....ii. 201
Lee to Colonel Reed....ii. 202
correspondence with Lee on crossing the Hudson....ii. 203
to Lee on his delay....ii. 205
retreats to New Brunswick....ii. 206
Lee's letter to Reed....ii. 206
to Reed, enclosing letter of Lee....ii. 207
concerning Reed (note)....ii. 208
at Trenton....ii. 209
to Congress explaining his retreat.ii. 209
indomitable spirit....ii. 211
at Trenton....ii. 213
returns to Princeton....ii. 213
crosses the Delaware....ii. 214
to Congress on the enemy's plans..ii. 215
to Lee on the peril of Philadelphia....ii. 215
amount of force....ii. 215
to Trumbull hopefully....ii. 216
to Lee, urging speed....ii. 217
retreat across the Jerseys....ii. 221
moral qualities....ii. 222
to Augustine on Lee's capture....ii. 222
to Augustine on the critical state of affairs....ii. 223
granted new powers....ii. 223
recruitment of the army....ii. 223
meditates a *coup de main*....ii. 224
disposition of the enemy....ii. 224
plan of attack....ii. 228
to Col. Reed concerning the projected attack on Trenton....ii. 228
to Reed relative to the time chosen.ii. 228
from Gates....ii. 229
crosses the Delaware....ii. 230
pushes forward to Trenton....ii. 230
march of troops....ii. 231
burst of indignation....ii. 231
anecdote....ii. 231
advances with the artillery....ii. 233
captures the Hessians....ii. 234
imminent hazard....ii. 235
visits Rahl....ii. 236
described by Hessian officer....ii. 237
by another....ii. 239
follows up the blow at Trenton....ii. 242
troops begin to cross the Delaware....ii. 242
re-enlistments....ii. 243
to Robert Morris for money....ii. 243
invested with dictatorial powers...ii. 243
acknowledgment to Congress....ii. 243
critical situation....ii. 245
takes position on the Assunpink...ii. 245
during the attack....ii. 246
desperate situation....ii. 247
bold expedient....ii. 247
council of war....ii. 247
determines to attack Princeton....ii. 247
the army begins its march....ii. 247
at Princeton....ii. 249
rallies the troops....ii. 249
anecdote....ii. 250
loss of Gen. Mercer....ii. 251
pushes for Morristown....ii. 252
orders Putnam to Crosswicks....ii. 253
to Heath concerning the enemy's panic....ii. 253
to Heath repeating orders....ii. 254
to Maj. Gen. Lincoln ordering an advance on New York....ii. 255
triumphant close of the campaign....ii. 255
the American Fabius....ii. 255
to Cornwallis relative to Hessians.ii. 257
his encampment....ii. 259
prohibits plundering....ii. 260
counter-proclamation....ii. 260
has the troops inoculated....ii. 261
paternal care and sympathy....ii. 261
contrasted with Howe....ii. 261
discourages vice and immorality..ii. 262

Washington, George—*Continued.*
to Sir William Howe proposing an exchange for Lee....ii. 264
on the treatment of prisoners....ii. 264
concerning treatment of Colonel Campbell....ii. 267
to Congress on retaliation....ii. 267
to Robert Morris on the same....ii. 268
to Howe on the prison ships....ii. 269
calls for reinforcements....ii. 272
to Governor Cooke on the necessity of union....ii. 272
urges the reinforcement of Schuyler....ii. 273
on sectional jealousies....ii. 273
critical situation....ii. 274
orders troops to Peekskill....ii. 274
designs of the enemy....ii. 274
to Gates on the adjutant generalship....ii. 280
on foreign officers....ii. 282
reprehends distinctions among the troops....ii. 284
forms a guard....ii. 285
questions of rank....ii. 285
to Henry Lee on Arnold's promotion....ii. 286
to Arnold explaining his non-promotion....ii. 286
to Congress on injustice to Arnold.ii. 290
publicly thanks Colonel Meigs....ii. 291
concerning Schuyler....ii. 294
rebukes Gates....ii. 295
to McDougall on the fortifications of the Hudson....ii. 299
to Greene on the forts....ii. 300
his foresight....ii. 300
offers Arnold the command of the Hudson....ii. 301
to McDougall describing Putnam..ii. 301
to Dr. Craik on his appointment...ii. 302
at Middlebrook....ii. 302
amount of force....ii. 302
to Patrick Henry giving warning.ii. 303
strengthens his position....ii. 303
uncertainty of British movements....ii. 304
reply to Reed's appeal....ii. 306
on Burgoyne's reported designs....ii. 30
speculations on the enemy's movements....ii. 309
to Clinton and Putnam ordering out troops....ii. 310
evacuation of Ticonderoga....ii. 321
reinforces Schuyler....ii. 322
news of St. Clair....ii. 322
to Schuyler on St. Clair....ii. 322
to Sir William Howe proposing to exchange Prescott for Lee....ii. 332
to Trumbull on the treatment of Prescott....ii. 332
sends Arnold to Schuyler....ii. 333
to Schuyler hopefully....ii. 334
cautious....ii. 334
to Schuyler on the enemy's force..ii. 335
plans to harass Burgoyne....ii. 336
a delusive letter....ii. 337
sets out for the Delaware....ii. 337
to Gates on Howe's movements....ii. 338
moves to Germantown....ii. 338
orders and counter orders....ii. 339
to Putnam relative to Connecticut.ii. 339
declines to nominate commander for the Northern Department....ii. 342
regret at the removal of Schuyler.ii. 342
soothing counsels....ii. 342
news of British fleet....ii. 344
to Putnam to be on the alert....ii. 345
sends Colonel Morgan to fight the Indians....ii. 346
reinforces Gates....ii. 346
force in Burgoyne's rear....ii. 347
makes the acquaintance of Lafayette....ii. 347
on foreign appointments....ii. 349
marches through Philadelphia....ii. 350

Washington, George—*Continued.*
at Washington....ii. 351
to Putnam on Stark's victory....ii. 372
enemy landing....ii. 378
reconnoitres....ii. 378
risk of capture....ii. 379
determines to risk a battle....ii. 381
stirring appeal to the army....ii. 382
changes position....ii. 383
position of the army....iii 383
battle of Brandywine....ii. 384
profits by Howe's inactivity....ii. 389
retreats to Germantown....ii. 390
manœuvres of the armies....ii. 390
at Warwick Furnace....ii. 391
to Putnam for reinforcements....ii. 393
to Gates for Morgan's corps....ii. 393
rests at Pott's Grove....ii. 394
to Trumbull on the taking of Philadelphia....ii. 394
amount of force....iii. 37
advances to Skippack Creek....iii. 37
to Congress on Howe's situation....iii. 38
determines to attack the British camp....iii. 39
plan of attack....iii. 39
conduct in the battle of Germantown....iii. 43
to Congress on the battle....iii. 43
remains at Perkiomen Creek....iii. 45
reinforced....iii. 45
at White Marsh....iii. 45
intercepts supplies....iii. 45
the importance of Fort Mercer....iii. 46
to Richard Henry Lee on the promotion of Conway....iii. 50
to Gates on the surrender of Burgoyne....iii. 51
to Conway on his letter to Gates....iii. 52
to Patrick Henry, apology for his army....iii. 53
to Thomas Wharton for aid (note)....iii. 54
in want of reinforcements....iii. 55
instructions in regard to the forts....iii. 55
loss of Fort Mifflin....iii. 57
hopes to keep Red Bank....iii. 57
reprimands Putnam....iii. 60
intrigues against....iii. 61
Fort Mercer taken....iii. 62
arrival of reinforcements....iii. 62
advising the sinking of the American vessels....iii. 63
reconnoitres Philadelphia....iii. 63
opportunity for a brilliant blow....iii. 64
council of war....iii. 64
on the promotion of Lafayette....iii. 66
camp menaced by Howe....iii. 67
skirmishes....iii. 68
encourages his troops....iii. 69
the enemy retire....iii. 69
to Congress on threatened attack....iii. 69
approach of winter....iii. 70
winter-quarters....iii. 70
arrival at Valley Forge....iii. 71
destitution of troops....iii. 71
in vindication....iii. 72
exercises his authority....iii. 74
to Congress on the consequences....iii. 74
retrospect of 1777....iii. 74
to Gates on the Conway letter....iii. 78
to Laurens on the conduct of his enemies....iii. 80
correspondence with Gates....iii. 81
searching reply to Gates's explanation....iii. 85
closing note to Gates....iii. 85
forged letters....iii. 87
to General Henry Lee on the forged letters....iii. 87
to Landon Carter on the same....iii. 88
introduction to forged letters....iii. 88
Canada expedition....iii. 88
to Lafayette, consoling....iii. 89
to Patrick Henry on the cabal....iii. 96
party opposed to Washington (note)....iii. 96

Washington, George—*Continued.*
reforms in the army....iii. 97
destitution in camp....iii. 98
situation described....iii. 98
to Captain Lee on his exploit....iii. 100
recommends Captain Lee for promotion....iii. 100
to General Lee on his exchange....iii. 100
arrival of Mrs. Washington....iii. 101
better times....iii. 101
arrival of Bryan Fairfax....iii. 102
to Bryan Fairfax on their friendship....iii. 102
arrival of Baron Steuben....iii. 103
promotion of Greene....iii. 106
project to capture Sir Henry Clinton....iii. 108
circular on plan of next campaign....iii. 108
to Congress on forming a system....iii. 109
downfall of Conway....iii. 110
sends Lord North's bills to Congress....iii. 111
to Governor Tryon enclosing resolutions of Congress....iii. 112
rejoicings at Valley Forge....iii. 113
council of war determines on defensive measures....iii. 113
American force....iii. 115
solicitude for Lafayette....iii. 117
to Congress on Ethan Allen....iii. 118
prepares to decamp....iii. 118
sends Sir Henry Clinton's letter to Congress....iii. 120
amount of force under....iii. 123
to Lee, admonitory....iii. 123
council of war....iii. 123
Philadelphia evacuated....iii. 124
pursues the enemy....iii. 124
crosses the Delaware at Coryell's Ferry....iii. 125
council opposed to a general action....iii. 125
determines to attack the army....iii. 126
perplexed to satisfy Lee....iii. 127
resolves upon an attack....iii. 128
orders Lee to watch the enemy....iii. 128
orders Lee to attack....iii. 129
sets forward to the attack....iii. 129
retreat of American troops....iii. 129
meets Colonel Shreve and Major Howard retreating....iii. 130
angry meeting with Lee....iii. 130
checks the retreat....iii. 130
dispositions for battle....iii. 131
battle of Monmouth Court House....iii. 131
retreat of the enemy....iii. 133
march to Brunswick....iii. 134
halts at Paramus....iii. 135
correspondence with General Lee....iii. 135
puts Lee under arrest....iii. 137
conduct in relation to Lee....iii. 137
on Lee's abuse....iii. 139
magnanimity in regard to Lee....iii. 141
arrival of French fleet....iii. 142
correspondence with Count d'Estaing....iii. 143
plan of operations....iii. 143
encamps at White Plains....iii. 143
orders Sullivan to prepare for a descent upon Rhode Island....iii. 144
to John Augustine on the failure of the expedition against Rhode Island....iii. 152
anxiety as to its effects....iii. 152
to D'Estaing on his failure....iii. 153
enemy's movements....iii. 156
strengthens the Highlands....iii. 156
moves his camp to Fredericksburg....iii. 157
moves to Fishkill....iii. 157
distribution of troops....iii. 162
headquarters near Middlebrook....iii. 163
plan of alarm signals....iii. 163
opposes Lafayette's Canada scheme....iii. 164
in Philadelphia....iii. 165

Washington, George—*Continued.*
on the deterioration of Congress..iii. 165
to Colonel Harrison on the decline of public spirit.....iii. 165
disgust at the neglect of Congress.....iii. 166
policy of the next campaign.....iii. 167
unjust retaliation on the Indians..iii. 167
discontent of Jersey troops.....iii. 167
acts as a mediator.....iii. 168
address to the officers.....iii. 168
reply of the officers.....iii. 169
to General Maxwell on the determination of his officers.....iii. 169
apprehends an expedition against the Highlands.....iii. 171
measures for the protection of West Point.....iii. 173
removes to New Windsor.....iii. 173
detaches General Heath to act against the British in Connecticut.....iii. 175
plans the recapture of Stony Point and Fort Lafayette.....iii. 175
proposes the storming of Stony Point to Wayne.....iii. 176
plan of surprisal.....iii. 176
evacuates Stony Point.....iii. 179
at West Point.....iii. 179
expedition against Penobscot.....iii. 181
on the surprise of Paulus Hook....iii. 182
on the capture of Stony Point and Paulus Hook.....iii. 183
furthers the defences of the Hudson.....iii. 184
to Edmund Randolph for information of affairs.....iii. 184
to Dr. Cochran describing style of living.....iii. 184
reception of the Chevalier de la Luzerne.....iii. 186
to Lafayette.....iii. 186
change of plans.....iii. 188
sends troops to the south.....iii. 188
to President Reed for aid.....iii. 189
on the destitution of the troops...iii. 189
calls upon the counties for supplies.....iii. 190
to Colonel Ogden, to regard the rights of the people.....iii. 191
buy of New York, frozen over.....iii. 191
projects a descent on Staten Island.....iii. 192
Arnold's government of Philadelphia.....iii. 195
good opinion of Arnold.....iii. 195
instructions to Arnold.....iii. 195
sympathy with Arnold.....iii. 200
reprimand to Arnold.....iii. 202
solicitude for the safety of the Southern States.....iii. 203
on the safety of Charleston.....iii. 207
to Congress, on his situation.....iii. 207
reinforces Lincoln.....iii. 208
steadfastness of mind.....iii. 208
to Baron Steuben on his difficulties.....iii. 208
to Congress, on military reforms..iii. 210
committee appointed to consult with.....iii. 210
to Lafayette on his return.....iii. 211
reception of Lafayette.....iii. 211
to Lafayette, on the reduction of New York.....iii. 212
reduction of the army.....iii. 214
mutiny in camp.....iii. 214
to Pres. Reed, for relief.....iii. 215
endeavors to rouse Congress.....iii. 216
surrender of Charleston.....iii. 225
supplies West Point.....iii. 227
in position at Short Hills.....iii. 227
watches Knyphausen.....iii. 229
sets off towards Pompton.....iii. 229
enemy move against Springfield..iii. 230
applies to the State Legislature for aid.....iii. 233
Washington, George—*Continued.*
congratulates the army on the arrival of French troops.....iii. 236
his line of conduct.....iii. 237
crosses the Hudson.....iii. 237
interview with Arnold.....iii. 237
withdraws his forces.....iii. 239
interposes in the difficulty between Greene and Congress.....iii. 239
on the derangement of the commissariat.....iii. 240
the reverse at Camden.....iii. 250
on militia and regular troops.....iii. 250
to Gates on the battle of Camden.iii. 251
prepares to proceed to Hartford..iii. 252
crosses to Verplanck's Point.....iii. 258
interview with French officers....iii. 267
returns to headquarters.....iii. 267
reception by the people.....iii. 267
detained at Fishkill.....iii. 268
ride to the Robinson House.....iii. 268
arrives at the Robinson House....iii. 269
at West Point.....iii. 269
hears of Arnold's treason.....iii. 270
sends in pursuit of Arnold.....iii. 270
letters from Arnold and Colonel Robinson.....iii. 271
to Colonel Wade, urging vigilance.iii. 272
to General Greene, to proceed to King's Ferry.....iii. 272
to Colonel Jameson, to prevent André's escape.....iii. 272
interview with Mrs. Arnold.....iii. 273
André brought to the Robinson House.....iii. 274
to Greene on the custody of André and Smith.....iii. 274
refers the case of André to a board of general officers.....iii. 278
to Sir Henry Clinton, concerning André.....iii. 280
André's appeal.....iii. 283
eulogium on the captors of André.iii. 287
on Arnold's address.....iii. 288
opinion of Arnold.....iii. 288
to Governor Reed on Arnold's conduct.....iii. 289
strengthens West Point.....iii. 291
takes post at Prakeness.....iii. 291
plan to capture Arnold.....iii. 291
failure of Champe's design.....iii. 293
appoints Greene to command the Southern army.....iii. 294
confidence in Greene.....iii. 294
state of the army.....iii. 295
to Gen. Sullivan on the state of the country and army.....iii. 295
to Lafayette on his desire for action.....iii. 297
preparations to attack the British posts.....iii. 298
his horsemanship.....iii. 298
personal appearance.....iii. 300
his character.....iii. 301
at New Windsor.....iii. 301
to Franklin on his disappointment.....iii. 318
necessitous state of the country..iii. 318
instructions to Colonel Laurens..iii. 319
revolt of the Pennsylvania line...iii. 320
to Wayne on the revolt.....iii. 322
disaffection in the army.....iii. 326
suppresses mutiny of Jersey troops.....iii. 326
articles of confederation.....iii. 326
heads of departments formed....iii. 329
eulogium on Hamilton.....iii. 329
misunderstanding with Hamilton iii. 330
to Lafayette on Hamilton.....iii. 333
reconciliation with Hamilton.....iii. 333
to Greene on the battle of Guilford Court House.....iii. 357
on the destruction of Arnold's corps.....iii. 362
instructions to Lafayette.....iii. 363
to Steuben on Arnold.....iii. 363

Washington, George—*Continued.*
sets out for Newport ..... iii. 363
to Lafayette on Cornwallis ..... iii. 364
at Newport ..... iii. 364
arranges plan of campaign with Rochambeau ..... iii. 364
to Lafayette on the sailing of the French fleet ..... iii. 364
returns to New Windsor ..... iii. 365
to Greene on the chance of reinforcements ..... iii. 365
to Colonel Laurens on the failure of the Portsmouth expedition ..... iii. 367
anxiety for Greene ..... iii. 367
orders Lafayette to join Greene ..... iii. 368
to Lund Washington on his conduct towards the enemy ..... iii. 370
force on the Hudson ..... iii. 372
death of Colonel Greene ..... iii. 374
arrival of Count de Barras ..... iii. 374
interview with Rochambeau ..... iii. 374
number of force ..... iii. 375
plan of operations ..... iii. 375
to Gov. Clinton on his designs ..... iii. 376
march to King's Bridge ..... iii. 376
failure of the enterprise ..... ii. 377
at Dobb's Ferry ..... iii. 377
to Lee on his plans ..... iii. 378
reconnoitres the British posts ..... iii. 378
at King's Bridge ..... iii. 379
awkward predicament ..... iii. 380
to Lafayette on the effect of the reconnoissance ..... iii. 381
disappointment as to reinforcements ..... iii. 395
to the Eastern States ..... iii. 395
to Lafayette on the arrival of the Count de Grasse ..... iii. 396
determines to command the expedition ..... iii. 396
crosses to Haverstraw ..... iii. 397
visits West Point with Rochambeau ..... iii. 398
move toward Virginia ..... iii. 398
to Noah Webster on the Virginia expedition (note) ..... iii. 398
welcome at Philadelphia ..... iii. 400
concern about De Grasse ..... iii. 403
to Lafayette on Cornwallis ..... iii. 403
arrival of the Count de Grasse ..... iii. 403
reaches the head of Elk ..... iii. 403
to De Grasse on Cornwallis ..... iii. 403
at Baltimore ..... iii. 404
revisits Mount Vernon ..... iii. 404
pushes on to Williamsburg ..... iii. 404
hurries on the troops ..... iv. 17
on board the French fleet ..... iv. 18
plan of operations ..... iv. 18
arrival of Admiral Digby ..... iv. 13
threatened departure of the French fleet ..... iv. 18
army drawn up at Beaver Dam Creek ..... iv. 20
strength of forces ..... iv. 21
anecdote ..... iv. 21
despatches from Greene ..... iv. 23
to Greene on the battle of Eutaw Springs ..... iv. 28
fires the first gun against Yorktown ..... iv. 29
witnesses the storming of the redoubts ..... iv. 33
anecdote ..... iv. 33
and Knox, anecdote ..... iv. 33
surrender of Yorktown ..... iv. 35
and General O'Hara ..... iv. 37
on the victory ..... iv. 37
reinforces General Greene ..... iv. 39
dissolution of combined armies ..... iv. 39
at Eltham ..... iv. 40
death of John Parke Custis ..... iv. 40
proceeds to Mount Vernon ..... iv. 40
to Greene on the improvement of the victory ..... iv. 40
to Lafayette on the next campaign ..... iv. 41
reception by Congress ..... iv. 41

Washington, George—*Continued.*
policy of the ensuing campaign ..... iv. 42
bold project of Colonel Ogden ..... iv. 42
to Greene on retaliation ..... iv. 43
murder of Captain Huddy ..... iv. 43
demand on Sir Henry Clinton ..... iv. 44
the case of Capt. Asgill ..... iv. 44
case of Colonel Webb (note) ..... iv. 46
at Newburg ..... iv. 46
continues his precautions ..... iv. 46
arrival of Sir Guy Carleton ..... iv. 46
propositions of peace ..... iv. 47
discontent in the army ..... iv. 47
letter from Colonel Nicola ..... iv. 47
indignant reply to Nicola ..... iv. 48
negotiations for peace ..... iv. 49
to Rochambeau, advising a junction ..... iv. 49
at Verplanck's Point ..... iv. 49
on the reduction of the army ..... iv. 49
discontent of the army ..... iv. 50
anonymous paper ..... iv. 53
addresses committee of the army ..... iv. 54
to Congress on behalf of the army ..... iv. 57
news of peace ..... iv. 59
a plea for the soldier ..... iv. 59
general order on peace ..... iv. 60
grants furloughs ..... iv. 61
interview with Sir Guy Carleton ..... iv. 61
president of the Society of the Cincinnati ..... iv. 62
on the dissolution of the army ..... iv. 62
mutiny of Pennsylvania troops ..... iv. 66
to Congress on the mutiny ..... iv. 66
tour through New York ..... iv. 67
to Chastellux on his tour ..... iv. 67
parting address to the army ..... iv. 68
at Harlem ..... iv. 70
enters New York ..... iv. 71
farewell to his officers ..... iv. 71
adjustment of his accounts ..... iv. 72
journey to Annapolis ..... iv. 73
to Baron Steuben on his resignation ..... iv. 73
resigns his commission ..... iv. 73
returns to Mount Vernon ..... iv. 74
to Gov. Clinton on his retirement ..... iv. 74
to Knox on his retirement ..... iv. 75
to Lafayette; a soldier's repose ..... iv. 75
to the Marchioness de Lafayette ..... iv. 76
manner of living ..... iv. 76
declines the offer of the Pennsylvania council ..... iv. 77
applications from authors ..... iv. 77
to Dr. Craik on his Memoirs ..... iv. 77
reception of visitors ..... iv. 78
management of his estate ..... iv. 78
popular feeling against the Cincinnati ..... iv. 80
presides at a meeting of the Cincinnati ..... iv. 80
to Chastellux on his regard ..... iv. 81
arrival of Lafayette ..... iv. 81
tour west of the mountains ..... iv. 81
observations on internal navigation ..... iv. 82
to Governor Harrison on internal improvement ..... iv. 83
reception by the Virginia House of Assembly ..... iv. 83
joined by Lafayette ..... iv. 83
parting with Lafayette ..... iv. 84
to Richard Henry Lee on inland navigation ..... iv. 84
at Annapolis ..... iv. 85
appropriation of Virginia Assembly ..... iv. 85
naval improvements ..... iv. 85
to Governor Clinton concerning agricultural matters ..... iv. 86
burden of correspondence ..... iv. 87
to Francis Hopkinson on sitting for likenesses ..... iv. 87
ornamental cultivation ..... iv. 88
extent of his estate ..... iv. 88
life at Mount Vernon ..... iv. 89

Washington, George—*Continued.*
private character....iv. 90
fondness for children....iv. 90
in social life....iv. 90
unassuming manners....iv. 91
attention to others, anecdote....iv. 91
social disposition....iv. 92
festive gayety....iv. 92
and Mrs. Olney....iv. 92
laughter, anecdote....iv. 93
anecdote, Judge Marshall and Washington (note)....iv. 94
anecdote, Colonel Lee....iv. 94
passion for hunting....iv. 95
anecdote, fox hunting....iv. 95
to Geo. Wm. Fairfax about deer....iv. 95
death of Greene....iv. 96
to Lafayette on Greene....iv. 96
to the Marquis de la Rouerie....iv. 97
to Rochambeau, reveries of peace....iv. 97
doubts the solidity of the confederation....iv. 98
to James Warren on the confederation....iv. 98
ideas on national policy....iv. 99
correspondence with John Jay....iv. 100
to Colonel Lee on the Massachusetts insurrection....iv. 103
to Knox on the same....iv. 103
to James Madison on the same....iv. 103
at the head of the Virginia delegation....iv. 104
Massachusetts insurrection quelled....iv. 105
attends the convention....iv. 105
anecdote....iv. 105
to Lafayette on the new constitution....iv. 107
returns to Mount Vernon....iv. 108
on the ratification of the constitution....iv. 108
to Lafayette on the Presidency....iv. 109
to Colonel Lee on the same....iv. 109
to Hamilton on the same....iv. 110
to Lafayette on the same....iv. 111
elected President....iv. 111
parting with his mother....iv. 111
to Knox on his election....iv. 112
sets out for New York....iv. 112
public dinner at Alexandria....iv. 112
progress to New York....iv. 113
reception at Philadelphia....iv. 113
reception at Trenton....iv. 114
reception at New York....iv. 115
inauguration of....iv. 116
concluding remarks....iv. 118
the new government....iv. 121
difficulties of his position....iv. 123
confidence in Hamilton....iv. 123
and Madison....iv. 124
privacy invaded....iv. 125
Presidential etiquette....iv. 126
first levee, anecdote....iv. 128
attends balls....iv. 129
presidential dinner....iv. 130
presidential household....iv. 130
his deportment....iv. 131
his equipage....iv. 132
love of horses....iv. 132
residence in New York (note)....iv. 132
alarming illness....iv. 133
exercises of the nominating power....iv. 133
rebukes the Senate....iv. 134
death of his mother....iv. 135
nominates Hamilton as secretary of the treasury....iv. 136
and Edmund Randolph....iv. 136
to Jay, enclosing his commission....iv. 137
department of state....iv. 138
to Rochambeau on the French revolution....iv. 143
to Gouverneur Morris on the same....iv. 143
offers to appoint Jefferson secretary of state....iv. 144

Washington, George—*Continued.*
journey through the Eastern States....iv. 145
Hancock's invitation....iv. 145
reception at Boston, question of etiquette....iv. 146
account of the ceremony....iv. 147
reply to Governor Hancock....iv. 148
address of the Cincinnati Society of Massachusetts....iv. 148
return to New York....iv. 149
message from Lafayette on affairs in France....iv. 149
appoints Jefferson secretary of state....iv. 151
opens the session (note)....iv. 152
measures suggested in his address....iv. 153
public credit....iv. 153
on sectional jealousies....iv. 156
assumption of State debts....iv. 159
forms and ceremonies....iv. 161
to Dr. Stuart on his levees....iv. 162
to Lafayette on his cabinet....iv. 163
to Luzerne on the French revolution....iv. 165
receives the key of the Bastille....iv. 166
to Lafayette, solicitude for....iv. 166
visits Rhode Island....iv. 167
return to Mount Vernon....iv. 167
difficulties with the Indians....iv. 167
information of Indian expedition....iv. 169
residence at Philadelphia....iv. 170
national bank....iv. 171
his judgment....iv. 172
opposite cabinet policy....iv. 172
addresses Seneca chiefs....iv. 173
on the first Congress....iv. 173
cautions General St. Clair....iv. 174
tour through the Southern States....iv. 174
return to Philadelphia....iv. 175
to David Humphreys on the stability of the government....iv. 175
public credit....iv. 175
to Lafayette on the state of the country....iv. 177
to Lafayette on his personal danger....iv. 178
concerning the flight and capture of Louis XVI....iv. 179
to Lafayette on French affairs....iv. 179
at Mount Vernon....iv. 180
speech on the opening of the second Congress....iv. 180
intelligence of St. Clair's disaster....iv. 185
effect upon him....iv. 186
vetoes the apportionment bill....iv. 188
weary of political strife....iv. 189
intention of retirement....iv. 189
to St. Clair on a court of inquiry....iv. 192
retains his confidence in St. Clair....iv. 193
visits Mount Vernon....iv. 193
to Madison on his intention to retire....iv. 194
asks Madison's advice....iv. 195
valedictory address....iv. 195
conversation with Jefferson on political matters....iv. 197
to Jefferson on his dissensions with Hamilton....iv. 201
to Hamilton on the same....iv. 202
on taking the oath of office....iv. 208
takes the oath of office....iv. 209
state of affairs in France....iv. 209
Lafayette's downfall....iv. 210
atrocities of the French revolution....iv. 211
to Madame de Lafayette....iv. 212
commencement of second term....iv. 213
war between France and England....iv. 214
proclamation of neutrality....iv. 214
view of French affairs....iv. 217
reception of Genet....iv. 217
conversation with Jefferson on attacks of the press....iv. 220
restitution of French prizes....iv. 221
newspaper attacks....iv. 221

Washington, George—*Continued.*
adherence to duty....iv. 222
called to Mount Vernon....iv. 223
case of the Little Sarah....iv. 226
trial of Gideon Henfield....iv. 226
concerning the recall of Genet....iv. 227
burst of feeling....iv. 228
threatened dissolution of the cabinet....iv. 229
interview with Jefferson....iv. 229
ill advised measures of Great Britain....iv. 234
Indian hostilities....iv. 235
opening address to Congress....iv. 235
message relative to Genet....iv. 236
to Jefferson on his retirement....iv. 239
characterized by Jefferson....iv. 240
concerning French expedition....iv. 242
relative to Genet....iv. 243
relative to British aggressions....iv. 243
wise moderation....iv. 244
to Monroe in regard to Hamilton..iv. 245
nominates Jay as envoy to Great Britain....iv. 246
inimical letter....iv. 248
insurrection in Pennsylvania....iv. 248
proclamation to the insurgents....iv. 248
to Governor Lee on the Democratic Societies....iv. 249
issues second proclamation....iv. 249
leaves for Carlisle....iv. 250
correspondence with Morgan....iv. 250
to the Secretary of State....iv. 250
arrives at Cumberland....iv. 251
to Gov. Lee concerning the army..iv. 251
arrives at Philadelphia....iv. 252
to Hamilton, his paternal care....iv. 252
to Jay on the Pennsylvania insurrection....iv. 252
denunciation of self created societies....iv. 253
to Knox on his resignation....iv. 257
anxiety about the negotiation with England....iv. 258
Jay's treaty....iv. 258
ratification of the treaty....iv. 260
at Mount Vernon....iv. 261
excitement against....iv. 261
reply to the select men of Boston..iv. 262
public clamors....iv. 262
to Randolph requesting to be advised....iv. 263
recalled to the seat of government....iv. 264
Fauchet's intercepted despatch....iv. 264
signs the ratification....iv. 265
conduct toward Randolph....iv. 265
permits unlimited disclosures....iv. 266
malignant attacks of the press....iv. 267
reply to the Gov. of Maryland....iv. 268
arrival of Lafayette's son....iv. 269
to George Cabot concerning young Lafayette....iv. 270
speech at the opening of Congress.iv. 270
to Gouverneur Morris on the conduct of Great Britain....iv. 272
receives the colors of France....iv. 273
treaty with Great Britain....iv. 273
demand by the House of Representatives....iv. 274
reply to the resolution....iv. 274
to Colonel Humphrey on the state of politics....iv. 275
noble reply to Jefferson....iv. 276
to Monroe on intercepted letter....iv. 278
determines to retire....iv. 279
farewell address....iv. 280
sensation produced by....iv. 280
last speech to Congress....iv. 281
complaints of the French minister.iv. 283
letter to Mr. Pinckney....iv. 284
to Knox on the prospect of retirement....iv. 285
denounces spurious letter....iv. 285
farewell dinner....iv. 285
at the inauguration of Adams....iv. 286

Washington, George—*Continued.*
farewell to the people....iv. 286
banquet in honor of....iv. 286
sets off for Mount Vernon....iv. 287
arrives at home....iv. 287
letters relating to....iv. 287
to Mrs. S. Fairfax on Belvoir....iv. 289
strange faces....iv. 289
invites Lawrence Lewis to Mount Vernon....iv. 289
advice to Nelly Custis....iv. 291
anecdote of Miss Custis....iv. 291
to Lafayette by his son....iv. 292
on the French indignities....iv. 294
pamphlet from General Dumas....iv. 295
reply to Dumas....iv. 296
threatened war with France....iv. 298
on accepting the command....iv. 298
appointed commander-in-chief....iv. 299
accepts the commission....iv. 299
to Knox on his appointment....iv. 300
to Adams concerning Knox....iv. 300
to Knox, explanatory....iv. 301
to Knox urging his acceptance....iv. 302
repairs to Philadelphia....iv. 304
taxed with the cares of office....iv. 304
return to Mount Vernon....iv. 305
correspondence with Lafayette..iv. 305
surprise at the appointment of minister to France....iv. 307
the conflict in Europe....iv. 308
solicitude for the army....iv. 309
life at Mount Vernon....iv. 310
plan for the management of his estate....iv. 316
to Hamilton on military academy.iv. 310
illness....iv. 311
remedies....iv. 312
his last hours....iv. 312
his death....iv. 313
his funeral....iv. 314
his will....iv. 314
to John F. Mercer on slavery....iv. 315
to Lawrence Lewis on the same....iv. 315
public testimonials of grief....iv. 315
retrospect....iv. 316
discharge of his civil functions....iv. 316
character of....iv. 316
his fame....iv. 317
Washington, Major George A....iv. 180
Washington, John Augustine, raises an independent company....i. 277
entreats Mrs. Washington to leave Mount Vernon....i. 396
Washington, Lawrence, return from England....i. 27
campaign in the West Indies....i. 27
return home....i. 28
marries Miss Fairfax....i. 28
his attachment to George....i. 30
becomes manager of the Ohio Company....i. 45
his views on restraints on conscience....i. 45
failing health, departs for the West Indies....i. 54
arrives at Barbadoes....i. 54
goes to Bermuda....i. 56
letters home....i. 56
return....i. 57
death....i. 57
his character....i. 57
his will....i. 57
Washington, Lund, on the danger at Mount Vernon....i. 396
compromises with the enemy....iii. 370
Washington, Mrs., at Mount Vernon..i. 397
arrival at Cambridge....i. 397
equipage....i. 398
presides at headquarters....i. 398
celebration of Twelfth Night....i. 399
at New York....ii. 59
arrival at Valley Forge....iii. 101
presides at Mount Vernon....iv. 78
journey to New York....iv. 129
general reception....iv. 130

Washington, Mrs.—*Continued.*
her deportment....iv. 131
death of Washington....iv. 313
Washington, Mary....i. 28, 112
Washington, Mary, death and character of....iv. 135
Washington, Colonel William A. leads the advance at Trenton....ii. 232
takes two cannon....ii. 233
described....iii. 218
brush with the enemy....iii. 218
joins Colonel White....iii. 221
surprised at Laneau's Ferry....iii. 221
exploit at Clermont....iii. 315
under Morgan....iii. 316
at the battle of the Cowpens....iii. 337
in charge of the prisoners....iii. 339
at Guilford Court House....iii. 354
with Marion....iv. 23
at Eutaw Springs....iv. 24
brings up the reserve....iv. 26
taken prisoner....iv. 26
Waterbury, Colonel, raises and disbands a regiment....ii. 24
gallant conduct....ii. 187
taken prisoner....ii. 188
Watson, Elkanah, picture of Washington in retirement....iv. 90
Watts, Major, at Oriskany....ii. 360
wounded....ii. 361
Waxhaw, Tarleton's butchery at....iii. 224
Wayne, Anthony....ii. 104
in command at Ticonderoga....ii. 273
examines the defences of the Highlands....ii. 300
Graydon's account of....ii. 312
at Chester....ii. 350
at Brandywine....ii. 387
hovers about the enemy....ii. 391
to Washington concerning the enemy....ii. 391
hears of premeditated attack....ii. 392
attacked by the British....ii. 392
demands a court-martial....ii. 392
is exonerated....ii. 393
in the battle of Germantown....iii. 40
drives in the enemy....iii. 40
in favor of attacking Philadelphia.iii. 63
detached to the advance....iii. 126
detached to attack the enemy....iii. 128
at Monmouth Court House....iii. 131
opposes Cornwallis....iii. 157
to storm Stony Point....iii. 176
anecdote (note)....iii. 176
marches against Stony Point....iii. 177
carries the fort....iii. 177
on the conduct of his soldiers....iii. 177
revolt of troops....iii. 321
pursues the mutineers....iii. 321
overtakes the troops....iii. 323
in a morass....iii. 335
ordered South....iii. 382
joins Lafayette....iii. 383
appointed to Western command..iv. 192
takes the field against the Indians....iv. 235
expedition against the Indians ...iv. 254
builds Fort Defiance....iv. 255
overtures of peace....iv. 255
defeats the Indians....iv. 255
treaty with the Indians....iv. 271
Webb, Colonel....ii. 107
Webb, Major General....i. 170
marches to the relief of Oswego...i. 170
Webster, Lieutenant Colonel, to break up American posts....iii. 219
Webster, Col., detached to Beattie's Ford....iii. 343
at Guilford Court House....iii. 355
Weedon, Colonel, conducts Hessian prisoners to Newton....ii. 237
Westmuller's portrait of Washington (Appendix)....iv. 332
Weshington, William, of Washington....i. 18
Wessyngton, De, origin of the name..i. 17
West, Major....ii. 311
West Point, decided to be fortified..iii. 107
Westchester County, British inroad.iii. 193
Wetzell's Mill, affair at....iii. 352
Whipple, Commodore, commands fleet at Charleston....iii. 206
changes his position....iii. 205
retrograde move....iii. 217
Whipple, Gen Wm....ii. 367
White, Bishop, on Washington's unassuming manners....iv. 91
Washington's farewell dinner....iv. 285
White, Col., with American cavalry.iii. 221
surprised by Tarleton....iii. 221
White, Philip, captured and killed..iv. 43
White, Mingo, speech to Washington..i. 240
White Plains, camp at....ii. 143
incendiarism at....ii. 179
White Thunder with Washington....i. 64
in Braddock's camp....i. 121
Whiting, Mr., death of....iv. 223
Wild Hunter of Juniata....i. 116
Wilkes on the appointment of the Earl of Carlisle....iii. 119
Wilkinson, General, interview with Gen. Lee....ii. 217
account of Lee's capture....ii. 219
hastens to Sullivan....ii. 229
secret of Lee's conduct....ii. 229
joins Washington....ii. 233
Washington's difficulties....ii. 224
takes a letter from Gates to Washington....ii. 229
panders to Gates....ii. 403
watches Burgoyne....iii. 23
at Burgoyne's surrender....iii. 83
despatched by Gates to Congress..iii. 51
to Gates on the respect of Congress....iii. 52
brevetted brigadier general....iii. 52
relative to the Conway correspondence....iii. 85
correspondence with Stirling on the Conway letter....iii. 91
honor wounded by Gates....iii. 92
arrives at Yorktown....iii. 92
interview with Capt. Stoddart....iii. 92
meets Lieut. Col. Ball....iii. 92
reconciliation with Gates....iii. 93
subsequent reception by Gates....iii. 94
sends in his resignation....iii. 94
to Stirling on the Conway letter..iii. 94
interview with Washington....iii. 94
to Washington on the Conway letter....iii. 95
resigns position as secretary of the Board of War....iii. 95
retirement....iii. 95
expedition against Indians....iv. 180
Willard, Counsellor....i. 304
Willet, Lieut. Col. Marinus, defeats British scouting party....ii. 276
sallies from Fort Schuyler....ii. 359
sacks the enemy's camp....ii. 362
volunteers to seek Schuyler....ii. 363
expedition against the Onondagas.iii. 170
Williams, David, and André....iii. 262
Williams, Col., driven in....i. 151
at Brooklyn....ii. 124
Williams, Col. Jas., takes the field..iii. 305
in the battle of King's Mountain..iii. 307
killed....iii. 308
Williams, Col. Otho H., commands the rear-guard....iii. 346
crosses the Dan....iii. 347
at Guilford Court House....iii. 354
at Eutaw Springs....iv. 24
attacks the British....iv. 26
Williams, Major, with the artillery.iii. 23
captured....iii. 24
Williamsburg rejoicings....i. 225
Wills' Creek....i. 58
Wills, Major, killed in battle....iv. 169
Wilmington taken by the British....iii. 342
Wilson, Jas., member of the Board of War and Ordnance....ii. 60

Wilson, James, Judge of Supreme Court ..... iv. 137
Winchester, panic at ..... i. 146
alarm at ..... i. 159
attack apprehended ..... i. 160
Wingate, Mr., account of presidential dinner ..... iv. 130
Wintermoot's Fort, Colonel J. Butler at ..... iii. 154
Wirt on the organization of the General Congress ..... i. 262
Witherspoon, Dr., proposes a pair of spurs for Wilkinson ..... iii. 52
Wolcott, Oliver, Secretary of the Treasury ..... iv. 257
Wolcott (the elder) on Washington's farewell address ..... iv. 280
Wolfe, military services ..... i. 179
lands before Louisburg and storms the works ..... i. 180
surprises Light-house Point ..... i. 181
reception in England ..... i. 181
to besiege Quebec ..... i. 195
ascends the St. Lawrence ..... i. 197
debarks on the Isle of Orleans ..... i. 197
his transports damaged by a storm ..... i. 197
establishes batteries ..... i. 197
crosses the St. Lawrence and encamps below the Montmorency ..... i. 198
reconnoitres up the river ..... i. 198
resolves to attack Montcalm in his camp ..... i. 198
crosses the Montmorency ..... i. 198
is repulsed ..... i. 199
his mortification ..... i. 199
illness ..... i. 200
calls a council of war ..... i. 200
changes plan of operations ..... i. 200
reconnoitres the town ..... i. 200
his health ..... i. 200
campaigning song ..... i. 205
Gray's Elegy, anecdote ..... i. 201
descends the river ..... i. 201
passes the sentinel ..... i. 201
lands near Cape Diamond ..... i. 201
takes possession of the Plains of Abraham ..... i. 201
Wolfe—*Continued.*
attacked by Montcalm ..... i. 202
wounded ..... i. 202
his last words and death ..... i. 202
Wood Creek, fight at ..... ii. 329
Woodford, Brig. Gen. reinforces Charleston ..... iii. 218
Woolford, Col., reinforces Sumter ..... iii. 246
Wooster, David, appointed brigadier general ..... i. 295
noble conduct ..... i. 361
before Quebec ..... ii. 62
recalled ..... ii. 75
hastens to Danbury ..... ii. 287
joins Silliman and takes command ..... ii. 288
attacks the British rear-guard ..... ii. 288
mortally wounded ..... ii. 289
death ..... ii. 290
Worcester, military stores collected at ..... i. 274
Wright, portrait of Washington (Appendix) ..... i.
Writs of Assistance ..... i. 219
Wyoming Valley description of ..... iii. 154
expedition against ..... iii. 154
ravaged by Brant and Butler ..... iii. 155
desolation completed ..... iii. 156
Wyoming, battle of ..... iii. 155
massacre of Americans ..... iii. 155

Y.

Yankee Doodle ..... i. 282
Yorktown, situation of ..... iii. 402
its defences ..... iv. 9
invested ..... iv. 21
siege of ..... iv. 29
description of bombardment ..... iv. 30
storming of the redoubts ..... iv. 31
capitulates ..... iv. 35
terms of capitulation ..... iv. 35
number of prisoners, killed, wounded, and missing, and troops on both sides (note) ..... iv. 35
effect of surrender ..... iv. 38
Young's House, expedition against ..... iii. 193
taken and burnt ..... iii. 193

American Classic Series.

POPULAR EDITION.

It will be our aim to make this series all that its name indicates; only such books as have really taken their place as classics in our literature will be included.

The following volumes, now ready, are printed from new plates on extra paper and handsomely bound:

Per Volume, 12mo, Cloth, Gilt Top, $ .75.
" " Half Calf, - 2.00.

Brown, Charles Brockden.

ARTHUR MERVYN, OR MEMOIRS OF THE YEAR 1793.
WIELAND, OR THE TRANSFORMATION. With a Memoir of the Author.

Curtis, Geo. Wm.

PRUE AND I.

Emerson, Ralph Waldo.

ESSAYS, FIRST SERIES. Complete.
ESSAYS, SECOND SERIES. Complete.
Sold separately, or the set in a box.
REPRESENTATIVE MEN.
NATURE, ADDRESSES AND LECTURES.
Sold separately, or together in a box.
CONDUCT OF LIFE.
ENGLISH TRAITS.
Sold separately, or together in a box.

Hawthorne, Nathaniel.

MOSSES FROM AN OLD MANSE.
TANGLEWOOD TALES.
TWICE TOLD TALES.
THE SCARLET LETTER.
THE HOUSE OF THE SEVEN GABLES.
BLITHEDALE ROMANCE AND SNOW IMAGE. Two volumes in one.
WONDER BOOK AND TRUE STORIES. Two volumes in one.
THE MARBLE FAUN.

Irving, Washington.

COLUMBUS, LIFE AND VOYAGES OF. Two volumes, Maps and Portraits.
KNICKERBOCKER'S HISTORY OF NEW YORK.
THE SKETCH BOOK.
THE ALHAMBRA.
CONQUEST OF GRANADA.
WASHINGTON, LIFE OF. Four volumes, Maps and Portraits.

Longfellow, Henry Wadsworth.

OUTRE-MER. A Pilgrimage Beyond the Sea.
HYPERION. A Romance.
KAVANAUGH AND EVANGELINE. One volume.

Lowell, James Russell.

THE OLD POETS, CONVERSATIONS ON SOME OF.

"This work is full of a young man's generous enthusiasm for everything that is beautiful in poetic thought and dainty in expression. . . . . It has the freshness of youthful delight, and justifies its author's claim of being 'spontaneous and honest.'"—*London Spectator*, April 22, 1893.

Marvel Ik: Donald G. Mitchell.

REVERIES OF A BACHELOR. Illustrated.
DREAM LIFE. Illustrated.

Motley, John Lothrop.

THE RISE OF THE DUTCH REPUBLIC. Three volumes. Illustrated.

"It does honor to American literature, and would do honor to the literature of any country in the world."—*M. Guizot.*
"The style is excellent, clear, vivid, eloquent."—*North British Review.*

Prescott, William H.

CONQUEST OF MEXICO. Three volumes, Maps, Portraits and Notes.
CONQUEST OF PERU. Two volumes, Maps, Portraits and Notes.
FERDINAND AND ISABELLA. Three volumes, Maps, Portraits and Notes.

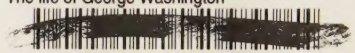
Stowe, Harriet Beecher.

UNCLE TOM'S CABIN. Illustrated.

Taylor, J. Bayard.

VIEWS AFOOT, OR EUROPE SEEN WITH KNAPSACK AND STAFF.

"We, too, are richer for his travels by the amount of an earnest sensible and manly book."—*London Athenæum.*

B W31 I Irving, Washington, 1783-
The life of George Washington

0 1901 0023473 0
V.4 Carson Library, Lees-McRae College

DATE DUE

GAYLORD			PRINTED IN U S A

B W318I vol. 4 441A

AUTHOR
Irving, Washington

TITLE
The life of George Washington

DATE DUE | BORROWER'S NAME

B W318I vol 4 441A

Irving, Washington

The life of George Washington

Carson Library
Lees McRae College
Banner Elk, N.C. 28604

S0-GRO-147